PAPERS AND RECORDS

OF THE

Wentworth Historical Society

Volume Six

AUTHORS OF PAPERS ARE ALONE RESPONSIBLE FOR STATEMENTS AND OPINIONS EXPRESSED HEREIN

HAMILTON
The Griffin & Richmond Co., Ltd Printers
1915

WENTWORTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

Officers for 1915-16.

JOSEPH H. SMITH, *President.*
MARY HENDERSON, *1st Vice-President.*
JUSTUS A. GRIFFIN, *2nd Vice-President and Historian.*
CLEMENTINA FESSENDEN, *Corresponding Secretary.*
JOHN H. LAND, *Secretary-Treasurer.*
JOHN PLANT, E. MARSHALL, *Auditors.*

Executive Council.

JOHN A. BARR
JOHN GARDNER
KIRWAN MARTIN
WM. F. MOORE
TITUS G. MILLER
MAJOR J. E. ORR
HON. E. D. SMITH
ALEX. C. BEASLEY
RICHARD BUTLER
MRS. R. G. SUTHERLAND

Officers of Ladies' Committee.

MRS. MARY HENDERSON, *President.*
MRS. R. G. SUTHERLAND, *Treasurer.*
MRS. C. FESSENDEN, *Secretary.*

CONTENTS

Indian Relics and Implements

FOUND IN AND AROUND THE CITY OF HAMILTON, ONT.

BY FRANK WOOD

"Where is my home, my forest home,
The proud land of my sires;
Where stands the wigwam of my pride,
Where gleam the Council fires?
Where are my fathers' hallowed graves,
My friends, so light and free?
Gone, gone forever from my view;
Great Spirit, can it be?"

How few of our 100,000 population of today, as they stand on the brow of the mountain, or gaze from some point of vantage, over miles of fertile land and unsurpassed orchards, think that this land was once the indisputed property of a race, the like of whom will never appear again. We are told that they were called the Neutrals; that they held the balance of power for many miles around, and settled all disputes between the neighboring tribes. That they were a powerful factor in the land, both in point of numbers, and as individuals, is beyond a doubt. Many of the remains of these people have been found to exceed in size the pick of our largest men of today. Many of the bones and skulls are intact, though buried, perhaps, three or four hundred years. Their teeth are perfect, decay rarely having set in, even after all these years. (They never knew what candy was in their childhood, or fed on confectioners' supplies, or this had not been the case.) Fleetness, litheness, and agility were marked characteristics of the race. High cheek bones and massive jaw, with prominent lips and mouth, and a Roman nose, composed

features which, together with a stolid expression and erect carriage, would mark them anywhere as men of distinction.

We seldom hear of any one finding the remains of a deformed Indian. They were never allowed in infancy to attempt to walk until they were able. Strapped to a board as papooses, they acquired that straightness of form that stayed with them to old age. Strong of form and fleet of foot, with everything in their favor to lead warriors' lives; yet with all this they have faded away like the leaves of the forest. Only their implements and the skeletons that are turned up from time to time are left to tell their story.

Students have spent years of their lives in piecing together such history of the various tribes as they may have been able to gather; but owing to the carelessness of the Indians themselves much has been lost. Very few of the achievements of their ancestors have been handed down. Few Indians of today know anything of the doings of their grandfathers, let alone the history of three or four centuries ago. Thus it comes to pass that the making of these prehistoric flint implements is a lost art; no Indian of the present day can even explain definitely their different uses.

We know little today of the original picturesqueness of Indian life. Historians who have wandered into the camps of some of the various tribes that inhabited this continent during the last two or three centuries have described much of their habits and achievements in warfare; their mixture of honesty, kindness, cruelty and cunning, and their faithfulness. Let us go back, however, to a more distant time; before the white man's foot had ever trod this lake-washed shore. Surely this must have been a hunter's paradise in those days. This bay of ours was teeming with ducks, geese and wild fowl of many and different kinds, some of which have vanished, like the people who hunted them. Where now stands our city was one vast forest in which deer, elk, bear, catamount, and other large game abounded. Inlets that are now polluted shone in the moonlight with the silvery salmon. The springs of water were as pure as

found anywhere. Was it any wonder that prehistoric man gathered together forces in this vicinity and made it his home? The great number of war arrows found on different battle grounds prove that he had to defend himself on many occasions from the attack of his enemies.

My brother and I have spent a considerable portion of our spare time, during the last few years, in getting together a collection of Indian relics from this district, and at present have between three and four thousand specimens, the majority having been found within twenty miles of Hamilton.

While we are naturally proud of our success as collectors, and continually finding new articles and places of interest, we must regretfully admit that we are seventy years too late in the archeological field in Ontario. When the early settlers came here they found mounds, unmolested, graves still covered with the flat stones placed on them to protect the remains from wild animals. Those stones have been removed that the land could be plowed. The plow does not generally work deep enough to turn up the remains, and hence the location remains undiscovered, unless a groundhog should chance to turn them out, or a bank slips down by some stream side, bringing along with it its signs of prehistoric times. In those early colonial days many splendid archaeological specimens were unearthed and destroyed or thrown aside as useless. Foreign countries profited by our lack of interest and have in their museums collections of Indian relics which will be hard to beat by any of us, or even all of us combined.

It is never too late to mend, as the old saying goes. What they have got we never will find; yet there are a few left for us if we have enough interest in them to hunt them up. There is not a running stream in this district that has not been tracked and retracked by the ancient Indian hunters. They had their large central camps, and then divided out into small hunting camps, where only a few would stay together, thus taking advantage of all the hunting and fishing to be obtained in a given district, and allowing them, in case of necessity, to gather at the

call of their chief at the central camp. This is the reason we find such a vast number of places where arrows have been chipped and implements made throughout this locality. To any one sufficiently interested in these relics, what better recreation can there be than a day's tramp through the country on an exploring expedition, returning home with from ten to fifty specimens; perhaps a little tired, but with a good appetite, and satisfied with results generally. It certainly is one of the healthiest hobbies that I know of.

The collection of Indian relics should be encouraged, both by societies and individuals, for they are gathering together records of the past which may be obtained in no other form, and which may, at some future time, be united in a form that will make them very well worth while.

There are very few specimens to be found within a radius of five hundred miles that may not be duplicated in this district, and the workmanship on the local relics will compare favourably with that on those of other localities. I have in my possession many specimens that I would not care to trade for the best I have seen of their kind from other locations. When we started collecting we got many fine war arrows on a strip of land near the filtering basins at the Beach, where Fitch's Hotel once stood. It was on this strip of land that the Iroquois used to traverse when on the war-path against the Hurons. It was also a village site of the Attewandarons, their burial ground having been turned up at the time the G. T. R. built their switch line to Stoney Creek. A few relics were gathered by private collectors, but the greater part were thrown around and destroyed by uninterested parties who cared nothing for what they found. I got several fine small drills and a few amulets, quite a number of skinning stones, and a few beads in that locality. I think that the best find in that part was made by the late Mr. Lottridge, when he unearthed, among many relics, a silver chalice, richly chased and of very fine design. It had apparently been wrapped in skins and buried. After Mr. Lottridge's death the whole collection was sold, I am told, to a collector at Jordan Station for a mere trifle.

The chalice was afterwards sold by him, I understand, and brought a very large figure at Chester's auction rooms, in London. It is not at all unlikely that this chalice was taken from the Jesuits in one of the raids into the Huron country.

The Brant House corner of the Bay was another good stamping ground for the relic hunter, but it is getting pretty well cleaned up now. We have got a good many specimens there. Many years ago the Beach was covered with oak trees and wild vines. It was a great resort of the Indians, who dug pits at intervals along nearly its whole length. A few traces of these still remain. Whether these pits were fortifications or for habitations it is hard to say. Probably they were used for both purposes. The ground around them is burned black with camp fires which have been continually burning there. Several fine relics have been obtained here, as well as broken pottery, but no signs of bone material, which goes to show the site must be of great age, used long before most of the camps around, in which are found bone needles, bone beads, and many other articles of bone, sometimes intermixed with articles of French origin. There are many camps where no bone remains of any kind exist, not even polished bone implements which naturally resist decay much longer than ordinary bone. Stone and flint articles, with a few remains of broken pottery which crumble away almost at the touch, are the only things acquired from these prehistoric sites. My brother found a very fine tempered copper arrow head at one of these old camps, a specimen which would be hard to duplicate in any collection. Fire stones are frequently found on these camp grounds. They are generally sandstone, or stone of a gritty nature, and have depressions worn in them, commonly on both sides, though some of them have as many as five or six of these depressions. These stones were used to procure fire. The Indian would pass his bowstring around a stick, or arrow, with a flint point, through a stone spindle whorl, then, by rotating it like a swivel, he could generate fire from punkwood in a comparatively short time. These fire stones are mostly from four to six inches across, though a few are much larger. I found one on the old Brant farm which I will not readily forget. It weighed

about nine pounds, and was very smooth. I forced it into my overcoat pocket with some difficulty; I had, however, to cut the pocket to get the stone out again. Having stayed rather late, I had to make a run of about half a mile to catch the last car at night, and I certainly had my troubles with that fire stone in my pocket. I do not think, though, that I would have thrown it away even had I been able to do so. While going over the Brant House grounds some years ago, an old gentleman showed me a place where many skeletons had been unearthed; these, however, all turned out to be the remains of negroes. The gentleman was seventy years of age, and a native of the place. He could not recollect any one who knew anything regarding their presence there, and could give us no information as to how they came to be in that locality. We read, however, in the history of Chief Brant, of his capture of thirty or more negroes, and that he took them into Canada with him, making them look after his horses and lands. These poor creatures were kept in the greatest subjection, Brant assuring them that if they attempted to escape he would tomahawk them, even if he had to follow them to the confines of Georgia. In all probability this was the last resting place of some of these unfortunate people. While hunting on a piece of land a little to the back of the present Brant House, I got the only rebuff for traspassing which I had yet received in my many excursions. I had been over this land many times before, it then having been in the possession of a genial tiller of the soil, who had frequently come over and had a chat. It had changed hands, however, and instead of the usual welcome, a gruff voice greeted me, "Hi, what are you doing there?" Well, I didn't run away, but, waiting till he came up, I talked to him, showed him a few arrow points I had found, and calling his attention to the chips of flint lying around on the ground, explained how they came to be there. It was evidently news to him. He did not know there was anything of the kind around there. "Did you find them on here?" he asked. "Why yes, some of them." Well, it appeared he owned the land all right, all right. "And if there was any more of them things around he wanted them." I thanked him, told him I thought I had the cream of what was to be found there, and that he was welcome to all the rest, and assured him

that in future I would "keep off." I am glad to say that the collector who acts reasonably and with consideration meets very few of this class of man. This incident reminds me of a sign I noted near the city, "No trespassing. Trespassers will be prosecuted." Some waggish spirit had written under this: "The earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof."

Many prehistoric implements have been found near the Red Hill creek, which in the time of the Indians was a good salmon stream. Chipping places are found near many parts of its course, also small burial places containing one or two graves. There relics are being continually turned out. We have obtained some of our finest specimens in these localities, one being a very fine banded drinking tube about five inches long. Some collectors claim that this was the earliest form of pipe. I, with many others, think that they were used for drinking, their purpose being to get below the surface water in the streams and springs. Years ago, many places were found where the Indians had driven hollow cedar logs into the soft, springy ground, thus securing a good supply of fresh clear water. If they went to this trouble for the sake of cleanliness, what is more probable than the use of the tube for the same reason. We got from the Red Hill vicinity also many skinning stones and several grooved axes, one perfect pipe (pottery), with many more or less damaged ones, two perfect stone pipes, and several ceremonial objects. When we come across camps that have existed since the coming of the French, we find beads of glass and other compositions, which must have proved very attractive to the Indian, who traded readily for strings and necklaces of the same. Wampum beads were manufactured out of a compound by the French and Dutch, but these are far inferior as relics to the original hand worked wampum made by the Indians themselves from shell or bone. The French introduced the iron tomahawk, in three different sizes. The first issue was rejected by the Indians as too heavy, and many have been found that have been worked down to smaller size. The second issue, though smaller, was not altogether satisfactory, and there was issued a still smaller size which seemed to properly fill the redman's requirements. These axes

were made at Three Rivers, Quebec, and were stamped with three crosses. They were made of the commonest wrought iron, and were very easily roughed out. The pipe tomahawk was made by the British, and was far superior to any of the axes of that time, and was in great demand. I have specimens of all the various kinds, they having been used plentifully in this district.

Several perforated Spanish silver coins have been found with Indian remains near here; they were probably used as ornaments, and procured by barter with the tribes to the south of us. The prehistoric Indian had to procure his flint from a distance, very little flint of any quality being found in this neighborhood. While he did use the local chert, it was upon imported stock that he made his best efforts. He did not waste a broken implement, and many prehistoric relics are found on later camp sites, articles that have been broken and reworked, made into something other than that for which they were first intended. Such implements are in a class by themselves, and are very interesting to any collector. Bone harpoons are very rare in this province, very few having come to light. We had the good fortune to find three of these, two of which are perfect. These were used in spearing the larger fish in the creeks and bays. A perfect pottery bowl is a thing that is almost unobtainable, the dampness of the ground penetrating them and causing them to fall apart. I have a large collection of ornamental fragments of pottery which show a great variety of decoration. This is something that many collectors overlook, yet they show the Indian to have had an eye for the beautiful. Some of the bowls, when perfect, must have been works of art such as few would give the Indian credit for. I remember, some twenty years ago, a man who collected various curios was walking along the bay shore at Lansdowne Park; he came across a place where the bank had broken away laying bare a great find of relics, among them being five or six grooved axes, a lot of arrow points, several ceremonial objects, and five perfect pottery bowls about six inches in diameter. I tried hard to buy one of the bowls from him, but he would not part with one for any consideration. About a month later I called to see him again; the children had broken up all the bowls, playing with them; all but

one of the grooved axes were lost, and he did not care to part with the remaining one. Such was the end of the best find of prehistoric pottery that I have any knowledge of in this vicinity or in this province. Some time ago I was told of a farmer who had a perfect pottery bowl which the ground hogs had turned out of a bank. "Go after him," I was told, "he cares nothing about it." I walked over fifteen miles and found our man, but too late, the bowl was broken beyond repair, many pieces being missing. Thus do uninterested people destroy relics that are almost priceless to the collector. With the coming of the French came the copper or brass kettle or bowl. This the Indian looked upon as a great acquisition, after the use of the pottery bowl, it being a much handier utensil for camp life and travelling purposes. They are frequently found with Indian remains in this district. Mr. Allison, of Waterdown, found so many remains of brass and copper kettles near lake Medad that he had them melted and cast into a small cannon, about eighteen inches long, which now stands among his collection. Many articles of copper and brass, mostly of an ornamental character, such as beads, bracelets and rings of various patterns, were traded to the Indians, who would also get the sheet copper or brass and make tubular beads and ornaments for themselves. These rude specimens are very interesting. Round perforated discs of brass or copper, which were once polished and bright ornaments, are sometimes found, as well as belt ornaments of various kinds. The Indians made beads of bone of nearly every description, and from a quarter of an inch to five inches long. Some claim that the larger ones were used as handles for various implements. Many have tally marks on them, having been used for counting or recording things. The medicine man went through a lot of manœuvres with his strings of large bone beads at different ceremonies in those days. Some beads were used in gambling, which the Indian dearly loved. We find, now and then, round stones, sometimes nearly egg shape, which are claimed to be game stones, for use in a game somewhat similar to bowling. Others again, claim that they were used for clubs, which appears to me as more likely. Gouges of stone are not numerous in this district; I have only two perfect specimens, one ten inches long and

of very fine workmanship. Neither are grooved stone axes common, yet I own eighteen of these, some being of the finest workmanship. The shaft would be bent around in the groove and then bound with hide. Some axes have a groove along the edge also, so that a wedge might be driven in to fasten the head more securely. The general purpose axe of this locality was the ungrooved variety, judging from the numbers found, as compared with the grooved. Many of these were bound on with thongs, while others were grafted into a living sapling, which was afterwards trimmed to form the handle. The sapling would be split enough to allow the axe head to be driven through, then it would be bound up and allowed to grow together again. After this process it would be impossible to dislodge the head without breaking the wood. I have seen it done right here in Hamilton, as an experiment. Some of the axes are sharp at both ends, and must have been a very formidable weapon in the hands of an active man. The Indian would walk along the shores of the lake and pick out water-washed stones of suitable size and hard material, which with patience he would work into an axe and thus save much of the rougher work. Some of these axe heads are very heavy, and it is surprising that they were carried around to such a large extent. Skinning knives, or stones, are made of much lighter material, far thinner and narrower. These were used to skin all kinds of game. Many butchers of today claim that the old deer skinning stone is much superior to the knife, both as regards speed and perfect work. Bird amulets are scarce, very few having been found here. A few fine ones were found at lake Medad and around Waterdown, and are in the hands of Waterdown collectors. This locality has produced some of the finest spear heads, as to workmanship, that I have ever seen, although not many very large ones are found. They are fine specimens of work, and show that our Indian hunters went after big game. War arrow points are found on many of the old battle grounds. Some are splendid specimens of the flint age, and run from one-quarter to two inches long. They were used in war, and poisoned at the point with rattlesnake poison. They are more or less triangular in shape, without any shank, and were fastened loosely at the end of the shaft; an enemy endeavoring to

extract the arrow would only pull out the shaft, leaving the point to do its deadly work. Rattlesnakes were common here in those days, and the Indians would go after them with a forked stick and a deer's liver, and, holding the snake near the head with the forked stick, would tease it with the liver until it had struck all its poison into it, and repeat the process until enough poison had been obtained. Then the liver was hung away to dry, and afterwards reduced to powder, to be used on war arrows when wanted for action. Hunting arrow points of many shapes, sizes and designs, are found on nearly every stream side. Some as good as any of the best collection in the country. A few serrated arrow points have been found, that is, with edges like a saw. I have some very fine ones, both hunting and war. Judging from what collectors say, they are very scarce, and we are glad to occasionally come across them. There is one thing we are a little proud of, and that is, coming across something new to the archaeolocical experts. In looking over Prof. Moorehead's "Stone Age of North America," I noticed that nothing was said of serrated flint flakes, or knives, and as I have about forty of these specimens, found near here, I thought I would sketch some of them and have him describe their use, he being one of the best authorities at the present time in America. I received the following reply: "Phillips Academy, Dep. American Arch. Chas. Peabody, Director. Warren K. Moorehead, Curator. Dear Sir. I have your letter and the drawings, and thank you for the same. We shall file them away for future reference. It is unusual to find serrated flakes, and judging from the number you have discovered in Canada, it must have been a custom to serrate flakes, and use same in sawing, and possibly in ceremonial practices on prisoners. Some time I hope to look over the sites where you find these things, as perhaps something could be learned from studying them. Thanking you for sending me the drawings of these unique objects, and wishing you success, I am, very truly yours, Warren K. Moorehead." Well, I have that satisfaction that all collectors have when they find they have something very few others have got. One thing many collectors neglect, and that is, gathering unfinished articles. I think far more of some of these than I do of perfect specimens. They show the first part

of man's work in bringing the rough material to finished goods, and are stepping stones not to be overlooked. Few have got as fine a collection of cores, flake knives, and turtle backs as I have gathered together; many of them are splendid specimens of flint chipping, and date back to the earliest periods of man. Many people explain how arrow heads were made, in as many different ways, but I have failed to find any one who could make one, or even shape flint to their mind. I'm very much like the man from Missouri—you've got to show me. We found bones identical with those supposed to have been used as chippers by the Mandans and the Apaches, and similar stones to the ones used in striking with, but I have yet to learn how it was done. This paper is incomplete as regards implements and arms, as fresh material is continually being discovered, and to enlarge on the many already found would fill much time. We are studying an unwritten past, and many of these articles, used for one thing by one tribe, were put to a totally different use by another. Much of the ancient prehistoric life we cannot reconstruct; but the day is coming when by unceasing study of these objects we shall arrive at definite conclusions as to life in the past; and there are very few better opportunities offered for this than in our own locality.

Indian Place Names

PAPER READ BY W. F. MOORE, JANUARY 8, 1912, BEFORE WENTWORTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY, HAMILTON, ONT.

It has always been a matter of great regret to me that comparatively few Indian names have been retained as the names of our various municipalities. These names are very musical and nearly always descriptive, and at times suggestive. The significance of these names in many instances is lost. All effort to get their significance should be made, and when found should be kept. The farther, in time, we get away from this study the more difficult it will be to get the information. The course of study, or pursuit that this Society is undertaking, is worthy of all commendation.

I regret that the paper to be given this evening had not been undertaken by a more able investigator. Some of these explorers, surveyors, or missionaries who in long years of association have got on the inside of the Indian mind, should be able to give a splendid address on this subject. The following paper, incomplete as it may be, is the best I have been able to prepare, and I hope it may be as instructive to you as it has been in its preparation, interesting to me.

It is very awkward and confusing to have old country names grafted on to Canadian cities. For instance, you take up your morning paper and you read that the Mayor of London is dead and you look to see if the word Ontario is added to London. If so, we know that a Canadian Mayor is dead. If the word Ontario is not there we vaguely wonder if a Canadian citizen or an English citizen has passed over the "divide." The same in regard to Victoria, Dresden, Whitby, etc. Even this error is not so absurd as the mistake made (upon whose authority I do not know) of

having townships called after members of parliament. So persistently has this been done that we suspect that the surveyors were instructed to so name these townships. Note the names lying in that district known as New Ontario—Burpee, Stratton, Proudfoot, Charlton, Mulock, Widdifield, Tilton, Hallam, Merritt, and hundreds of others. How very much nicer had there been given to these places, as far as possible, the names given to them by the Indians. I am devoutly thankful to the authorities who changed Bytown to Ottawa. It is said that a rose by another name would smell as sweet; that may be true of the rose, but the name Bytown would not be a good name for the capital of the Dominion. According to the poet, Tom Moore, Ottawa should be spelt Utawa, for among the Caughnawaga Indians, and indeed among nearly all Indians, words of three syllables had the accent on the middle syllable, for instance, Chataukua, Toronto, Chicago, Algonquin.

The spelling of Indian words is another difficulty. A few years ago I was up on a hunting trip in the Kippewa district. I had an Indian guide, rather clever fellow, but with no education. I found some difficulty in remembering some of the long Indian names, and I had the guide, who spoke English very well, to pronounce the words very slowly, syllable by syllable, and I got such words as Saw-see-sin-a-gon, Quin-wah-shee. Another man having another guide might easily get a different pronounciation, and of course a different spelling. While on this trip I asked the guide the meaning of Kippewa. He said it meant "hiding-place," and gave as a reason that in former years, when tribal wars were very common, the Algonquins would retire into this district, which is a series of small lakes joined by streams or portages, which only the initiated could follow, but in which the stranger would be completely lost.

Schoolcraft, who probably is the best authority we have in regard to Indian practices and customs, says, "Every word has its appropriate meaning, and with additional syllables additional force or meaning is added to the word." Examples On-on-dago. Dago corresponds to our word "ham," the ending of many English words, as Oxenham, Nottingham, Durham; or "berg" or

"by." The prefix means high, therefore On-dago a high place, On-on-dago a high, high place. The Indians very frequently repeated a prefix in this way. In fact, the Indian language is almost classical in its construction—many prefixes, the root or stem and few affixes. It is also imitative. The Indian name for owl is Koo-koo-koooh, for a river Se-be, for rapids Sha-see-jce-won. They were also fond of pictures, and to the tutored mind these were easily understood. Anything bad was represented by a snake, and a term of profound contempt was to call a man a snake. The rising sun was represented by a curved line, with a dot or little ball over the left end. The south was their determining point. We take the north on account of the mariner's compass and north star. The setting sun was represented by a similar curved line with a dot or little ball at the right end of the curve. Even with white men, who knew not a word of the Indian language, the Indian could make himself clearly understood.

Some years ago I was up the Capilano Creek, north of Vancouver, on a trout fishing trip. An old Siwash Indian came down to my camp and conveyed the idea clearly that he wanted a drink of whiskey. I did not give him any. I will not say that I had not any. He got angry, picked up a pole, deliberately put it across the trail, stepped over it, and then with horrible grimaces pointed to the pole and shook his fist at me. I knew that he was defying me to cross the pole or go any further up the stream. I did not go. I thought he meant it, and at any rate the mosquitoes were very bad.

IROQUOIS is of doubtful origin, and by the way the Algonquin Indians pronounce the word, e-rock-wah, which you will notice keeps up the harmony of pronunciation by putting the accent on the penult. The meaning of the word is probably hero, I have spoken, concluding a speech, and koue, meaning long drawn out sorrow or short joy, and certainly to their tribal enemies, the French, they were a long drawn out sorrow and short joy.

DOMINION OF CANADA. At the time of Confederation, and at one of the meetings, the question of the name of the united

provinces was under discussion. A member of the committee rose and pointed to the map of Canada, noting that the country was bounded by the great oceans and on the south by the St. Lawrence, including the lakes, and the north by the great Unknown Lands (the end of the earth). Then he read the verse from the seventy-second psalm, "He shall have **dominion** from sea to sea and from the river unto the ends of the earth." The word "dominion" fastened itself on the minds of the committee, hence the name. Not an Indian one, it is true, but it seems a suitable opportunity of referring to it.

CANADA. Cartier says that Canada means a village. Boyd, in his history, says that when the Europeans came to America they sought for gold vainly. They pointed to their gold ornaments and questioned the Indians where this gold might be found. The Indians did not know and replied by the word Ka-na-ta, meaning there is nothing. This seems rather fanciful, and it would be safer to accept Cartier's definition of the word.

CHEDOKE. This is not an Indian word, but an Indian pronunciation of two English words—"seven oaks." The Indians hearing the English talking about the locality on which there were seven oak trees, caught the words indistinctly, hence the name of Hamilton's beautiful drive.

ONTARIO gets its name from O-no-ta-ri-io, meaning handsome lake or beautiful lake. At Confederation this name was given to our beautiful province, for which favor let us be devoutly thankful; it might have been called New Ireland, as the Indian Shubenacadie was stupidly changed to New Scotland (Nova Scotia).

TECUMSETH, or Tecumseh, or more properly Tecumtha, one who passes, or springs across intervening space. Hence the name given to Tecumseh. The Panther-meteor-shooting star. Tecumseh formed the gigantic scheme of trying to stop the advance of the white people westward. To do this he formed an Indian confederacy from Florida to the Great Lakes. While organizing this great work in the south his brother was dis-

astrously defeated at the great and decisive battle of Tippecanoe. The confederacy was broken up, and Tecumseh cast in his lot with the British, and exclaimed, when brought into the presence of Sir Isaac Brock, "There is a man." He was given by the British the position of Brigadier-General. He was basely deserted by Proctor at Moraviantown, and was killed fighting desperately. Where he was buried is not known. Tecumseh township in Simcoe County was called after this warrior, although it does not appear that he ever visited the county, but in 1819 a vessel, which had been built at Chippewa, was sunk in harbor at Penetang; it may be that the name being in the minds of the public, the authorities gave it to that splendid township, one of the very best in the province.

TORONTO. Originally spelt de-on-do, "trees growing in the water,' a very suitable name. When we remember the lowlands lying at the mouth of the Don and Humber it would seem that the trees were growing in the water.

SENECA. An expression of dislike—contempt. Seneca means a snake. A snake hides in the grass and strikes and glides away. Indians are not the only ones who call their treacherous enemies snakes.

NIAGARA. It is natural to suppose that this well-known place would have no obscurity attached to its name, but it has. In fact, we do not know how to spell the name, or yet do we know what the word means. One of the earliest forms of the word is Ongiara, but there are many forms of the same word. The meaning is also obscure. The Hand-Book of Indians of Canada says it means "divided bottom lands," but another source of information gives the meaning as "Thunder of Waters." For obvious reasons we prefer to accept the latter definition. It seems reasonable and is seemingly such name as the Indians would give to this great water-fall.

Tiny, Tay and Flos are not Indian names. The following story was told to me by Mr. Thos. McKee, P. S. I. for South Sim-

coe. He said that the wife of Sir Peregrine Maitland had three King Charles spaniels, whose names were Tiny, Tay and Flos, and these names were foolishly and flatteringly given to these townships in the Penetang district. Changes of such names are not unjustifiable.

HURON. This is really not an Indian name, but a French word meaning bristly, rough, unkempt, hairy, a boar's head. The French word "hure" means rough, hence Huron. I am sorry to disturb the old cherished idea that this was a pure Indian word, but I have consulted many authorities and find that it is French.

CAYUGA. Variously pronounced, but I understand that the people of the town call it Ku-gee. It means a fruit country; another authority says it means Muckyland. There are 144 different spellings of the word given, the last one being "Soon-no-daugh-we-no-wenda."

WINNIPEG. True, this place is not in Ontario, but on account of its importance it may be well to explain the meaning of the word. Weeni-turbid, neebeg—the plural of water—turbid waters. You will find upon examination that these waters are all shallow, and in windy weather become turbid or muddy. Many words relating to water commence with some form of "winni"—"Winnipegosis," "Winnebago."

ETOBICOKE. A beautiful township lying a short distance west of Toronto. The word is badly pronounced. You will have noticed that Indian words have few silent letters, and if this word were spelt as it is pronounced it would be E-to-bi-co. At one time I lived in the township and was gravely informed that the name was a corruption of Toby Cook, a first settler. That would certainly destroy any romantic interest in the name. Really the correct spelling is "Wah-do-be-kaung,' and should be so pronounced.

ORILLIA is not an Indian word, but a Spanish word, and should be spelt Orilla.

BRANT. This is the civilized name given, I understand, after or at baptism to the famous chief Thayendenagea. He was very loyal to the British arms during the Revolutionary war. He was educated, translated Mark's gospel and the Book of Common Prayer into the Mohawk language. He never ceased being a fierce Indian. Barbarism and civilization found a resting place at one and the same time in this man. One writer says, "His Bible and tomahawk rested side by side on the same shelf." Brant county and Brantford city are in honor of his memory.

ERAMOSA. It is said that the wife of one of the settlers asked the surveyor to give that township a pretty name, as other townships near had ugly names. She suggested the name Eramosa, not knowing that the Indian significance of the word was "dead dog." The word should be spelt Un-ne-mo-sah. It is well at times not to enquire too carefully in regard to the meaning of some words. Chicago, the pride of the west, means a "skunk's nest."

MEDONTE. A fine township in Northern Simcoe, is very definitely derived, "I carry on my back," or a portage. Medonte lies on the Indian trail between Orillia and Coldwater.

TUSCARORA. A shirt wearer. Evidently the name had an existence before the in-coming of the white people, for I am not sure that previous to this time the Indians wore what white people call a shirt.

MUSKOKA, or muscago, means red ground. The name does not seem suitable.

WINONA, properly, according to Longfellow, we-no-nah. I think the people of this pretty village are quite wrong in pronouncing it Winona. Longfellow says, "Fair Nokomis bore a daughter, and she called her name We-no-nah.

CHIPPEWA. Ojibway same word, and referring to the same people. The word means "to roast till puckered up," referring to the seam on their mocassins which bore somewhat that

appearance. This tribe of Indians properly belonged to the Western and Northern United States. The name in any form should not be given to any part of Ontario, except possibly in Huron or Bruce, where it is not found, except a small village between Allenford and Port Elgin, called Chippewa Hill.

TEMISKAMING means "in the deep water." I spent some time on and around the lake hunting and fishing, and the Indians and half-breeds pronounced it Te-mis-ka-mang, and I think it should be so spelt.

COUCHICHING. I had much trouble in finding reliable information in regard to this beautiful lake at Orillia. In Alex. Fraser's Bureau of Archives he says that Champlain on his voyage of exploration passed from Matchedash Bay to Lake Simcoe, and in so doing passed through a little lake which the Indians called couchiching, meaning "little lake."

ALGONQUIN. A tribe of Indians extending from Newfoundland westward to the Rocky Mountains, and including many small tribes. The name means "Spearing fish from the bow of a canoe."

NIPISSING. "At the little water or lake," as compared with the big water of Lake Huron. A tribe of Indians always friendly to the French, by whom they were soon Christianized. Their territory lay from Georgian Bay across to the Ottawa River.

The Neutral Nation

BY MR. KIRWAN MARTIN

8TH JANUARY, 1914

(In the following pages Kirby means William Kirby's Annals of Niagara; Parkman J, Francis Parkman's The Jesuits in North America; Parkman L. S., Parkman's La Salle and the Discovery of the Great West; and Smith, Inspector J. H. Smith's Historical Sketch of the County of Wentworth and The Head of the Lake.)

I undertook the task of giving a brief account of the Neutral Nation as related by Francis Parkman, but I find that the best account of it is to be found in Kirby, pages 13-29, wherein he sets out those portions of the Annual Report of the Jesuits to their Superior for the year 1641, written apparently by Father Breboeuf, who was accompanied by Father Joseph Marie Chanmout.

The Attikadarons, or Neutral Nation, occupied the country chiefly on the North shore of Lake Erie and the Niagara River, but they also occupied some land on the East side of the River. Their chief town was Onghiara, now Niagara, on the West shore at the mouth of the River. They also had three or four outlying towns on the East side of the Niagara River, in what is now the State of New York. Parkman J., page XLIV. says that the Neutral country ran westerly along the North shore of Lake Erie about 40 leagues (Kirby, page 6, says to Detroit.) This would bring the Westerly boundary somewhat West of London. The main Southerly boundary of the Neutral territory would of course be Lake Erie. We have no definite information regarding the Northerly boundary, nor how far East they came along the shores of Lake Ontario. Parkman tells us (J. XLIV.) that their country lay five days' journey South from the Tionnontate or

Tobacco Nation towns. Also that it took Lalemant five days from the Village of St. Joseph, near the Southern boundary of the Huron County, five days to reach the nearest Neutral town. The Grand River was no doubt a regular Indian highway, with towns upon it; the Dundas marsh a sportsman's paradise. Allowing for the difficulties of travel, I think it is probable that the most Northerly village of the Neutrals was in the Guelph district, and the most Easterly along Lake Ontario, in the vicinity of Waterdown.

Samuel de Champlain discovered Lake Ontario in the year 1615, on his famous trip from Montreal to the fortified town of the Onondagas, in Matheson County, a few miles south of Lake Oneida (Parkman Pioneers of France, page 402), via the Ottawa River, Lakes Nipissing, Huron, Simcoe and Balsam, and the River Trent. Kirby states (account 9) that he visited the Neutrals on the east bank of the Niagara River. I have not been able to find any mention of this in Parkman.

Although, according to Parkman J., page XLIV., the first account of the Neutrals was given by the Franciscan Friar La Roche Dallion, or Dallon; in 1626 they appear to have been visited by wandering Frenchmen, fur traders, in earlier days, who reported a numerous population in 28 towns, besides hamlets. Lalemant, in 1640, Parkman J., page XLIV., note 4, estimated the population at 12,000 in 40 villages.

Kirby says that the Neutrals were sometimes called La Nation du Petun—the Tobacco Nation (page 7); but from his references at pages 10 and 30 to the branch of the Neutrals called the Tobacco Nation, and the statement of Parkman (pages 42 to 44 and pages 138 to 142), it seems to me more probable that the name Tobacco Nation was incorrectly used with reference to the Neutral Nation and properly belonged to a smaller nation, possibly a northern branch of the Neutral Nation, which occupied the woody valleys of the Blue Mountains south of Nothewasaga Bay (the southern part of the Georgian Bay), upon which are the ports of Meaford and Collingwood.

The Huron, Iroquois, Neutral and Tobacco Nations, in the opinion of the Jesuits, (Kirby, page 15), spring from one family, or primitive stock, but in course of time becoming separated ended in bitter enemies.

The Neutrals were so called because they kept neutral in the great struggle between the Hurons and Iroquois (Parkham J., pag 44). The hostile warriors meeting in a Neutral cabin were forced to keep the peace. Once outside, the truce was at an end, and they were at liberty to fall upon one another, a privilege of which they seem to have availed themselves with great gusto.

Although not strictly part of the story of the Neutrals it should here be stated that the Iroquois, in the times we are referring to, occupied the country south of Lake Ontario, the present State of New York, from New England to the foot of Lake Erie; the Hurons the country to the north of Lake Ontario from the River Ottawa to Lake Huron. The chief town of the Hurons was Cahiagae, in the township of Orillia, three leagues west of the River Severn, i. e., north and west of the Township of Orillia. The warpath of the Iroquois against the Hurons was from the lower Niagara, by way of Onghiara, and thence in canoes around the head of Lake Ontario to Toronto; thence by way of the Humber River and Lakes Simcoe and Couchiching to the land of the Hurons. A wild route and the scene of savage war and adventure in those barbarous times. One can well understand from this that Flamborough Head, above Burlington, was a splendid point to watch for Iroquois war parties. I think I may further say that Burlington at the Head of the Lake was first seen by white men in 1669, when La Salle and his party came to the town of Otinaouatawa (Inspector Smith, page 29, quoting from Galinées Journal), or Otinawatawa (Parkman's La Salle, page 15), a kind of Iroquois colony at the Head of the Lake, understood to be on the shores of Lake Medad, near Waterdown. This they occupied because of the good hunting, deer and bear being abundant (Smith, page 21). Taking everything into consideration, I feel that one is warranted in concluding that this advantageous position had not been overlooked by the Neutrals and had been occupied by them during their days of power.

The Neutrals were a brave and ferocious people, and carried on a deadly warfare with the Mascoutins or Nation of Fire (apparently erroneously so called—their proper name, Maskoutinch, meaning a country stripped of trees—a slight change of letters seems to have been responsible for the mistake), an Algonquin tribe beyond Lake Michigan. In this the Neutrals seem to have had the upper hand. They surpassed the Hurons in form and stature, and were bold and active hunters in a country abounding in game. The licentiousness of the Hurons was a byword, but in this they were also surpassed by the Neutrals.

In the year 1678 Niagara Falls were first seen by a white man, Father Hennepin, who had been sent by La Salle with La Motte and a small company to build a ship for the navigation of Lake Erie and the other lakes. This, the Griffin, was the forerunner of the mighty fleet that now sails these inland seas.

When Father Hennepin arrived at the Niagara River not a Neutral remained; they had all been destroyed or dispersed by the Iroquois in 1650, following the destruction of the Hurons by the Iroquois in 1645. The accounts extant as to the manner of the destruction of the Neutrals and the cause of it are, as might be expected, meagre. The taking of two towns with great slaughter seems to have utterly demoralized them. In the Relations of the Jesuits Kirby says (page 29) are hints that they favoured the Hurons, and so brought upon them the implacable fury of the Iroquois. This is apparently in conflict with the Jesuit account in 1640, where (Kirby, page 14) it is stated the Neutrals seemed to have the least liking for the Hurons. It may well be, however, that this changed when the Neutrals saw the war was going against the Hurons, and began to realize too late that their policy of neutrality had been a blunder. It does not seem improbable that the far-seeing and better organized Iroquois planned at a very early date to divide and destroy in detail, and that when the time came there was no difficulty in finding an excuse for attack. Had the Neutrals and Hurons been wise in their generation, and combined against the Iroquois, the story might well have been different. Their fate is a warning to those who now occupy the land where they were once masters.

The Ojibways of North America

BY MARY L. CLAYPOLE, LONDON, ONT.

True it is that "distance lends enchantment to the view," and in no truer sense can this be applied than in the interest which seems to surround the histories of the people of other lands, while to a great many the earliest inhabitants of North America —the North American Indian—remains, in a great measure, an unknown quantity; or, coming nearer still, let us say those tribes which inhabited that part of the North American Continent which is of greatest interest to us, viz., our own fair land of Canada—and among all the savage tribes whose lawless deeds both terrify and thrill the reader none are more deserving of attention than the great Ojibway Nation.

The Ojibway tribes are scattered throughout the Dominion and embrace several branches, including the Ojibways proper, the Messissagas and Saulteaux. The name of the tribe has been spelled in various ways, as Ochipoes, Ouchepones, Ojibways, Ojibwas, Chippeways and Chippewas. The Algonquins also were originally one and the same people; they spoke, and still speak, the same language.

The origin of the word "Ojibway" has never been satisfactorily settled, although some authorities claim that the word means "voyager," believing from their traditions that they had originally come from a great distance. Others claim that the word means "puckered up," referring to the Ojibway's inhuman method of roasting their captives over a fire until the skin puckered up with the heat; but one of their own historians—an Ojibway chief—claims that the true origin of the word is derived from the fact that at Council meetings, where the chiefs of many

tribes assembled, the Ojibways were the first to wear a peculiar foot-gear, which was puckered up at the toe—in other words, the mocassin; and from this circumstance derived their name, Ojibways—meaning "puckered up."

Some of the early traders who met them at the Falls of S. S. Marie named them "Saulteau" from this circumstance. They were referred to with little difference in the orthography in Gen. Washington's report in 1754 in his trip to La Boeuf, on Lake Erie, but are first mentioned by our treaty tribes in the general Treaty of Greenvillle of 1795, in which, with the Ottawas, they ceded the Island of Macinac. This grant became the base of the concessions made by them at S. S. Marie in the Treaty of June 16, 1820.

The Ojibways had their central location along the shores of Lake Superior, which is called in the Ojibway language Ke-che-gunne, and has been called "The Great Lake of the Ojibways."

The extent of the territory occupied by them is the largest of any Indian possessions of which there is any definite knowledge. When the Champlain traders met them in 1610 their eastern boundary was marked by the waters of Lakes Huron and Michigan, a mountain ridge on the north, and on the west a forest beyond which lay an almost boundless prairie. Their territory also extended along the Potomac, the Ohio and Mississippi rivers, but, especially, as stated above, along the shores of Lake Superior they held undisputed sway, that territory being always known as "the country of the Ojibways." It comprised some of the most romantic and beautiful scenery imaginable. There are sparkling waters falling over rocky beds, reflecting the mighty trees that for centuries have raised their stout branches above them. Here were miles of wild flowers whose sweet fragrance was borne on the soft breezes, and which formed a carpet of colors as bright and beautiful as the rainbow that arches Niagara. The woodlands were composed of a great variety of trees, mostly pine, hemlock, oak, cedar and maple. As the traveller

approached the north he would meet birch, tamarack, spruce and evergreen.

The mountains, rivers, lakes and caverns of the Ojibway country could not but impress the beholder with the fact that Nature had there built a home for Nature's children. No wonder that amid such romantic surroundings, where the very spirit of poetry seemed to hover, the mystic and poetic nature of the Indian has peopled it with creatures of his own imagination. Innumerable are the traditions related of it and its borders. Every point of land, every bay of water has its legendary story to tell, and it is that which renders the region around Lake Superior so superior to others in point of interest. The substance of Longfellow's beautiful poem "Hiawatha" was founded upon an Indian legend found in the works of Schoolcraft, and incorporated with various other Indian histories, native myths, customs and descriptions of scenery in the land inherited by the Ojibway tribes. You remember the reference:

"Should you ask me whence these stories,
Whence these legends and traditions,
With the odors of the forest,
With the dew and damp of meadows,
With the curling smoke of wigwams—
With the rushing of great rivers,
With their frequent repetition,
And their wild reverberations,
As of thunder in the mountains—
I should answer, I should tell you,
From the forests and the prairies,
From the great lakes of the Northland,
From the land of the Ojibways—
From the land of the Decotahs.
From the mountains, moors and fenlands,
Where the heron, the Shuh-Shuh-Gah
Feeds among the reeds and rushes.
I repeat them as I heard them
From the lips of Nawadaha,
The musician, the sweet singer.
Should you ask me where Nawadah
Found these songs, so wild and wayward—
Found these legends and traditions—
I should answer, I should tell you,—

In the birds' nests of the forest—
In the lodges of the beaver—
In the hoof-prints of the bison—
In the eyrie of the eagle;
All the wild fowl sang them to him,
In the melancholy marshes.
There are many other legends,
Incantations, that were taught me,
That were found along the wayside—
Gathered in the fragrant copses—
Blown me from the forest branches—
Culled among the plumes of pine-trees,
Scented from the vines and flowers—
Whispered to me as I followed
Flocks in land of honeyed meadows,
Over hillocks green and golden,
After sable-haired Murrikka,
And the many-colored Kimmo.
Many rhymes the cold has taught me,
Many lays the rain has brought me—
Other songs the winds have sung me;—
Many birds from many forests
Oft have sung me lays in concord;
Waves of sea and ocean billows—
Music from the many waters—
Music from the whole creation,
Oft have been my guide and master."

One of the traditions of the Ojibways, as to their origin, as told by them, is as follows:

"Our forefathers were living at the Great Salt Water toward the rising sun. The great Megis (meaning Sea-Shell) showed itself above the surface of the Great Water, and the rays of the sun for a long period were reflected from its glossy back. it gave warmth and light to the Au-ish-in-aub-ag (meaning the red race). All at once it sank into the deep and for a long time our ancestors were not blessed with its light. It rose to the surface and appeared again on the great river which drains the water of the great lakes, and again for a long time it gave life to our forefathers and reflected back the rays of the sun. Again it disappeared from sight and it rose not till it appeared to the eyes of the Au-ish-in-aub-ag on the shores of the first great lake.

Again it sank from sight and death daily visited the wigwams of our forefathers till it showed itself again and reflected the rays of the sun once more at Bow-e-ting (S. S. Marie). Here it remained for a long time, but once more and for the last time it disappeared and the An-ish-in-aub-ag was left in darkness and misery till it showed itself again at Mo-ning-wun-a-kaun-ing (La Pointe Island).''

There is another tradition very similar to this told by the old men of an Ojibway village on Lake Superior, the only difference between the two traditions being that the otter is used in the same figurative manner as the sea-shell is in the other. This Otter, it is said, appeared to the Ojibways at the Great Salt Water, again at the River St. Lawrence, then at Lake Huron, again at S. S. Marie, then at La Pointe, and lastly at Fond du lac, or the end of Lake Superior, where it is said to have forced the sand bank at the mouth of the St. Louis River; the place is still pointed out by the Indians where they believe the great otter broke through.

According to tradition the Ojibways separated into different bands, some travelling towards the south and others westward and northward on the shores of Lake Superior, while a large body of them remained in the vicinity of the Soo. It is evident that a large band of them must have entered Pigeon River, on the north shore of Lake Superior, and travelling westward became scattered widely throughout Algoma, locating at various points in the Thunder Bay and Rainy River Districts, where some of their descendents still remain. As they became known as the ''Hardwood or Timber People,'' they must have lived for quite a long period in these districts, having entered Manitoba and the North-West Territories.

The Ojibway proper and the Saulteaux have resided in Manitoba for a long time, a large camp of Ottawas and Ojibways having been located at the present site of the city of Winnipeg in the last decade of the 18th century.

The Ojibways were great warriors. They carried on incessent war with the Sioux and Iroquois, the latter being compelled

to sue for peace, and were granted portions of land by their conquerors near Napanee and Grand River, and the Sioux were driven southward along with the Sacs and Foxes until the Ojibways became the possessors also of the region surrounding the headwaters of the Mississippi.

The wars between the Ojibways and the Sioux originated in the question of the right of occupancy of the fisheries at the upper end of Lake Superior. The first battle between the Ojibways and the Eastern Iroquois was fought at a place near where Orillia is now situated, about a quarter of a mile northward. Here the Iroquois collected and awaited the attack of the Western Hurons and Ojibways. They resisted stoutly for three days, at the close of which tradition informs us they sued for mercy, which was granted, and the few survivors were allowed to depart.

The second battle of any account was fought at Pigeon Lake, where the Iroquois made a strong fort. At this place great numbers of the Ojibways were killed. For a time the result was doubtful, but finally the Ojibways took the fort by storm and but few of the Iroquois were spared.

The third battle was fought near Mud Lake, about twelve miles north of Peterboro.

The Ojibways were friendly with the Hurons and sometimes espoused their cause against the Iroquois. The Six Nations were perhaps the greatest foes the Ojibways had, and were successful in some of their wars with them. The Ojibways gave them a name meaning "Adders."

In former times the Ojibways used a war-flag. It was composed of the feathers of the rare grey eagle knitted together, and was over four feet long. When ready for war the flag was carried in the centre of the war party, while now and then the standard-bearer would wave it while the rest would send forth a piercing shout.

The eagle feather was worn by the warriors as a signal of their bravery. The feather had significant markings denoting

the principal exploits of the warrior. An eagle feather tipped with a piece of red flannel was the privilege enjoyed by one who had killed an enemy. When split from the top toward the middle the feather denoted that the wearer had been wounded by an arrow; or, if there were painted upon it a small red spot, it signified that he had been wounded by a bullet. The war-bonnet having several eagle feathers was worn only by those who had killed many of their foes.

They had several sacred feasts. They prayed and made sacrifices to propitiate the evil spirits which were supposed to dwell in the caves, strangely contorted trees, peculiar-looking stones, rapids of rivers, and, indeed, in any strange objects of nature. They sought to allay storms upon the lake by sacrificing a black dog, fastening a stone to his neck and casting him into the angry waters. Offerings of tobacco, clothing and trinkets were made to the spirits. Stone boulders were raised to the dignity of idols, and as the warriors passed them on their expeditions they made offerings to them.

There were several classes of Mystery Men among them, viz., the Wabeno, Jessakid, Herbalist and Midi.

The **Wabeno**, or **Men of Dawn**, constituted a class of men who practiced mysterious rites by which they conferred upon the hunter the power of securing success in the hunting expeditions; also enabling men and women to exercise an unfailing influence over certain persons, also claiming by means of magic arts to enable people to handle red-hot stones without being burned.

The **Jessakid** was the prophet, the revealer of hidden truth, who was supposed to have received a special gift from the Thunder god, by which he performed feats of jugglery which astonished the natives and held them in dread of these mystery men.

The **Herbalist** was skilled in the knowledge of plants of medical value, and practised the art of healing. Women as well as men were found in this class, as they are also to be found amongst the Blackfoot and Cree Indians.

The **Midi** united in his person the office of priest and medical man. The term "medical priesthood" will appropriately apply to this class of men. There are four degrees or grades of Midi, the entrance to each of which is by means of elaborate rites and feasts.

It must not be forgotten that the Ojibways, together with the great Ottawa Chief, Pontiac, were the sanguinary actors on that terrible occasion of the attack and capture of Fort Michilimacinac, where so many British were massacred.

Regarding the language of the Ojibways, travellers who have sojourned among them and have learned their tongue pronounce it to be a very musical and beautiful language—indeed, it has been termed "the Greek of America.' It possesses a richness of vocabulary not to be found in other Indian tongues.

Picture writing was used as a means of recording histories of their conquests and records of national exploits, songs, feasts, etc., and these record were made on birch-bark and stone boulders. This mode of picture-writing embodied the beginnings of literature amongst a people not blessed with the privileges of civilized life.

The Indians are very careful about preserving records. Most Indian tribes of the west have places in which they deposit the records which they value. The Ojibways had three such depositories near the waters of Lake Superior. Ten of the wisest and most venerable of the nation dwelt near these, and were appointed guardians over them. Fifteen years intervened between each opening. At the end of this time these receptacles were opened, and if any of them had become spoiled they were taken away and replaced by new ones.

In times of danger or war, beads and shells were used for the purpose of conveying a message. The beads and shells were colored and each had a meaning according to its place on the string. Black indicated war or death; White, peace and prosperity; Red, the heart of an enemy; partial White or Red meant the beginning of peace in time of war.

This mode was practised by Pontiac in his appeals to the Indians on Lakes Michigan and Huron. The Indians say these beads cannot tell false stories, as it is impossible for the man who carries it to either alter or add to them.

The Ojibways were friends with the French and very hostile to the British; many of them had intermarried with the French, and this formed a strong link between them. A chief of their tribe (Ma-nong-e-se-da) led his warriors under Montcalm at the taking of Quebec.

The Jesuit missionaries as early as 1641 visited them at Sault Ste. Marie, and they were followed by other missionaries in later years.

The first Protestant missions among them were established by the Moravians. About the year 1820 a strong missionary spirit was aroused among the Christian people of Ontario, and in the ten succeeding years the Ojibways were visited by Anglican and Methodist missionaries. A great impetus was given to the work by the conversion of an Ojibway chief, the English translation of whose name was "John Sunday." This man travelled and preached for some years among his tribe, and such were his oratorical gifts that he was listened to with great interest by many audiences composed of white people.

We believe in the "survival of the fittest" in the best sense of the word, and it is right that the fittest should survive; yet let us as the all-conquering White Race sympathize somewhat with the feelings of our savage predecessors as they found themselves forced backward and ever backward before the on-coming tide of civilization—they, who thought themselves the possessors of these wonderful mountains, lakes, rivers and grassy slopes—who roamed unchallenged through those trackless forests, and whose dreaded war-whoop and savage cries of triumph were echoed back from mountain peak and lofty cavern, and who, in their own untutored way, loved this land which we love, and were indeed "Lords of the North'—yet ours the high privilege and

right to enter in and possess the land, and as true "Builders of Empire" do what we can in helping Canada to fulfil the high destiny intended for her by Heaven.

Land of the forest and the rock—
  Of the dark-blue lake and mighty river—
Of mountains reared aloft to mock
The storm's career, the lightning's shock—
  Our own green land forever.

Echoes from 1837-8

BY J. H. LAND

The modern student of Canadian history will, no doubt, smile over the records of the little fracas incident to our settling down to the enjoyment of the greatest measure of constitutional liberty possessed by any modern community. It speaks volumes for the steadiness and character of our forebears, that the disturbance was so small and evanescent, notwithstanding the efforts of our interested neighbors to foment the dispute.

In Western Canada, Wentworth County, and the Town of Hamilton, seem to have been the centre of military activity. After the affair at Gallows Hill, punitive expeditions, commanded by Hamilton's "Grand Old Man" of those days, Sir Allan Napier MacNab, were despatched from this point against Dr. Duncom, beyond Brantford, and McKenzie's "host of Patriots" at Navy Island.

To the "Men of Gore" fell the weight of the task of dispersing the various bands of malcontents, and keeping the more prudent of the disaffected from getting into mischief. At Hamilton was also maintained a depot for the supply of men and munitions to the active units in the field.

The documents I have secured consist mainly of general orders, proclamations, correspondence, muster rolls, reports of scouts, and of the officers of guards, patrols and pickets posted in and around the town. Reports written by hands long since dust; crabbed the writing, in many of them, as befits hands far more used to axe or plough than quills, yet ready with firm grip on sword or musket to defend their rights and homes.

I have made these reports the subject of this paper, as being of local interest, and dealing with names and incidents peculiar to the County of Wentworth. I hope to take up the orders, etc., later.

The period covered is from Dec. 23rd, 1837, to July, 1838, though the dates are in few cases consecutive, and the gaps many and vexing.

There were five of these guards, as well as two pickets, all furnished by the 3rd Regt. of Gore Militia, commanded by Col. Robert Land, and the officers who commanded them and signed the reports included the names of men well known in their day, and in some cases of those who left their mark in the community and on the records of their town. Many of them were veterans of the war of 1812.

The most complete series of these reports is that of the Main Guard, which was posted at the Court House, and was an officer's guard of 40 men.

Capt. John Secord furnishes the first report, and his comment is: "Nothing extry since guard mount, only 2 men sent in for being Drunk." The list of articles in charge of the Guard will sound strange to modern ears. Here is the list:

"1 Capt., 1 Lieut., 1 sergeant, 40 privates, 18 blankets, 22 firelocks, 22 bayonets, 22 ramrods, 22 flints, 22 side belts, 22 pouch belts, — slings, 22 pouches, 22 scabbards, 22 rounds of ammunition, 1 guard room, 2 windows, 1 table, 4 benches, 1 stove, 1 stove-pipe, 2 sentry boxes, No. of sentrys by day, 10; No. of sentrys by night, 10."

"Flints," "ramrods" and "firelocks" are to-day unknown terms. It is very unlikely that any of our citizen soldiers have ever seen such things.

Capt. J. J. Pettitt has this to say, 27th Dec.: "James Pegg detained as a witness, by John Applegarth, left in my charge by Capt. Hughson, who is still left in charge of Capt. D. Lewis. Was in my charge 1 day, 1 night. I turned out my relief regular-

ly every two hours by day, and every hour by night. I visited my sentinels frequently by day and by night, and found them on their post.''

Although ''left in his charge,'' Capt. D. Lewis fails to mention the fact in his report the next day.

The next item of interest is Capt. Thos. Wilson's report, Jan. 5th, 1838 (written in the clear mercantile hand of Lieut. Chas. Magill), of the arrest of ''Mr. Miller, confined by order of W. Scott-Burn, Asst. Staff Adjt. In charge 1 night.'' He accounts for only 13 blankets, 20 firelocks, ramrods, flints, and rounds of ammunition, 18 bayonets and 5 belts and pouches.

Capt. Henry Beasley, on the 6th, reports: ''Miller, a prisoner, confined 2 days and 2 nights. Joshua Lynn, confined by order of Col. Commanding, 1 night. 15 bayonets given to the escort to Toronto.''

Capt. Joseph Birney reports the same two prisoners the next day.

Ensign Robt. Land, on the 8th, reports the confinement of ''John Barkwell, by the officer of the guard, for disobedience of orders,'' but he makes no mention of the two unfortunates named above.

Capt. W. B. Vanevery, however, brings them on the scene again on the 9th, when he says, ''Ichabod Miller confined by order of the Commanding Officer, 3 days, 4 nights. Joshua Lind, ditto, 2 days, 3 nights. Andrew Miller sent from Chippewa per order of Col. MacNab, in charge of Capt. Adams. Joseph Leflan, by Major Land, 3rd Gore Militia. Each 1 night. Capt. Adams called upon me this morning, the 9th, at 10 o'clock, and demanded the General Order sent with Andrew Miller from Chippewa. I returned the General Order to Capt. Adams and he gave it to Sheriff McDougall and took the Sheriff's receipt for the delivery of prisoner Miller. Kearns Kearney, private, deserted from the main guard at 2 p. m. Grand Rounds at 1 a. m. Guard did not turn out in consequence of having to open the iron gate in the

hall of the goal which I thought most prudent to keep closed during the night."

The Millers went by the soubriquet of "Yanky" and naturally fell under suspicion, which their movements did not tend to allay, so the arrest followed. However, they became good citizens afterwards, and perhaps their taste of British law, added to their respect for the country of their adoption.

Under date of the 10th, Capt. James Hughson reports the confinement of John Brown and Jonathan Abby, on order of Jos. Rousseaux. In his charge half a day.

Capt. Henry Beasley reports these two on the 14th as having been confined 4 days, 4 nights, "by order of the Col. Commanding," and of "Silas B. Winton, by the same, 1 day 1 night."

Next day Capt. Vanevery reports them still in charge, and in addition, "Jacob Emory, sent by Capt. Biggar from Oakville. In charge of Capt. Moore, Charles Harman, sent by the same." Also "Robert Henderson, by order of the Commanding Officer at Hamilton, Crime, sent from B. office;" whatever that might mean.

We find the names of these four appearing at intervals in the reports up to the 20th, when Capt. John Secord reports Brown and Abby only, and says, "Four prisoners in the course of the evening were sent in for rioting, and released again. The sheriff took possession of Parker's corners this morning at nine o'clock."

This Parker was a storekeeper, and his name is mentioned in the Life of McKenzie as one of the patriots who suffered arrest, was sent to Toronto, tried and served three months imprisonment. He must have been caught at the "lines" as there is no mention of his arrest and confinement here.

Things seem to have gone on quietly until April, for we have nothing more exciting reported than an occasional "desertion," "intoxication," etc. But on April 5 Capt. Thos. Davis reports: "At twelve o'clock p. m. a small party of men seen in rear of the

Court House by sentry, and a few men straggled about the gaol at the same time, who would not reply to sentry's challenge. Lieut. McDavid and party turned out from the barracks, supported by the mounted patrol, but failed to fall in with the party."

This was probably the abortive attempt of sympathizers to release the state prisoners confined in the gaol, which is referred to in a "private and confidential" letter from Col. MacNab to Col. Land.

The rest of the reports, up to June 11th, which is the last, have only a few "drunk and disorderly" prisoners reported. Capt. Elijah Secord, the officer in charge on that date, complains bitterly of the filthy state of the guard room—"no bed for officers or men, have to lie on the floor, or stand up all night," etc.

The Armory Guard. There are but eight of its reports preserved, and they are without incident with one exception, the formula being "Nothing extry since mounting guard" and the time of visits by the Grand Rounds and Patrols. The exception is the reported arrest of one corporal and one private for intoxication. The signatures to these reports are those of Lieuts. John McDavid and John Snider, Ensigns Elisha Bingham of Glanford, George Hughson, and E. W. Secord. After April 10th it seems to have been reduced to a sergeant's guard, for the reports are signed by Sergeants Robert Duffy, James Huff, and Henry Watts.

Lieut. Elisha Bingham was an uncle of Dr. Geo. W. Bingham of this city, and, as illustrating the division of families over the burning questions of that day, his brother, Dr. Bingham's father, was a warm sympathizer of McKenzie, though this sympathy did not carry him beyond a little quiet help extended to refugees and suspects.

The Barrack Guard. There are only a few of its reports at hand, and only one incident worthy of mention. I give it verbatum: "At night a person passing was challenged by the sentry and refused to stop. Sentry said he would fire upon him,

to which answer made, "Fire and be damned, you have no flint in your gun.' Nothing extry since guard mounted."

That must have been a reckless roysterer, truly, to take such chances.

The names appended to the reports are those of Sergeants T. A. Carpenter, James Coombs, James Adair, Patrick Reid, Joshua Applegarth, and Moses Coombs.

But one of the reports of the Castle Guard is extant. Lieut. John Snider reports the arrest of Mr. Spohn, who was sent in under escort.

The Bank Guard. This was composed of a Subaltern, Sergt., Corp., and 14 men. The premises guarded were those of the old Gore Bank, in the building now occupied as a residence, cor. of King and Bay streets. There are but three of its reports. The first is signed by Lieut. John Young, who was afterwards one of Hamilton's leading wholesale merchants. Both the others are signed Edward Griffin, Ensign. In one of them he says: "The picket at Daly's noisy, several returned from duty intoxicated."

The Beasley's Hollow Picket was a Sergeant's Guard, consisting of Sergt., Corp. and twelve men, and was posted on the Dundas Road, in the romantic valley which still bears the name, the probable location of the guard room being in a tavern that used to stand on the north of the road at the foot of the hill, this side of the old tollgate. In the only report we have, Sergeant James Walker says, "At half past eleven a man who refused to give his name, apparently in liquor, came to the guard house; he would not say where he lived, sent a file of men with him to the main guard, and gave him to the charge of the main guard. Nothing further of interest."

The Mountain Picket. This was also a Sergeant's Guard, and we have seven of its reports. It was stationed at the top of the John street mountain road, occupying a room in the predecessor of the Mountain View Hotel, as a guard room.

Lieut. John McDavid reports on the 23rd Dec., /37 that "Capt. Hamilton and five men of the First Gore passed and returned A. M. for Toronto expedition." "James Flood of Capt. Secord's Co., applied to go to Binbrook."

Sergt. H. A. Carpenter makes no comment on passers by, or else he had an off day, when everybody kept at home.

Sergt. James Walker, on the 3rd Jan., /38, reports, "10.45 passed team with volunteers from Woodstock to Chippewa. 3.30 despatch rider from Toronto for Ancaster."

Serg'ts George Fox and Peter Smith have nothing to say except that they were visited by the usual patrols.

Sergt. Simon Harrison, on Jan. 10th, makes up for their reticence by the following wealth of detail: "Placed the guard at 7 o'clock. ½ past 7, a man with a waggon and oxen passed, Nelson Wills by name, to his residence on Mr. John Davis's farm, from Hamilton, selling hay. 15 minutes to 8, Mr. Scott-Burn passed on horseback, gave the countersign. 10 minutes to 8, a man and woman in a gigg, Man's name Mr. Baley, from Hamilton to Mr. Geddes's. 20 minutes after 8, a Mr. G. H. Richards on horse from Chippawa to Brantford, and a Mr. Greeney also on horse and armed, with despatches to Brantford, with a pass from James Racey, which I read, also a receipt of the despatch where Mr. MacNab's name appeared. They did answer all questions freely, but no countersign. 20 minutes to 9, John Cuffy, with team to Ancaster, known by guard. 15 minutes to 9, Nathaniel Condon, with five teams from Brantford. 9 o'clock, Two men and one woman, could, or would not give a satisfactory account of themselves, sent them under a guard of two men to the Capt. of the main guard, as they wished to go to Hamilton. 5 minutes past 10, A man and woman in a gigg, Harris Fraser by name, from Brantford to Mr. Jarvis's in Hamilton. 15 minutes past 10, Moses Whitehead, from Chippewa to his residence at Joseph Crichenagh's, on horseback. 20 minutes past 10, Mr. Burkholder from the Lines, Gave the password. 15 minutes to 11, Zacharia Jacobs and William Hannon, to their residence in Glanford, from

Hamilton. These gave the word "Lewiston" as the countersign. Were taken prisoners, but being well known by the guard I let them pass. They were on horseback. 10 minutes past 11, A team from Brantford, two men, William Diving a passenger, and Robert Harris a coloured man. Their business was moving a family from Hamilton, Now returning. 20 minutes past 11, A team from Hamilton, James Upfold, known by guard. Half past 1, visited by Grand Rounds, Capt. Beasley and Sergt. O'Haron. This man gave the countersign so loud that all my sentry's heard it. 6 o'clock, Lieut. Kearns, mounted and armed with sword and pistols, from Home to Hamilton. Said he belonged to the 3rd Gore Cavalry. Half past 6, I called in my guard."

Sergt. G. Simpson closes the list, Date Jan. 21st. He says: "John Moon, 7 A. M. hailed, says he is from Chippewa to Caledonia, but a resident of Oakville, belonging to N. B. Regt. Quarter past nine, hailed two teams which had been with 42nd Regt. to Brantford. Teamsters names Steven McDonald and Andrew Smith."

Now, a few words about the officers whose reports have been quoted: Capt. Joseph Birney, of Nelson Township, was out in 1812 participating in most, if not all, of the battles in the Niagara Peninsula. He became a member of Barton Lodge of Freemasons soon after its formation, and at the time of his death was its oldest member. He, too, it was, who carried the news of the declaration of rebellion to Col. Land. Information that enabled the "Men of Gore" to be promptly on hand when needed. The information was secured in this way: His brother-in-law, Dr. Crombie, of Streetsville, was a member of the Council, headed by McKenzie, which decided to appeal to arms, in 1837. The minority, headed by Dr. Crombie, fought hard for the continuance of the constitutional methods, but in vain. When, at 4 a. m., the resolution for rebellion was finally passed, the Doctor rode at once home to Streetsville, calling on the way at Capt. Birney's. Being pledged to secrecy, he managed to give, more by manner than word, a hint of the threatened danger. No sooner did the Captain realize this than he started post haste for Hamilton, to report. On his way he warned Capt. "Oakey" Chisholm that

McKenzie had taken up arms, and that veteran, waiting for no orders got as many of his men together as he could reach on short notice, and took boat for Toronto. On their arrival there, so well had the rebel's secret been kept, they found the Fort and Arsenal guarded by but one man, but that man was afterwards the Lord Chief Justice of Upper Canada. His name was Robinson. Needless to say, the attempt made by the rebels to secure the fort that day was foiled.

Capt. James Hughson is the man after whom two of our streets are named. He also was "out" in 1812.

Lieut. Chas. Magill was at this time a clerk in Isaac Buchanan's store. Afterwards the town's leading retailer. Was elected its Mayor and represented it in parliament.

The W. Scott-Burn referred to in Capt. Wilson's report, was paymaster for the district. Defaulted and absconded. The Col. Commanding, being his bondsman, had to make good the amount taken.

Capt. Elijah Secord. An 1812 veteran.

Capt. Daniel Lewis, of Saltfleet, participated in the campaigns of 1812.

Capt. Peter H. Hamilton, whose family name was bestowed upon this Ambitious City.

Capt. W. B. Vanevery, whose name appears as "clerk of the sessions of the peace."

Capt. John Secord. Capt. Henry Beasley, the father of our former City Clerk. Capt. J. J. Pettit, of Saltfleet. All three of these were veterans of the war.

Capt. John Applegarth, builder of the old flour mills on the Waterdown road, and a pioneer in the flour and feed business in the city. On the night of Col. Harvey's surprise party at Stoney Creek, he had charge of a picket posted on top of the mountain to guard against surprise by a body of Americans, supposed to be marching from Port Dover.

Capt. Thomas Choate, of Glanford, a descendant of the fam-

ily that has given some famous men to the service of the U. S.

Lieut John Gage, of Bartonville. Lieut. Thos. Davis. Lieut. John McDavid. Lieut. John Snider, of Ancaster.

Ensign M. B. Secord had at first a commission in the 3rd Gore Cavalry, and was with his troop in the march against Dr. Duncom, in Scotland, when the Captain's horse was shot. On his return he exchanged into the infantry.

Robert Land, Jr., was a son of the Col. Commanding, and the father of R. E. A. Land, of Toronto, Past President of the U. E. L. Association.

George Hughson, who participated in the battle of Stoney Creek, and was one of the party under Plenderleath, who charged on and captured the American guns. He admitted that there were not many of the battles in that war that he had not a hand in. He it was who at Queenston helped to keep the Americans penned up on the river bank nearly all night.

With so large a proportion of the officers familiar with military duties under conditions of actual warfare, it is not surprising to find the service efficiently performed. The reports of the Grand Rounds, officers of the day, and horse patrols, being, with few exceptions, but a repetition of the formula "Visited the guards" (such hours), "found the sentries alert and guards vigilant." One exception being the reported arrest of Lieut. Tailor, of the Main Guard, for being absent from his guard, and found in an intoxicated condition.

These fragmenary echoes from those troublous times, while evidencing the military ardour that is paralleled today by the parades of the "fighting 13th," the "kilties" and the "Battery," present the saddening thought that the names of those who stood fast by their duty and country, when need was, are but very sparsely duplicated in the muster rolls of these corps today. Indeed, many of their families have died out and scattered until not one of the names remain in the County of Wentworth. But Canada today stands as a noble monument to the loyalty of those sturdy yeomen, and their names are engraved as with chisels of steel on everlasting granite in the hearts of their countrymen.

Indian Ossuary Near Sheffield

Jan. 7, 1914.

Mr. J. H. Smith,
President Wentworth Historical Society.

Dear Mr. Smith:—

I am reminded that I was to get you the particulars of the Indian haunts near my father's farm south of Sheffield for your collection of information on the Indians of Wentworth County.

"Some twelve years ago, by accident, we came upon signs of Indian bones while plowing in a small four acre field to the east of Fairchild's Creek, directly opposite where my father's house now stands. Upon investigation, we found, by digging deeper, that there was apparently a burial place, as we uncovered some fifty Indian skulls as well as the large bones of the thigh and arm. These were all deposited in the one pit, evidently showing that they had been deposited there at one time. There were no evidences of any material used for covering the bones. The skulls were those of adult persons, possibly warriors who had fallen in some battle the Indians had with their enemies. Fairchild's creek used to be a prominent Indian trail, and the Indians used to come up north for the purpose of gathering fruit, which was very abundant some distance of possibly three-quarters of a mile farther up the creek. At this point on the creek was established the homestead of one of Wentworth's pioneers, Mr. Joseph Cornell, father of my late grandmother. She used to tell many stories of the Indians passing and re-passing their home in her childhood days. She said they always camped on this height of land to the east of the creek and would sometimes remain in camp for several days."

Wishing you the very best for 1914, and with kind regards, I remain,

Yours very truly,
OSCAR MAIN.

Notes on the Indian Burial Mound

FOOT OF EMERALD STREET, HAMILTON

By J. H. Land

When Robert Land cleared up his farm, which comprised lot 12, 1st concession and B. F.—bounded by what are now Wentworth, Emerald and Barton streets and the Bay, he found an Indian burial mound at the N. W. corner of the farm, within a hundred yards of the bay shore on the line of Emerald street. In shape it was a round cone, some 20 feet high and about 50 in diameter at the base. That many years had elapsed since its construction was indicated by the fact of a number of oak trees fully eight inches through found growing on and around it. A well defined trail led over it to the Bay. As the land became cleared and cultivated, the trees were cut away, and gradually the mound was worked down till it was possible to run the plow over it. No remains having been found, doubts were expressed as to its being a grave, though there were abundant evidences of the field having been a battle ground—many small heaps of sling stones, as well as arrow and spearheads of flint, being turned up when the plow was first put through the ground. These would indicate the fall of a warrior, his sling stones, of course, being left where he fell. And it was argued that the grave was probably that of a chief, buried on the scene of his victory or defeat. This grave question happened to be settled by the writer, who, when plowing the field for, what turned out to be, the last time, turned up the skeleton of a man on the top of the mound. The bones were easily crumbled, showing that many years had passed since the burial. There was no time to investigate further then, and the matter was neglected. No weapons or ornaments were turned up, nor has any attempt been made to search the mound since. It is now the property of the Otis-Fensom Elevator Co.

Tales of the Lines

By J. H. Land

The battle of Stony Creek had been fought, and won. The invading army had been driven to, and were penned up in, Fort George. The whole country between the "Heights" and the "Lines" were occupied by the British troops, militia, and Indians, and forays and skirmishes were of daily occurrence.

Among the more active of the Yankee militia officers was Dr. Cyrenius Chapin, the Sheriff of Niagara County, N. Y., who had organized a band of marauders for the avowed purpose of pillaging the already nearly ruined residents of Niagara Peninsula, friend and foe alike, as a punishment, or "in reprisal for, the sacking and destruction of a village in Maryland by the boats of the British fleet, and for the purpose of clearing the frontier of persons inimical to the United States." In pursuance of this laudable design, the Doctor had shown a good deal of energy, and made himself cordially detested by the loyal inhabitants. He instigated the attack on Lieut. Fitzgibbons at the Beaver Dams on June 24th, 1813, and had the mortification of finding himself, and the whole of his forces, captive to that doughty officer, instead of being his captor. The Doctor and his fellow captives, to the number of 600, were taken to the "Heights" as prisoners of war, whence they were sent in detachments to Kingston.

I propose to follow only the Doctor and his freebooters, who, when their turn came, were embarked in 5 batteaux from Beasley's Landing, just below Dundurn. The Guard, composed of 10 militiamen, under the command of Major Daniel Showers, of Ancaster, were well armed, and had a batteau to themselves, but each boat had four oars, prisoners as well as guards, a mistake that led to disaster later.

This Guard seems to have been, with one exception, a carefully selected body of men, for besides the redoubtable Commander, the names of Daniel McAfee, Robt. Lucas, and Robert Hughson, have come down to us, all noted for their fearlessness, loyalty, and love of fighting. Another name has also come down, but with another savor altogether—Joe Treet, "the Traitor," they ever after called him.

At daybreak, one day about the middle of July, the flotilla started on a voyage that was to be a good deal longer for some and shorter for others, than they dreamed of. There is no record of, and tradition is silent, as to who was responsible for the arrangements made for the convoy. When the Officer of the Day, Lieut. Robert Land, came on duty, knowing that there had been a batch of prisoners sent off, he made enquiries as to the number, guards, who they were, boats, oars, orders, etc., and on being informed as above, and that the orders were that the guard boat should lead the flotilla, stared in amazement, and said, "My God! man, our men are captured! Didn't they know any better than to give the prisoners as many oars as the guards? And then to put them in the front, too, where all the Yankees have to do is to pull up to them and take them like rats in a trap. You may bid our men good-bye, for you'll not see them again."

And he was right. The flotilla pulled through the "outlet" (a shallow natural channel between the Bay and the Lake, about half-way between the present canal and the Brant House) into the lake, and made its way slowly towards Toronto, or York, as it then was. There was a good deal of talking among the Yankees, in which Dr. Chapin took a leading part, and when a halt for breakfast was made, Treet, one of the guard, stood up in the boat, and, waving his hat, called out, "Grog time, boys, it's grog time." As if this was the signal agreed upon, the prisoners closed in at once on the unsuspecting guard, and as they lay alongside, threw themselves upon them, demanding their surrender. Lieut. Showers, McAfee, and Lucas, were fortunate enough to be able to make a brief resistance, and knocked some of their assailants overboard. The former knocking Treet down,

and accusing him of having betrayed them. In a few minutes it was over, and as had been predicted, the victors were vanquished, and the prisoners were taking their captors to Fort Niagara. There they were received, as may well be imagined, with open arms. The Canadian prisoners were at once started off on their march to the military prison at Greenbush, N. Y., near Albany, where they found a goodly number of their compatriots. They were treated fairly well, but were continually urged to take the oath of allegiance and stay in the States; but we may well imagine the scornful refusal that proposition received.

They were kept well posted in "war news" by the prison guards, and it seems that at that early day our American cousins exhibited a good deal of the enterprise and fertility of imagination, so fully developed in their own rebellion fifty years later, in furnishing a first-class article of war news, in unlimited quantity. Canada was conquered.—Vincent a prisoner in Buffalo—Scott's headquarters were in York—Kingston was occupied—Montreal burned—and Quebec had fallen—with full details of the victors' operations. But it was all wasted. Our boys smiled a sweet incredulous smile, and asked if that was the latest they had. Didn't they know that we had bombarded Buffalo, New York and Boston, nor heard of the capture of Washington and Oswego, as well as many other little items of comforting, though imaginary news.

Time passed on, and though Treet was with them in the prison, they saw, or thought they saw, that he was treated better than they were, had more liberty allowed him, was a frequent visitor to the guard house, as a guest of the officers, and generally put on an air of, "It's only a matter of choice"; all tending to confirm the existing suspicion of his treachery. At length they decided to punish him. They by some means secured a rope, made a noose in one end, and a loop in the other, and as the rooms were opened, and the prisoners came out with their buckets, McAfee and others grabbed the unfortunate Treet, slipped the noose over his head, carried him out on the gallery surrounding the upper tier of the prison, and putting the loop over the top of one of the iron bars, hoisted the traitor, with a "Yo, heave! here he

goes!" over the spikes, to fall twelve or fourteen feet to the ground, or, if the rope caught and held all right, to be hanged, as effectually as on the most approved style of gallows.

How it happened, none of them could ever explain; the rope held all right, and when Treet got to the end of it, the jerk broke the quarter inch spike short off, and Treet and the rope, and the spike, all tumbled to the ground in a heap. Another contingent of the "Avengers" was on hand below, and the luckless traitor was instantly seized, carried at full run to the "latrine" and dumped unceremoniously into it. The guards heard the commotion, and, guided by some of Treet's friends, at length found and dragged him out. On carrying the body out of the prison, and summoning the Surgeon, it was found that he was alive, and comparatively unhurt; so he was taken to the hospital, given a much needed bath, and in a few days was apparently as well as ever. He was not put back in the prison, however, for his victims, as they believed themselves to be, declared they would finish him next time, sure.

It may well be supposed that the restraints of prison life grew more and more irksome to such daring spirits as McAfee and Lucas, and more than one attempt to escape was made. As much, I fear, to try the mettle of the guards as with the hope of getting away, more than one brush between them and the "d-n Yankees" occurred to break the monotony of their lives. Their tilts with their captors kept alive and intensified the feelings of hatred and contempt engendered by the war, and when the early frosts of winter had come, it finally culminated in a mutiny, and a successful one, at that. A part of the prisoners' work was the unloading and carrying in of the wood, brought on wagons daily, for the prison use, and this work was always performed under the watchful eyes of the guard, just inside the gates, which were generally left open till it was finished. On this particular occasion, the chaffing and taunts exchanged between the Canuck prisoners and the teamsters and guards, seems to have had a particularly irritating effect, and a guard, losing his temper, ordered McAfee to "shut his mouth, and move faster," emphasizing his remark with the point of his bayonet, applied to the portion of the

offender's anatomy that was at the time most easily assailable. This was the torch to the tow. With a yell of rage McAfee sprang at the guard like a tiger, felled him to the ground with a blow from the stick of wood he had in his hand at the time, and then shouting to his comrades to follow him, he rushed to the guard house, knocking over a couple of sentries on his way, who were too much astonished at the outburst to use their muskets. These were secured by the Canadians, and a brief struggle at the guard house resulted in the capture and disarmament of the whole guard. Flushed by this success, their next move was to rush to the Arsenal, which was quickly captured, and in less time than it takes to tell it, every prisoner was armed, and the Greenbush prison was in the hands of Canadian Yeomen. A council of war was held, and it was proposed to fight their way across New York State, back to Canada. While the discussion that this proposition provoked was going on, their sentries reported that the troops guarding the prison were in motion, coming to drive them into durance vile. But our brave boys were ready, and hastily loading a cannon, and manning the stockade, they hailed the approaching Yankees with a stern order to "Halt!' or a volley of musket and grape-shot would make them. The Yankees saw that they were in a fix, so, hoisting a white flag, the commanding officer went forward, ordered them to lay down their arms at once, and return to the prison. A command that was greeted with yells of derisive laughter, and a counter command to him to disband his troops at once, or they would be swept from the face of the earth. He then repeated the command, adding that he would give them two hours in which to comply with it, and at the same time threatened, in case of their failure to do so, to hang every man of them. "When you get us," laughed the bold Canadians, "you may!" Among those who were naturally looked to as leaders, a serious discussion followed. A march to the frontier meant marching right on to the Yankee armies, warned by couriers of their advance, long before they got half way to the "lines"; and a running fight with their late guards and the militia that would be hastily called out to follow them. Of course some delay would be caused by the destruction of the Arsenal and all the arms and ammunition that our lads could not take with

them, but this would not be sufficient check to prevent their pursuit. To break up into small bands and scatter into the woods would result in the recapture of nearly, if not quite, all. So it was decided to stay where they were and await developments. At the time specified the Yankee troops again appeared, and the officer again repeated his demand for an unconditional surrender, and was laughed at for his pains. In vain he threatened, they only smiled the louder, telling him that they were very comfortable and expected to start home as soon as they got things fixed to suit them. Wild with rage and chagrin, he had no choice but to withdraw and send for reinforcements. On their arrival, accompanied by the Governor, another demand was made on the victorious prisoners to submit. A parley ensued in which they dictated their own terms, which were: no punishment of anyone concerned in the mutiny, no more work, no guards inside the prison, no interference by the guards, and better fare. These were all agreed to, and the prisoners marched triumphantly back to their old quarters, to the great relief of their captors and guardians.

No sooner had they got comfortably settled down to the old routine than McAfee began to lay plans for escape, and, with this in view, had taken his place with a few other choice spirits in one of the rooms on the lower, or ground, tier of the prison. Raising one of the floor planks, they started a tunnel for liberty, carrying out the earth raised each night in their buckets and blankets in the morning. Working steadily on, they in time got to the stockade, and only waited a favorable opportunity to make their break for home. At last it came, and on a dark, stormy night, calling as many of their friends as they could get at without waking the whole prison, some twenty-five of the boldest broke through the crust of frozen ground outside the stockade and were free. After a brief consultation they bid each other good-bye and separated, each taking a different direction. McAfee struck straight west, and after many hairbreadth escapes and hardships reached the lake at the mouth of the Genessee, where he captured a boat, and, coasting along the shore, came at length in sight of Fort Niagara. Paddling slowly along, waiting

for evening, so as to slip past in the dark, he kept watching the flag on the fort. It seemed to him that it was not the stars and stripes, but yet it must be. A gust of wind caught it, lashing its folds out fair to view, and he sprang up in his boat with a shout like a madman, waved his cap, danced, at the risk of getting a cold bath, and then bent to his paddle with all his might—for the red cross of St. George floated from that staff. The fortune of war had changed, and Fort Niagara was in the hands of the British. The "Meteor Flag" he loved so well was once more floating over him. Putting all his strength in his paddle, he was soon among his old comrades, telling his story, and making amends, in his onslaught on the provisions, for his hardships and scanty fare, now happily past.

Lucas started south, and, disarming suspicion by seeking work at his trade, blacksmithing, worked his way from place to place along southern New York, Ohio, and Michigan, to Detroit, where he crossed over into Canada, and so home, nearly a year after peace had been declared.

Some of the others succeeded in getting home, but most of them were recaptured, and remained till the close of the war; among whom were Major Showers and Hughson. The Major seems to have been so deeply embittered by his capture and imprisonment that he could not abide the mention of anything Yankee. And in this connection an adventure of a partner of the late Edward Jackson may be related here, illustrating the depth of the Major's feelings:

Messrs. Jackson & Nickerson were engaged in the tinsmith business in Ancaster, and it was their custom to dispose of their surplus stock by peddling it through the country, adding some patent medicines, jewelry, and a few "notions" by way of variety. The panacea for all fleshly ills, most in vogue just then, was Chapin's Pills, made by the bold doctor who had escaped from, and captured, Major Showers and his men in 1813. In the course of his rounds, Mr. Nickerson reached the Major's farm, was received in the hearty, hospitable way usual in those days, exhibited his wares, retailed his budget of news, and listened with

interest to the Major's growls as to his state of health, the remedies he had tried, or been recommended to try, etc. This gave Nickerson an opening for the introduction of his popular remedy, and he immediately began reciting the virtues of the new pill, recounting the cures effected, etc., as per advertisement. The Major grew interested at once. This was just what he wanted, and an animated discussion followed as to the merits and demerits of various brands of pills and other nostrums. In the course of this, Mr. Nickerson unluckily declared that "Dr. Chapin's pills were undoubtedly"— "**Whose pills?**" roared the Major. "Why, Dr. Cyrenius Chapin's, of Buffalo," stammered the astonished peddler. Such a storm as that reply brought about his devoted head, Mr. Nickerson never experienced before, nor ever after. It was the solitary cyclone of his life. The Major rushed for his musket, and declared he would slaughter the terrified peddler then and there for daring to bring into his house, on his farm, anything made by that blankety, blank, blank, son of a miserable horseleach of a blank Yankee quack. Winding up by taking the offending peddler by the collar and marching him off the place, to an accompaniment of artistic profanity.

Tales of the War--Queenston Heights

By J. H. Land

What is more thrilling and absorbing than to sit before a bright wood fire and listen to the recital of deeds of daring, hair-breadth escapes, and hardships undergone by the men who have been the actors therein, as I have done when a boy? Some of these I have tried to recall, as well as a fading memory of them will permit. George Hughson, the hero of this occasion, was a frequent visitor, and could easily be led into recounting deeds and incidents in which he had participated. His description of the battle tallied pretty closely with that of Joe Birney, which follows it.

The failure of General Hull to obtain a foothold in the west of Ontario and his subsequent inglorious surrender at Detroit, left General Sir Isaac Brock free to act the host to the "army of the centre," which, to the number of 4,500 men under Genl. Van Rensselear, was assembled at Lewiston. Though he had only 1500 men, mostly militia men and Indians, Genl. Brock had no thought but to give his visitors a fitting reception, planting his batteries on points of the river bank at and below the village of Queenston, to sweep the river and discourage navigation thereon.

George Hughson, one of the aforesaid militia men, described the events of the day and night of the 11th Oct., 1812, something like this: "We could see the swarms of men across the river plainly, and the work of collecting batteaux going on at a great rate. All day long our batteries kept up a desultory fire on them,

and though the range was too great to do much damage, still it kept them from giving too much attention to the business on hand, and several times, when a lot of boats were about ready to start over crowded with Yankees, a shot dropping unpleasantly near would empty those boats a d-n sight quicker than they had been loaded. At last a dozen or so of the boats were put off and started for our side, amid an ominous silence on the part of our batteries and great cheering from the Yankee shore. Beyond a dropping fire from some Indians at the foot of the heights no resistance was offered till they were well towards the centre of the river, and fully in range of our guns; then the fun commenced. Almost the first shot struck a boat crammed with soldiers, knocking it to pieces and dumping all into the river, struggling for life; at the same time we opened fire on them from the batteries at the village and the troops below peppered them with musket balls. Such a scattering followed! Some kept pull-on towards us, but most of them started back for home, followed by shot and bullet with such effect that not half of either boats or men reached the shore. Of the boats that kept their course, only one reached our side of the river, where the men were at once made prisoners. They made no further attempt that day.

The night that followed was very dark, and in spite of our vigilance a lot of the enemy got across, landing on the flats at the foot of the heights and immediately below the village. As soon as we found they were there we formed a cordon as well as we could in the darkness to prevent them from getting up on the level ground, and kept ourselves awake by firing down on them, guided in our aim by groans and curses from those we hit and those who were afraid of getting hit. They never returned our fire at all, perhaps for fear the flash of their muskets would help us to better aim. Having emptied my cartridge box I started out to get a fresh supply and by some means lost my way, for on running up against a lot of men, ours, as I supposed, and asking for some cartridges, I was asked, "Cartridges! What have you done with yours?" "Fired them all off at the d-n Yankees," I replied. "Oh! ho! my fine fellow; fired them at the Yankees, did you? Well, the d-n Yankees have got you now, and we'll

tend to your case in the morning.'' They closed around me, took my musket away and ordered me to keep quiet or they would stick a bayonet in me, and as it was the only thing I could do, I obeyed. Pretty soon they began to question me as to our forces and what we were going to do with them in the morning. To comfort them for the wretched night they were enjoying, I told them, ''We are going to drive you into the river unless you surrender.'' At this time I noticed that there seemed to be a very earnest discussion going on near me which attracting the attention of my guards, gave me a chance of slipping back out of the group. Just as I got clear of it I heard an officer, I supposed by his manner, giving instructions to some one who was protesting he knew every foot of the ground, to make his way up into our lines, but what for, I did not catch. As he separated himself from the crowd and started off at a run, I drew my bayonet and sprang after him. ''You won't deliver any message, my fine fellow,'' thought I, but he was smarter afoot than I was and knew the ground better, so, in spite of my efforts to catch him, he got away. I found my comrades and told where I had been and what I had seen, and after getting a musket and a fresh supply of ammunition, took my place again on the brow of the hill above the enemy, but keeping my bullets till it grew lighter. Glancing up at the sky to see whether there was any sign of the clouds breaking away, I noticed off in the south-east the sky seemed clear and an occasional star peeped out, bringing the break of the mountain where it struck the river into relief. As I watched this clearing patch of sky, I noticed something moving up the edge of the cliff at a point where it was clear of brush. As this object disappeared up the height another followed it, and another, and another, till I had counted forty or fifty. I could not make out what they were till I saw one apparently stumble and throw out its arms to recover itself. ''They're men,'' I said to myself, ''and they're Yankees, for our men would not take that path up the heights, and if they once get up there we are whipped sure, for we can't drive them out of that''; and I started off to find Brock or some one who would know what to do. After a good deal of stumbling around in the dark, making enquiries of all I met, I was at last directed to the General, and told him that

the Yankees were taking position on the heights. "They are?" he exclaimed. "How do you know, young man." "I saw them, Sir," I answered, "climbing up the edge of the mountain next the river." "Nonsense! young man, there is no path there that a goat could climb, let alone an army of men," said the General. "You need not be afraid of all the Yankees that can get up there tonight." But when daylight came there were no Yankees on the river bank, and we soon had reason to know that there were enough on top of the heights to give us a hot day's work to dislodge them.

Emboldened by their success during the night, the boats began to ply across with more men, but a few cannon balls from the batteries smashing some of the first of the fleet frightened the rest, and as we afterwards learned, no orders or threats of the officers availed to give them courage to cross, though they saw their comrades driven like sheep over the precipice into the river, till the water was fairly black with them. Some actually escaped by swimming across the river."

Mr. Joseph Birnie, another militia man tells of Brock's death, of which he was an eye-witness, the following: "As soon as it was seen that the Yankees were in force on the Heights, Col. MacDonnell ordered an attack, which he gallantly led in person. The advance was made directly up the face of the mountain, and was met by a hot fire from the Yankees from the summit and from various points of vantage on the mountain side. Early in the advance the Col. was shot, his presence being rendered conspicuous by his full dress uniform, and the Yankees having orders to pick off the officers made him a target with fatal effect. We were driven back and retreated toward Fort George to meet reinforcements. We had gone but a short distance when we met Genl. Brock, riding full speed, who immediately ordered us to advance to the attack again. Arriving at the foot of the mountain we were halted to wait for some troops from the fort, and the General, who was sitting on his horse wrapped in his cloak, called me to him to question me as to the position and strength of the enemy. I told him that as near as I could make out they were not far from the river, and had taken positions in broken

formation along the brow and on the upper slopes of the hill. Judging from their firing there must be nearly 3000 of them. He then called to another officer and I saluted and turned away to rejoin my company. All this time there had been a spattering fire from the Yankees, doing little or no damage to our ranks. I had only taken a few steps when I heard the thud of a bullet striking somebody, followed by a deep groan. Glancing behind me I say the General falling from his horse and sprang back in time to catch him as he fell. With the help of others he was laid on the grass and the surgeon called, but he was past human aid and never spoke or moved. A stray ball had pierced his heart. The romance about the man who shot him having deliberately taken aim at him, knowing who he was, is all moonshine, as is also the generally accepted statement that he fell leading the first charge up the heights, and while cheering on his men. That, as I have said, was Col. MacDonell, one of his Aides."

"In a few minutes Gen. Sheaffe arrived with a reinforcement from the fort, some three or four hundred men, and marching us off to the west, under cover of the woods, making a circle around and up the side of the mountain, brought us to the top a mile or so from the Yankees. Forming line of battle, we swept down on the enemy, who, completely demoralized by the warwhoops of the Indians, our fierce attack, and being virtually abandoned by their comrades across the river, made little resistance, but took to flight, crowding each other by hundreds over the steep bank into the river and on the rocks. Numbers were caught in the trees, and in some cases bodies hung there for days before they could be reached and removed. That evening, while walking along the top of the bank with some brother officers, we heard groans below us, and on looking over found a Yankee officer, wounded, and hanging on to some brush which he had seized. With considerable trouble we got him up, when he piteously begged us not to kill him. We told him we did not kill prisoners. Then he made us promise to protect him from the Indians, who would scalp him on sight. After quieting his fears and putting him into the surgeon's hands, we left him, exceeding thankful."

The City of Hamilton

By J. H. Smith, P. S. Inspector, Wentworth.

To the south of Burlington Bay (formerly called Lake Geneva) and at a distance of about two miles there rises somewhat abruptly an escarpment familiarly known as "The Mountain," but which has recently been given the name of Helderleigh Hills. From the shores of the bay to the base of these hills, a beautiful alluvial plain gradually rises to a height of about 180 feet. This plain is broken on the west by a broad, deep ravine known as Beasley's Hollow. The city of Hamilton is situated just to the east of this ravine and between the mountain and the bay. The mountain itself rises to a height of about 200 feet above this plain. From the top of this mountain a rich plateau of excellent farming land stretches southward. A visitor standing on any of the prominent points along the brow of the mountain can get a delightful view of the city, the bay, the lake and the surrounding country. Westward the eye takes in the beauties of the Dundas Valley. Northward, beyond the bay, a noble expanse of champagne country spreads away as far as the eye can reach, while to the east there is to be seen one of the finest fruit districts of the world.

In 1791, Mr. Augustus Jones, P. L. S., completed the survey of the Township of Barton, and prepared a map showing the lots, the names of the owners, and the concessions. The map has the date of the 25th of October, 1791. From the records of the Crown Lands Department at Toronto, we glean the following facts concerning the land now within the present city limits. North of the base line, which is now called Burlington Street, is the "Broken Front"; from this base line southward to Barton Street is the first Concession; from Barton Street to Main Street the

second Concession; from Main Street to Aberdeen Avenue, the third Concession. On the east, Sherman Avenue is the side road between lots 8 and 9; Wentworth Street, between lots 10 and 11; Wellington Street, between lots 12 and 13; James Street, between lots 14 and 15; Queen Street, between lots 16 and 17; Dundurn Street, between lots 18 and 19; Paradise Road, between lots 20 and 21. The lots are numbered from east to west, the Concessions from north to south.

In the following table the names of the original patentees are given, together with the dates of the patents and the number of acres. The quantity of land in the Broken Front is estimated and may be more or less. That portion of the fourth Concession lying between the brow of the Mountain and Aberdeen Avenue, and east of Dundurn Street now form part of the city.

Lot	B. F.	Con. 1.	Con. 2.	Con. 3.
9	Selah Stiles	Selah Stiles	.....	George Stewart
10	Mathew Cain	Mathew Cain	John Aikman	John Aikman
11	Robt. Land	Robt. Land	Robt. Land	Robt. Land
12	Robt. Land	Joseph Edwards	Joseph Edwards	Richard Springer
13	Robt. Land	Peter Ferguson	Peter Ferguson	Richard Springer
14	John Askin	John Askin	John Askin	David Springer
15	John Askin	John Askin	John Askin	Lieu. Caleb Reynolds
16	C. Reynolds	C. Reynolds	C. Reynolds	C. Reynolds
17	C. Reynolds	C. Reynolds	C. Reynolds	C. Reynolds
18	R. Beasley	R. Beasley	.....	Ann Morden
19	R. Beasley	R. Beasley	Richard Beasley	.....
20	.....	R. Beasley	John Lottridge	John Lottridge

In 1802, lot 19 in the Third Concession and lots 9 and 18 in the Second Concession were still the property of the Crown.

Mr. George Hamilton, after whom the city was named, purchased from David Springer lot 14 in the Third Concession of Barton, and from John Askin, Sr., that portion of lot 14 in the Second Concession lying between Main and King Streets. King Street followed the Indian Trail and was the principal road leading from Niagara to Dundas and Ancaster. Main Street was the original road allowance between the Second and Third Concessions. That portion of lot 14 in the Second Concession lying between Main and King Streets was the portion first surveyed. It

was divided into four blocks, and these were again divided into eight lots each, four facing King Street and four facing Main Street, with an alley between them, running east and west. They were one chain in width and a little over two chains in depth. This was the germ of the City of Hamilton.

As the Northerly and Southerly boundaries of these lots were surveyed to run parallel with Main Street, a gore was left on the south side of King Street. This gore was afterwards given as a Public Park, with the understanding that a similar portion on the north side of King Street should be given for the same purpose. This, however, was never done and the gore remains as originally given.

Mr. Mathew Lawry purchased from Lieutenant Caleb Reynolds lot 15 in the third concession, and Mr. William Wedge, lot 15 in the second concession. Mr. Mathew Lawry, shortly after the first survey was made, disposed of his farm to Mr. Peter Hunter Hamilton. Mr. Wedge sold seven acres on the southeast corner of lot 15 in the second concession to Mr. Andrew Miller, and the balance to Mr. David Kirkindall. This is the property that lies immediately west of James and north of King Street.

An act was passed on the 22nd of March, 1816, forming the Gore District out of portions of the Home and Niagara Districts, and conferring upon it all the rights and privileges pertaining to the other districts of the Province. The town of Hamilton was selected as the district town, and provision was made for the erection of a gaol and Court House, in which all courts of whatever description were to be held. Prince's Square was given by George Hamilton as a site for the Court House. The first district court was held in 1822.

On the 19th of March, 1823, an act was passed providing for the construction of a navigable canal to connect Burlington Bay with Lake Ontario. This canal gave a decided impulse to the progress of Hamilton. Prior to its construction Ancaster and Dundas had taken the lead, and controlled the trade of the western part of the Province. It was completed in 1832 at a total cost of $94,000.

Lewis Burwell, Deputy Surveyor, prepared a map of the town of Hamilton in 1830, which shows that less than one hundred acres of land had been surveyed into town lots. These lots were situated on the south side of King Street, with the exception of four blocks, of eight lots each, on the north side, between James and Mary Streets. To the west of James on the north side of King, three lots had been surveyed, one the property of B. Carpenter, one of John Law, and one of Thomas Taylor. The present Jackson Street was the southern boundary from Bay to James, and Augusta from James eastward to the boundary between lots 13 and 14, Mary Street, which also formed the eastern boundary. So the east, from Mary to Wellington, along King Street, a tier of park lots varying from half an acre to six acres was surveyed. On the corner east of Wellington Street stood the Methodist chapel and a small school house.

Owing to the great increase in the population it became necessary to make provision by law for the better regulation of all matters pertaining to the government of the Town of Hamilton. For this purpose an act was passed on the 13th day of February, 1833, "To define the limits of the Town of Hamilton in the District of Gore, and establish a Police and Public Market therein." The official title of the governing body was "The President and Board of Police of Hamilton," and they were declared to be "A body Corporate and Politic in fact and in law." This Board consisted of five members. The town was divided into four wards, John Street being the boundary from north to south, and King Street from east to west. Each ward elected one member and the fifth was selected by any three of the four members already elected. In case, however, of disagreement among the members of the Board, provision was made that the electors generally should choose the fifth member. This form of government remained in force until Hamilton was incorporated a city. Prior to its incorporation as a Police Town, it was governed by the Court of Quarter Sessions as a part of the Gore District.

The boundaries of the town were fixed as follows: "Commencing at the northeast corner of broken lot number thirteen

in the first concession of the Township of Barton at the water's edge of Burlington Bay, thence along the shore of the said Bay to the northwest corner of lot number sixteen, thence southerly along the allowance for road between lots number sixteen and seventeen (Queen Street) to the allowance for road in rear of the third concession (Aberdeen Ave.), thence easterly along the said allowance to the allowance for road between lots number thirteen and twelve (Wellington Street), thence along the said allowance to Burlington Bay to the place of beginning, including the whole of the said allowance for roads and that part of the harbor lying in front of the said town."

The Corporation was authorized to pass ordinances and by-laws for the proper government of the town; to appoint and remove when necessary such officers as were required from time to time; to levy an annual assessment on the rateable property, not to exceed four pence on the pound; and to establish a Public Market. They were further authorized to procure a loan of $4000 to erect a market house and purchase a suitable site, not less than one acre in extent.

Dr. Thomas Rolph of Ancaster, in 1836, published an account of a trip through Upper Canada. In this work he makes the following reference to Hamilton: "There are few places in North America that have increased more rapidly, or stand in a more beautiful and advantageous situation than the town of Hamilton. In the summer of 1833, my constant evening's walk was from McBurley's tavern to the lake shore—distance about one mile. There were then but two houses between them; now (1836) it is one continued street, intersected by side streets, branching in both directions. The main street is of noble width, and has been constantly improving by the erection of spacious brick buildings, and must become, ere long, a splendid one. The Court House is a fine stone building, at present unenclosed. Several excellent buildings have been erected; a Catholic and an Episcopal Church are in course of building; two taverns, both fronting the lake, are completed; a large stone brewery on the lake shore is in operation, and the splendid mansion of Allan N. McNab, Esq.,

commanding the entire view of the lake, is unequalled in the Province. It is called Dundurn, from a place of that name in Scotland belonging to the ancestors of Mr. McNab.

"The population of this town, when taken, as we learn from the town assessor, in September, 1834, was 2101; and when taken in May, 1835, it was over 2600, showing an increase of 500 in seven months—the population is now probably 3000. The census in 1833, as taken by the assessor, was about 1400. The amount of the town revenue in 1835 was, including police taxes, $1720, or thereabouts, showing a very great increase in the wealth and prosperity of this town.

The impulse given to Hamilton by the building and opening of the Burlington Bay Canal, led to the enlargement of its boundaries and to its incorporation as a police town. Following this was an agitation to connect Hamilton with Lake Erie by railroad, which, however, was not realized until many years later. Another and more comprehensive project that aroused great interest was the London and Gore Railway. Dr. Thomas Rolph, in his trip through Canada, says: "There are few projects afloat throughout the Province so likely to prove advantageous to the country and profitable to those who carry it into effect, as the railroad from Hamilton, at the head of Lake Ontario, to London. It would insure the trade of the Western and London districts being carried to Lake Ontario instead of being diverted from it altogether by the Erie Canal. It would pass through the rich and flourishing towns and townships of Ancaster, Brantford, Beechville, Ingersoll, and Oxford to London, 80 miles from Hamilton; thence to Chatham, on the lovely Thames, 70 miles farther; and finally terminate at Sandwich, 58 miles farther to the west; passing through the most prolific portion of the Province, inducing travellers to the far west to take up their location on the route from the unequalled advantages it unfolds to their view."

Mr. Alexander McKenzie, P. L. Surveyor, in 1836, prepared a map of the Town of Hamilton which shows that fully 800 acres of land had been surveyed into town lots, an increase of 700 acres in six years. It may be further mentioned that three newspapers were supported, "The Gazette," "The Express" and the "Free

Press"; that the Gore Bank had been established and that in one week in July, 1836, 17000 bushels of wheat had been shipped from one of the four wharves. These evidences of growth and prosperity indicate that Hamilton was rapidly becoming one of the most important towns in the Province.

The increase of population and the rapid growth of commerce rendered it necessary that some means should be devised for a more efficient system of Municipal Government. For this purpose an Act was passed on the 9th of June, 1846, to alter and amend the Act incorporating the town of Hamilton and to erect the same into a city. The inhabitants within certain limits fixed by this Act were constituted a body politic in fact and in name, by and under the name of the City of Hamilton.

The boundaries of the city were fixed as follows: "That the City of Hamilton shall consist of all that part of the District of Gore which lies within the following limits, that is to say: Commencing on the northeast corner of lot number twelve (Emerald Street) in the township of Barton, on the waters of Burlington Bay, thence following the line between the said lots number twelve and number eleven in a southerly direction to the rear of the third concession of the said township of Barton; thence along said concession westerly to the intersection of the line between lots numbers twenty and twenty-one of the said township; thence in a northerly direction following the said line between the said lots numbers twenty and twenty-one until it reaches the marsh at the head of Burlington Bay; thence along the southerly and easterly margin of said marsh to the waters of Burlington Bay to the place of beginning, including the several road allowances along the said boundary and the harbor in front of said Town.

The city was divided into five wards, named St. George, St. Patrick, St. Lawrence, St. Andrew and St. Mary. On the second Tuesday in January, each year, the electors of each ward chose two fit and proper persons, possessing the necessary legal qualification to represent them in the City Council. On the Saturday following the ward elections, the Council met and chose one other legally qualified person as a Councillor. These Councilors then elected one of their number as Mayor of the City.

This Act was superseded by the General Municipal Act of 1849, which extended the city limits eastward to Wentworth Street. The boundaries then were: on the east, Wentworth Street; on the south, Aberdeen Avenue; on the west, Paradise Road, and on the north, Coote's Paradise and Burlington Bay. By this Act the City of Hamilton exercises jurisdiction over that portion of the Township of Barton comprised in lots eleven, twelve, thirteen, fourteen, fifteen, sixteen, seventeen, eighteen, nineteen and twenty in the first, second and third concessions and the Broken Front.

The next change was that of the Proclamation of the Lieutenant Governor of Ontario, which fixes the city limits as follows:

All and singular that certain parcel or tract of land in the said Township of Barton lying to the west of the road allowance between lots numbers eight and nine (Sherman Ave.), and extending from the brow of the mountain to the waters of Burlington Bay, and westward to the present city limits, and including the said road allowance between numbers eight and nine and also parts of lots thirteen, fourteen, fifteen, sixteen, seventeen, eighteen, and of the road allowance between lots numbers eighteen and nineteen in the fourth concession of the said Township of Barton lying between the brow of the mountain and the present city limits.

The rapid growth of the City and the many advantages it offered to prospective manufacturers to locate here caused the City Council to take the necessary steps to enlarge its boundaries. The first enlargement was made in 1902, when that portion of the Township of Barton lying east of Sherman Avenue and extending to the Depew farm was formally annexed, and is now known as the first Manufacturer's Annex. It soon became apparent to the city authorities that this was insufficient, and in 1903 the eastern boundary was extended to Ottawa Street, and afterwards, in 1906, it was extended to Burlington Beach. The next enlargement was from Sherman Avenue to Kenilworth Avenue and from Barton Street to the mountain top. This is largely reserved for residential purposes.

Hamilton, the most beautiful city in Canada, if not in America, had a population on Oct. 1, 1914, of 101,314, with an assessed value of $78,204,593, and is the fifth largest city in the Dominion. If we add to this the immediate suburban population, who enjoy nearly all the privileges of the city itself, it will reach fully 110,000. The streets are well paved, and the modern cement sidewalk has replaced the old fashioned wooden ones. It has many Public Parks, among which may be mentioned Dundurn with its beautiful Castle and Museum, affording a delightful outlook over Burlington Bay and Lake Ontario. Shade trees abound on every street, and they add greatly to the beauty and comfort of its homes.

For the comfort and convenience of the citizens, to say nothing of the sanitary value, many miles of sewers have been constructed, with the necessary sewage disposal plants, so that now the waters of Burlington Bay are free from sewage contamination. Hamilton was the first city in Canada to grapple with this problem, and the results have been most satisfactory.

The waterworks system is one of the finest on the Continent, and consists of two filtering basins on Burlington Beach, four pumping engines on the lake shore, one large reservoir on the side of the mountain near the Delta, high level pumping engines, and a high level reservoir. The water is filtered through the sand into the filtering basins, from whence it is conducted to the pumping engines. It is forced through two mains to the Delta, thence to the city to be conducted through the distributing pipes. The third main has just been completed, and the city divided into two districts, a high level and a low level.

The educational system of Hamilton stands out prominently among the best on the continent. Pupils starting at the Kindergarten, and proceeding regularly through the Public Schools, can be graduated into the Collegiate Institute, or the Commercial forms of the Public Schools, at the age of fourteen. Those that take the Collegiate course can matriculate into our Universities, or any of the learned professions, by the time they are eighteen years of age, while those who enter the Commercial forms of the

Public School secure an excellent business education. To provide the necessary accommodation twenty-one school buildings have been erected, in which 150 teachers are employed.

The Collegiate Institute building and grounds occupy an entire block, and furnish accommodation for 700 pupils. Seventeen teachers are employed, fifteen of whom are University graduates, and nine are specialists. In addition to these there are a Normal School, a Manual Training School and Art School, and a Public Library which contains 30,000 volumes.

Lady Aberdeen, speaking of Hamilton in "Upward and Onward," says: "I could take up a large part of these Canadian Gossips by describing to you the public buildings and their uses, the magnificent school buildings and the good work that goes on in them, the institutions, social, literary, philanthropic and religious—the many manufactories, which cause Hamilton to be regarded as the Birmingham of Canada, the acres of vineyards around, the fruit gardens and orchards, which give this part of the country the name of "The Garden of Canada"; the churches of all denominations whose services we attended, and above all the people of Hamilton. But I will not launch into so large a subject."

REMINISCENT

A brief summary of proceedings occupying the attention of the Society since its last publication may be of interest to those not having opportunities of attending the meetings.

As a step towards the long-cherished design of securing the erection of a monument on the Stoney Creek battlefield, a branch of the Society was organized there, and local influences enlisted. As a result, through the united efforts of the Veteran Association and this Society, the beautiful monument marking the graves of our fallen heroes, stands to-day guarded by guns where the enemy's batteries stood a century ago; and there each year a memorial service is held by the above societies. This branch has now become a tree, working independently.

The proposal to erect a monument at Fort Erie by the U. S. to the memory of their soldiers buried there was emphatically protested against by this and sister societies, and the scheme abandoned.

To foster an interest in our country's history, among its coming citizens, prizes were offered by The Wentworth Historical Society in 1908 for the best essay on the Quebec Tercentenary, to be competed for by the scholars in the county schools. The competition was keen and some surprisingly good papers were submitted. Prizes were awarded to: Ancaster—1st, Roy Benham, S. S. No. 2; 2nd, Ross L. Dyment, S. S. No. 13; 3rd, Elmer Sagar, S. S. No. 8. Barton—Grace Hewish, S. S. No. 8. E. Flamboro—Irene Filman, S. S. No. 1. W. Flamboro—1st, Jessie M. Telford, S. S. No. 9; 2nd, Chas. Flatt, S. S. No. 7; 3rd, Merley Bush and Alice Hislop, equal. Glanford—Alex. McFarlane, S. S.

No. 4. Saltfleet—1st, Maud Jackson, S. S. No. 8; 2nd, Gertie Armstrong, S. S. No. 1; 3rd, Isabel Ptolemy, S. S. No. 9. Waterdown—1st, Ralph Breckon; 2nd, Wanless Foote; 3rd, Gordon Horning. Dundas—1st, Bessie Bertram; 2nd, Dolly Martin; 3rd, Bessie Laydon. For the whole country—1st, Bessie Bertram; 2nd, Maud Jackson; 3rd, Roy Benham; 4th, Jessie M. Telford. These prizes were presented by officers of this Society at largely attended public meetings at Stoney Creek, Dundas, Ancaster and Waterdown.

The desecration of the grave of the brave Chief Tecumseh and exposure of his bones to public gaze, by the coroner at Wallaceburg, called forth an emphatic protest by the Macauley Club, which was endorsed here, with the result that the relics were reinterred and a monument erected.

One of the most valued gifts received by the Society was a facsimile copy of the Missal of Pere Marquette, from the Quebec Historical Society. It is manuscript, in the Illinois language.

The visit of the Duke and Duchess of Connaught to this city was marked by the Society in the presentation of an illuminated address.

The question of marking the remains of the earthworks in Hamilton Cemetery, which, through the efforts of the Society, had been saved from destruction, brought about a meeting with the Cemetery Board. The plans proposed were of such an elaborate character, however, that the matter was dropped. The Cemetery Board later carried out the idea by placing a tablet beside the old sally port, with descriptive text in bronze letters.

An application from the Hon. Artillery Co. of Boston, to the Dominion Government, for the return of a gun captured at Bunker Hill, and now in the Citadel at Quebec, was the occasion of another protest, united and emphatic, from this and the other Historical Societies, and was effective; as well as one against the erection of a monument to the American General Montgomery, where he fell at Quebec.

Another move that called for remonstrance was the proposed placing in Westminster Abbey of a monument to George Washington. The sentiments of the Society were forwarded to the Dean, to Lord Strathcona, and to the Bishop of London, by Mrs. Fessenden, Corresponding Secretary.

The centennial of the battle of Stoney Creek, June 6, 1913, was the occasion of a notable gathering, including units of the several militia corps. National, Provincial, City and County officials, with strong representations from the Historical, National and Military Societies.

Through the efforts of Mr. Gardner, ordnance plans of all the earth works and batteries on Burlington Heights were furnished by the Militia Dept., and suitable granite blocks were engraved and placed in the Cemetery, Harvey and Dundurn Parks, marking the spots where those works were in 1812. These stones were unveiled by Sir John Gibson, Lieut.-Gov., on the anniversary of Stoney Creek, June 6, 1914.

The fact that the Library at Dundurn, where our books and documents had been placed, was only available during the summer months, led to our making arrangements with the Public Library Board for space in the new building, to which our stock has been removed and is being arranged and catalogued.

Some doubt having been expressed as to the validity of Mrs. Clementina Fessenden's claim as the founder of Empire Day, the Society, by resolution—having verified the evidence—endorsed her claim to that honor. It also united in the petition to secure for Miss Catharine Fraser, the grand-daughter of Simon Fraser, the intrepid explorer, some recognition from the Dominion Government.

President J. H. Smith represented this Society at the unveiling of the monument at Beaverdams, near Thorold, on the 101st anniversary of the battle of Beaverdams.

Representatives from this Society took part in the celebration of the centennial of the battle of Lundy's Lane, July 25, 1915.

The site of the first settler's house, corner of Barton and Leeming street, in this city, was marked by a suitable inscription on April 13, 1915. One of the city schools has been named for him, and a condensed account of his life posted up in its hall.

JOHN H. LAND, Secretary.

Historian's Report

By Justus A. Griffin

When elected to this newly created office in this Society your historian wondered—and still wonders—what was expected of him. A little consideration of the subject, however, made clear the fact that if current history were carefully noted and preserved the holder of the office had no sinecure. He has not been able, in the limited time at his disposal, to make record of everything worthy of being recorded, not even all that he has observed. In the following paragraphs will be found a few of the events of a local nature that he has noted:

PARKS, DRIVES, ETC.

The City Council and the Parks Board have made a number of additions to the park system of the city in recent years. Among these are Wabassa Park, on the north shore of the bay, which was opened to the public May 24, 1915; Chedoke, on the mountain side, head of Dundurn street (formerly Garth street), extending from the present westerly limits of the city, near Chedoke Creek, easterly to or nearly to Queen street, and comprising about fifty acres; Scott Park, Barton and Gage avenue; the Mountain Brow Park, on the mountain, east of Wentworth, and the Mountain Face Park, which was purchased in 1914 at a cost of about $130,000 and includes nearly all the mountain side not yet built on, east of Ferguson avenue. In 1914 the City secured the Beckett Drive, and during the past winter it was put into fairly good condition, though much remains to be done. This drive starts at Queen street and reaches the mountain top at

Dundurn (Garth) street, with a branch toward the east which joins the James street mountain road near the grounds of the Hospital for the Insane. It is a winding, tree-shaded roadway with many beautiful glimpses of the city, of the bay, of the hills beyond and of Lake Ontario.

The walks and drives on Hamilton (or Burlington) Beach have been much improved, and when the Beach Road improvements now contemplated are carried out and the Toronto to Hamilton cement highway is completed there will be a lovely round the bay driveway.

The Hamilton Cemetery Board has purchased property for a new Cemetery in Ancaster township, west of the City. A bridge intended for street car traffic as well as foot passengers and vehicles was built in 1914 over Beasley's Hollow, King Street West. It is of iron and cement and cost about $75,000. This is to be part of the highway through the section of Ancaster Township now called McKittrick Survey, which is to be annexed to the city. The new Cemetery will also be reached by this highway.

At the meeting of the City Council Tuesday evening, May 25, 1915, the following resolution was carried: "That the Sherman avenue lands reserved for playground purposes be named Langemarck Park and that a suitable memorial tablet be placed on the property descriptive of the Canadian's participation in the recent British victory over the German military forces in Belgium, and that Controller Morris be authorized to arrange for the tablet, its inscription, erection and formal unveiling.

NEW BUILDINGS.

Among the many additions to the buildings of a public nature erected in the County of Wentworth in recent years are the following, most of them in the City of Hamilton:

The Federal Life Assurance Company's nine storey office building on James Street, corner of Main, erected in 1907.

The Hamilton Public Library, Main Street West, occupying the block from Macnab Street to Charles Street, was opened June 12, 1912.

Dundas Public Library, a fine, well built structure, on King Street, Dundas, was opened Dec. 9, 1910.

I. O. O. F. Temple on Gore Street, between Hughson and John Streets, opened in August, 1912.

King George School, on Gage Avenue, contains twenty rooms and was opened in September, 1912.

Adelaide Hoodless School, Maple Avenue, contains twelve rooms, and was opened in September, 1912.

Gibson Avenue School, with nineteen rooms, was opened in 1912.

The First Congregational Church, Main Street East, was opened in 1913.

On the southeast corner of King and Wellington Streets, the first church in what is now the City of Hamilton was built by the Methodists in 1824. The new First Methodist Church, on the same site, was opened May 19, 1914. This church, beautiful within as well as without, and an ornament to the City, was built at a cost of $161,992.71.

St. Giles Presbyterian Church, a handsome building, on Main Street East, corner Holton Avenue, was opened in 1913.

Laidlaw Memorial Church (Presbyterian), on the corner of Ottawa and Cannon Streets, with a reading room open every day and evening, was opened in 1913.

Queen Mary School, on Cannon Street East, contains twenty-one rooms, and was opened April, 1914.

The Royal Templar Hall and Office Building on the corner of Walnut and Main Streets, was opened in 1914.

The new Central Fire Hall on John Street North, was finished and occupied in 1914.

The Hydro Electric Station on Hughson Street North was built in 1913.

The Hydro Electric Sub-station on Dundurn Street North was built in 1914.

The Earl Kitchener School, erected in 1914, contains twenty-one rooms and will be opened this year.

The Robert Land School, also erected in 1914, contains twelve rooms, and will be opened this year.

The Young Women's Christian Association seven-storey building at No. 17 Main Street West, was opened January 19, 1915.

Ryerson Methodist Church on Main Street, corner of Springer Avenue, was dedicated on Sunday, May 9, 1915. Rev. S. D. Chown, General Superintendent of the Methodist Church in Canada, preached the dedicatory sermon.

The new wing of the Aged Women's Home, at the head of Wellington Street, was formally opened by Mr. Adam Brown on Thursday, April 30, 1915.

At the corner of Barton and Weir Streets, in the township of Barton, on April 24, 1915, Mr. Jos. H. Smith, County School Inspector (and President of Wentworth Historical Society), presided at the laying of the corner-stone of a new public school. The new school will be known as the Fairfield School; the complete plans are designed for a twenty-two room school. The unit now being constructed provides six rooms and will cost $50,000.

The township of Barton also added several new schools to its educational institutions in 1913. Of these, two are in Section No. 3, south of the city, one on Wentworth Street and one on Brantdale Avenue. There was also built a two room addition to the Bartonville School.

On the Dundas Road, West Hamilton, a remodelled and much enlarged school was opened with five rooms in 1913.

In the township of East Flamboro, on the east plains, east of Aldershot, is a new school, and also on the Plains Road, west of Aldershot, a fine building known as the Fairfield School was opened in 1914. These are among the finest schools in the Province.

Stoney Creek, in Saltfleet Township, made a $12,000 addition to its school in 1914.

Jerseyville built a new school at a cost of $5,000 in 1910.

At Millgrove a new and up-to-date school was built in 1914 at a cost of $15,000, for site, building and furniture.

NEW LIGHTS.

In connection with the Hydro Electric System, Hamilton has installed a completely new lighting plant which gives such a uniform, evenly distributed light that no part of the streets is dark. Our city is now one of the best lighted in America. The lights in this system were turned on in July, 1914.

OUR DEPARTED FRIENDS.

Mrs. John Rose-Holden (née Mary Emily Roach) was born at Beauharnois, Quebec, where her father was Presbyterian minister, April 24, 1843, and died in Hamilton, Ont., April 14, 1908. Mrs. Holden joined the Wentworth Historical Society shortly after its organization and by her active work and careful research made herself one of its most useful and best esteemed members, and was for several years one of its Vice-Presidents. A number of papers contributed by her enriched the literature of the Society. A tablet to her memory has been placed in St. Mark's Church in this city.

Rev. Canon George A. Bull, son of George P. Bull, and grandson of Capt. Joseph Bull of the Prince of Wales or Leicester regiment, was born in Dublin, Ireland, May 18, 1828, and died in Hamilton, Ont., July 22, 1909. Canon Bull's parents came to

Canada in 1831. Like Prof. Stephen Leacock when similarly situated, he decided to come with them. After a short business experience of two years in Montreal, Mr. George P. Bull removed to Toronto, where he established The Weekly Recorder, near the St. Lawrence Market, in a building adjoining the premises where Wm. Lyon Mackenzie was publishing his paper. In 1835 Sir Allan MacNab induced him to come to Hamilton, and he commenced here the publication of the Gazette, which he continued to conduct till his death and which was continued by his eldest son, Hon. Harcourt Bull. So our friend became a Hamiltonian at seven years of age. He was educated in the schools of this city and Toronto. On October 26, 1851, he was ordained deacon, and on October 4, 1852, he was ordained priest. In 1852 he was appointed incumbent of St. Peter's Church, Barton, and missionary to the adjoining district, and remained in this charge until 1886, when he became rector of St. John's Church, Stamford, and All Saints' Church, Lundy's Lane (now Niagara Falls South). In 1902 he retired from active work and settled in Hamilton. Under the public school system established by Rev. Egerton Ryerson, the position of superintendent of schools in the counties of Lincoln and Wentworth was held by Rev. Mr. Bull for thirty years. He was rural dean of Haldimand and South Wentworth from 1875 till 1886, and in 1887 was made Canon of Christ Church Cathedral.

Ten years in succession Canon Bull was President of Lundy's Lane Historical Society, and for many years Honorary President of The Wentworth Historical Society. He was also President of The Pioneer and Historical Society of Ontario, 1895-1897.

Charles Lemon, barrister, was of United Empire Loyalist parentage. As a member of the Executive Council, Vice-President and President of the Wentworth Historical Society, he was devoted and reliable. To him we are indebted for our revised constitution, and his quiet, thoughtful and remitting care for the Society helped it through a difficult period of its history. He faithfully worked for and with the Society from the time of its organization till his death, Oct. 4, 1912.

Harry H. Robertson, for two years President and at the time of his death Honorary President of the Wentworth Historical Society, was the son of the late Hon. Thomas Robertson, a judge of the Supreme Court of Ontario, and a grandson of Major Titus Geer Simons who distinguished himself in the War of 1812. Mr. Robertson was born at Foxbar, the family residence, on the Governor's road, near Dundas. After passing through the Public and High Schools of Dundas and Upper Canada College, Toronto, he took his law course at the Ontario Law School, Toronto, being called to the bar in 1886. He practiced law in Hamilton till 1910, when he was appointed Assistant Registrar to the Court of Appeals and removed to Toronto. As an author he was lucid, careful and methodical, and in the preparation of historical articles he rejected anything which he thought lacking in documentary evidence, and placed little or no dependence on tradition. The Wentworth Historical Society and the United Empire Loyalist Association both suffered great loss when Mr. Robertson died, Dec. 24, 1913.

George A. Young, a well-known business man of this city for many years, and a member of the Wentworth Historical Society, died March 4, 1912.

William Wallace Buchanan, one of the original members of this Society, a patriotic, non-partisan Canadian and a temperance worker of national reputation, was born at Sarnia, Ont., March 9, 1854. Mr. Buchanan was educated in the Public Schools at Sarnia and in Upper Canada College. At eighteen years of age he acquired the Lambton Advocate, Arkona; after some time he bought the Watford Guide and consolidated the two papers. He subsequently edited the Chatham Banner and the London Standard and for a time was private secretary to the Hon. Alexander Mackenzie. Mr. Buchanan was a ready writer and a fluent speaker, of a commanding presence and possessed in remarkable degree that personal magnetism which sways and influences mankind. He died in Winnipeg, where he had been residing the past twenty years, Sunday, April 4, 1915.

PAPERS AND RECORDS

OF THE

Wentworth Historical Society

Volume Seven

AUTHORS OF PAPERS ARE ALONE RESPONSIBLE FOR STATEMENTS AND OPINIONS EXPRESSED HEREIN

HAMILTON
The Griffin & Richmond Co., Ltd., Printers
1916

WENTWORTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

Officers for 1916-17.

Rev. P. L. Spencer, *President.*
Mrs. M. Henderson, *1st Vice-President.*
Justus A. Griffin, *2nd Vice-President.*
J H Land ~~W. E. Moore (Dundas)~~, *Secretary-Treasurer.*
Mrs. C. Fessenden, *Corresponding Secretary,*
25 Robinson Street.
Justus A. Griffin, *Historian.*
J. H. Land, *Librarian.*
W. A. Donaldson, *Auditor.*

Executive Council.

J. A. Barr
J. G. Cloke
J. H. Land
J. Gardner
A. C. Beasley
J. Plant
Major J. E. Orr
Kerwin Martin
Hon. E. D. Smith
J. H. Smith

Officers of Ladies' Committee.

Mrs. Mary Henderson, *President*
Mrs. C. Fessenden, *Secretary*

CONTENTS

Record of Robert Land, U. E. L.

BY JOHN H. LAND.

When the Colonies rebelled against England in 1775, Robert Land owned a farm at Cochecton, in N. Y., on the banks of the Delaware River. He was a wood-turner by trade and had come with his bother William from England some 25 or 30 years before to the new world to make his fortune; had succeeded to some extent; had married Phoebe Scott (an aunt of Genl. W. Scott), and had settled down on the farm a contented subject of the King. On the breaking out of the war, he took, of course, the Loyalist side, and volunteered his services, but there is no record of the corps he was attached to. His family at that time consisted of his wife, five boys, John, Abel, William, Ephriam and Robert, the oldest 19, the youngest 8, and two girls, Kate and Phoebe, the former about 16, the latter about 4. As soon as he declared himself and took service, the rebels began to persecute the family. John was seized and imprisoned, the farm was raided from time to time, and he was a marked man.

He seems to have had an intimate knowledge of the country, as he was most of the time employed in carrying despatches and gathering information for the Loyalists. The feeling against him and other loyal subjects grew more and more bitter until it seems to have been determined to rid the country of them entirely, root and branch, old and young, for a raid was planned by a band of "Indians" (rebels disguised as such; there were some Indians among them) on this particular settlement in the early fall of 1778. Land's family were to be killed, and the house and buildings of a neighbor across the river, named Kane, were to be burned and all the crops destroyed. The band by some means misunderstood their instructions, for Kate Land was

awakened by feeling the point of a spear drawn across her foot. Supposing it to be a friendly Indian fond of practical jokes, she pettishly remarked, "Go away, Capt. Jack." A strange voice answered, "Me no Capt. Jack, get up quick, go to white man's house over river, he want you." Hastily dressing herself she paddled across in her canoe, and on entering Kane's door stumbled over his body. A brief inspection showed her that the family had been brutally murdered. Re-crossing, the same voice warned her, as she stepped from the canoe, "House burn, get children out." Rushing in, she speedily wakened her mother and the children, hurriedly dressed them and led the way out, and hiding in a corn field they watched their home burn to ashes, and then made their way to New York city, told their story and placed themeslves under the protection of the British troops. Robert Land, about this time, was brought by his duties into the neighborhood and took the risk of a stealthy visit to his family, but finding only smoking ashes, and knowing the hatred of the rebels for him and his, supposed all he loved had perished in the flames. Heartsick, he made up his mind to leave the country, and arranged that a Quaker friend named Morden, who had been to the Niagara River, should guide him there. An appointment was made which by some means got to the knowledge of the rebels, and just as the friends were about to start they noticed a posse sneaking up on them. Land at once started off and urged Morden to follow, but the latter refused till he knew what they wanted. He was a Quaker, he said, had never taken up arms nor done any harm and they would do him none. The rebels on finding themselves discovered, rushed forward, two seized Morden while the rest followed Land, but he had too good a start, and dispairing of overtaking him fired after him just as he reached the edge of wood thick with underbrush, and had the satisfaction of seeing him fall; however, when they got there he was missing, leaving a trail of blood which they followed for some distance and then lost in the darkness. The bullet had struck the centre of his knapsack with sufficient force to penetrate through it and his clothing to the skin, knocking him down. In falling his hand was cut on a sharp stone and bled profusely, leaving the trail they followed. He crawled among the bushes

and then sprang up, ran for his life and escaped, making his way, principally by night, northwestward till he reached Niagara. The rebels returned to their captive and in spite of his protestations and appeals, hanged him on the spot.

Land applied for and received the U. E. grant of 200 acres at the Falls of Niagara. The town of Niagara Falls South covers the place now; the historic Lundy's Lane was its northern boundary. Here for two years he lived, solitary and morose. I have often thought that his object in selecting this place was that he might have an opportunity to revenge himself on those who had wrecked his life and happiness. The solemn dirge of the great falls was, however, more than he could bear, so he exchanged his lot for 200 acres over which part of the city of Hamilton now extends, and building himself a shack within a stone's throw of where this is written by his great-great-gandson, supported himself by trapping and hunting, the only white man for many miles.

The family remained in New York until the army evacuated it, and with many more refugees were taken to New Brunswick, where they remained seven years. Robert, the youngest son, seems to have been the leading spirit, and was not satisfied with the prospects there, insisted that there must be a better country than that, and finally persuaded his mother to try Canada. They returned to New York and from there came to Niagara, stopping at the old home on the way, which John had been allowed to keep, he proving that he had been in prison during the war and had never taken up arms. He tried in every possible way to get them to stay with him, offering to give them the farm and all his improvements, but Robert was obdurate. "We have left a better country than this," he said, "and we are going to Canada." John accompanied them for several days on the journey, still trying to persuade them to return. Finding it useless he at last sorrowfully bade them "good-by" and went home, while they tramped their weary way to liberty. All this time they supposed the father was dead. The news of the hanging of Morden and shooting of his companion had reached them in New York, and had been confirmed by John when they returned to the old home.

They reached Niagara at last and Robert and his brothers supported the family by working for settlers, shooting and trapping for nearly two years, when one day they learned from a trader that a white man had settled at the "Head of the Lake" whose name was Land, and they at once started on the 40 mile tramp to see who he was. They found the husband and father they had mourned as dead, and he, the wife and children he had sorrowed for all these years. The reunited family, with glad and thankful hearts, set to work on the beautiful prairie-like farm and were soon beyond the reach of want. Claims were put in for land for the children, and the family at one time had nearly 1,000 acres in a block, the farms all joining. The encroachments of the city has swallowed it all up, however.

Abel, the elder son, had a lot east of Wellington street, north of Barton, and besides farming, built a wharf and carried on a forwarding business, in a necessarily small way, as the only craft available were batteaux. There was no canal through the Beach in those days. His son Abel had the north part of the lot east of Wentworth street, the site of his homestead being now occupied by the Oliver Plow Works.

Ephraim, the second son, had the lot west of Wentworth street, south of Main, the Stinson street school now covering the site of his home. When the war of 1812 broke out, and the enemy were at Stoney Creek, he buried the jewels of the Barton Lodge under an apple tree.

William, the third son, being of an adventurous nature, settled in the wilderness of Oxford County.

Robert, the youngest son, kept with his father and mother, occupying land extending from Wellington to Wentworth and Main to Barton; also from Barton to the Bay east of Emerald.

They all took part in the war and had commissions in the militia of those days, and left their mark, more or less decided, on the community.

Of the daughters, Phoebe married Robert Lucas, and settled in Halton County, near Bronte, where her descendants still live. Kate married George Hughson and settled in Binbrook Township.

History of the Jolley Family.

The "Jolley" family is well and familiarly known to the citizens of Hamilton, the founders of the "Jolley" family having located in the then village of Hamilton as far back as 1835.

Mr. James Jolley was born in Argyleshire, Scotland, in January, 1813. Coming to Canada as a young man he located first in Montreal. After spending twelve years there, he journeyed on to Hamilton, where he lived the remainder of his life, dying in his eightieth year.

Mr. James Jolley established the wholesale saddlery business which bears his name (James Jolley & Sons), on John street south, and it is said that his harness was among the leading and best manufactured in the Province of Ontario. Mr. James Jolley was a loyal citizen of Hamilton; besides being an alderman, he was the promoter for the construction of the mountain free toll road perpetuating his name, "Jolley Cut," which was built principally from Mr. Jolley's large contribution of money and donation of property. Mr. James Jolley was a member of the Church of the Ascension from the time of the building of that church.

Mrs. James Jolley is the daughter of the late Professor John Burgess. Having been born in Exeter, England, she came to Canada at the age of seven in a sailing vessel, being on the ocean seven weeks, arriving at the then village of Hamilton by conveyances of horses and waggons. Mrs. James Jolley is still living at the advanced age of eighty-eight. Throughout her lifetime she has been a loyal and staunch subject of the British Empire, having lived during the reigns of four English sov-

ereigns, always being an ardent member of the Church of England. Mrs. Jolley is the mother of four sons, John, Harry, William and Charles, and three daughters, Fanny, Sophia and Emma. One of the sons, the Honorable John L. Jolley, was a member of the United States House of Congress and Senator for the State of South Dakota. Mrs. Jolley is the head of a family of some fifty grandchildren and ten great-grandchildren.

The old Jolley homestead still stands on the mountain at the head of the "Jolley Cut," and the descendants of this old established pioneer family are actively engaged in the religious, social, poiltical and commercial welfare, development and progress of the great British Empire.

The First Agricultural Society

WITHIN THE LIMITS OF WENTWORTH—1806.

By H. H. ROBERTSON.

One of the first steps of Lieutenant-Governor Simcoe on assuming office in Upper Canada was to encourage agriculture by the formation of an Agricultural Society at Niagara, and although no parliamentary aid was voted to such societies until the year 1830, prior to that year "patriotic persons," to quote the first published journal of the Board of Agriculture of Upper Canada—organized in 1846—"exerted themselves successfully in the object of establishing local Agricultural Societies." (Report on Fairs. Ontario—C. C. James in 1902-1903; Kirby's Annals of Niagara—114; Canniff's Settlement of U. C. 580).

As early as 1806 there was such a Society, of which the freeholders in the Townships now constituting the County of Wentworth were the members. The original By-Laws of this Society, neatly engrossed on stout paper by the Secretary, Titus Geer Simons, is in the possession of the writer. In 1806 there had been no survey of Hamilton. No settlement on Burlington Bay had received that name, and Wentworth was yet unknown. The Society of 1806 called itself "The Burlington Board of Agriculture," and that Burlington was the name by which the small settlement at the end, as well as the south of Burlington Bay was known in 1806 is attested by a map drawn as late as 1816 by Lieut. Francis Hall, 14th Light Dragoons and published in Cruickshank's Documentary History (1812, p. 1). That Hamilton was the name given in 1813 is true, but Lieut. Hall's testimony is evidence of the name before that date. The name Burlington seems to have been used in the early days, interchangeably, though not so frequently, as Head of the Lake.

The village of Wellington Square adopted the name Burlington at a time when Hamilton had grown to the dimensions of a city, and later still the always ambitious city, in characteristic enterprise, sought parliamentary sanction to rename the historic Bay with its Beach—made famous as the theatre of the military operations of 1812-14, and referred to in every despatch as Burlington—Hamilton Bay and Hamilton Beach, after its younger but now more important self. Such a step, having as a consequence, confusion in the identity of historic ground, must earn our protest alike for its consequences and the motive which prompted it.

Memoir of Clement Lucas

BY HIS GRANDDAUGHTER, ELIZA C. LUCAS MATTHEWMAN.

The subject of this sketch was born in Dublin, Ireland, in the year 1764. When nine years of age he with his parents emmigrated to this Continent. After living some time in the City of New York, they moved to New Brunswick, Canada, with other U. E. Loyalists, preferring British rule to Republicanism.

After twenty-five years spent in New Brunswick as a ship carpenter, he with his wife, whose maiden name was Phoebe Land (a near relative to Robert Land, who was the first white settler in Hamilton, Ontario) and their eight children came in 1807 and settled on a farm on the shore of Lake Ontario, three miles east of Wellington Square, now the town of Burlington.

At that early date no steamship or railroads were known, and our forefathers had to bear with the privations of long, tedious weeks on sailing vessels and endure the hardships of a new country.

With hardy hands they felled the trees and built a log house with a big fire-place in which they could roll a back-log and some sticks in front, which would light the room with its blaze and bake the bread in the bake kettles on the coals.

The children, Thomas, Stephen, Robert, John, Clement, William, Mary and Rebecca, all grew to be strong men and women.

Five years after settling here the War of 1812 broke out, and grandfather and his grown up sons were called to take up arms in defense of Canada.

Clement Lucas could trace his geneology back through five generations. Originally the family resided in England, its members being staunch adherents of the established church.

The following incident is preserved relating to the great-great-great grandfather: Some robbers prowling through where he resided saw a light in his house; one climbed on the shoulders of another and peeped through an opening at the top of the shutter and found that the whole family were on their knees in prayer. Getting down, the robber said, "Boys, if we were all as well employed as old John Lucas it would be a great deal better for us." The robber was hanged a short time after for the crime, and made the above confession from the scaffold.

Clement Lucas was a good man; he was devoted to the cause of the Methodist Church, of which he was a member for forty years.

He came to live with us after my father built this house, the same year I was born. I have lived here all my life and can remember when grandfather sat by the fire, with his cane tapping on the hearth.

I often sat on the arm of his chair when I was about seven years old, and he was then ninety years old; he lived to be ninety-one years and seven months. He grew feeble and could not converse on the topics of the day, but if anyone spoke of Jesus his soul was stirred, and tears would roll down his wayworn cheeks, and the faltering tongue would move in accents of love to God. He would exhort young men to seek first the Kingdom of God and his righteousness.

Thus lived and died this truly Christian patriarch, and was buried in the VanNorman Cemetery, Middle Road (now Appleby). On his tombstone are these words, "Mark the perfect man, and behold the upright, for the end of that man is peace." His children's children rise up and call him blessed.

Memoirs of John Lucas

BY HIS DAUGHTER, ELIZA C. LUCAS MATTHEWMAN.

John Lucas, my father, was the fourth son of Clement and Phoebe Lucas, and was born May 4th, 1800, on St. John's River, now New Brunswick. In 1807 the family removed from New Brunswick and settled on a farm, Lot 11, Lake Shore.

During the War of 1812, when my father was just twelve years old, grandfather and his older boys had to shoulder their muskets and leave their homes to defend this country.

The mother having died and the older sister married, the care of the house was left to Rebecca, who was two years older than my father.

Once, while grandfather was away, a fine deer was chased by dogs and swam out in the lake. John took the gun and shot it, but being only twelve years old, he had to get Rebecca to help him get it to shore in the boat and had skinned it when grandfather arrived home.

Once when grandfather was gone to church on Sunday some British soldiers came ashore and stole the hides out of a tanning vat. The children, John and Rebecca, had been told to stay at the house, but the butternut trees were not far away, and they were tempted to close the door and run to pick the nuts up. They were not long away, but on reaching the house they saw some soldiers waiting around. John stepped up and inquired what they wanted, and was told that they would like some bread and milk. Rebecca soon supplied their wants, and they praised the children for their kindness and went away.

John soon discovered that his father's leather was stolen from the vat; he followed the men down to the shore and asked if they had taken the leather, but they said, "Why, my boy, the King provides us with leather; we don't need your leather."

Fearlessly he jumped into the boat while the men were sitting on the shore nearby, and hauled out the leather which was covered up with cabbage stolen from a neighbor's garden.

John carried the hides up on the bank and waited until they pushed the boat out from shore, then fired stones at them saying, "Show me your shoemaker that was going to make up this leather," and then he would send another stone into the boat. They swore that they would come ashore and tan his hide, but he was too smart for them. When grandfather heard of it he reported to the officials and they came and apologized.

When father was sixteen years of age he stood six feet and was straight and beautiful, and afterwards measured six feet two inches in his stockings.

At twenty-three years of age he married my mother, Elizabeth Young, whose parents, being German, had removed from New Jersey State and settled on the next farm to the Lucas family.

After father's marriage he rented a farm near Grimsby. The following year he bought this farm where I now live in Nelson Township, on the Trafalgar Line.

With resolution and strength given them for the task, they worked together; father had erected a comfortable log house, while mother stayed at her mother's on the Lake Shore with her first born babe. Father made sap troughs and tapped the maples, and had an iron kettle hung over a fire out in a clearing; then when mother came in the Spring to live here she would go out and watch the boiling sap and lay her baby in one of the nice new troughs to sleep. They made quantities of molasses and sugar and scarcely had any other kind of sugar.

Father was of a mechanical turn, and made many pieces of furniture for their house, and often whittled hickory brooms by the light of the fire-place in the evening. The second year, when he had to cut down more trees, mother had to take her baby out from the danger of a tree falling on the house.

The neighbors were few. Isaac VanNorman had settled about twelve years previously. He had a saw mill running by water power where the neighbors could bring their logs and saw them for barns and houses.

The first religious service was held in VanNorman's house. I have heard my father tell how the minister would come on horseback once a month after a tiresome journey around the country and call at VanNorman's on a week day in harvest time. Mrs. VanNorman would blow the horn and call the men to lay down their tools and come into the preaching. Once when the minister was preaching the saw mill started up with its clank, clank, very much to the annoyance of all. The minister stopped and requested that some one would kindly ask that man to stop sawing until he was through preaching. So Mr. VanNorman went out to the mill and asked him to shut down the mill for a few minutes. "Yes, yes," he said, "I will when I get this log off." Poor old Mac, he did not care for religious services; liquor was his ruin.

My parents raised a large family, eight boys, George, John, William, Robert, Daniel, David, Albert and Charles, and three daughters, Mary, who died at the age of two and a half years, Lucy and I, Eliza, the youngest of eleven.

My father and brothers helped to build the brick house in which I now reside.

I was born in the old house while the new one was in course of erection, and they moved into the new one the same winter. I have lived here all my life. I stayed with father after mother's death. My sister married and all my brothers went away; then when I was married to Mr. Matthewman we bought this farm and

kept father the rest of his life. He lived ten years after mother's death, and was contented and comfortable; had his horse and buggy and could go when he wished.

One summer he took a trip to Wheeling, West Virginia, and visited my brother Charles for a month and enjoyed going about very much. He was usually healthy and stood very erect until a few months before his death, when he took a cold on his lungs which brought down the tall, straight form. He lingered until hot weather, then weakened, and one day he told us he was going home to be with mother. He died Aug. 17, 1875.

My parents were converted under the preachings of such men as the Ryersons and other grand men who had hard struggling to get to their appointments on horseback through mud, creeks and forests.

Father and mother united with the Methodist Church here at Appleby (then the Middle Road Appointment) about the year 1829, and took the Christian Guardian the first year it was printed, and it has been a welcome paper in this home every year since.

Father built a school house on the corner of his farm and with other neighbors helped to organize the first Sunday School in this neighborhood.

Several of my brothers and my sister and I became teachers in the Sunday School, and as we grew up our parents instructed us by precept and example to fear God and to love righteousness.

The Bible was read to us daily by my father, and family prayer was never forgotten. I have tried to remember some of the stories told by my father when we were childen. We loved to hear them because they were real ones. He often told us about shooting a bear that had dragged a good sized hog out of the pen. Father ran and called a neighbor and they pursued and shot it.

Another time they killed an old bear with some cubs; the men caught them, but they were lively little fellows to hold.

Father had a tame cub when he was a boy. The pet cub would be lying in the crotch of a tree about twenty feet or more up; the boys would get a distance away, then call, "Cuff, cuff," when he would fold his arms about his head and let himself drop to the ground, and then bite their heels until they stopped running.

Mother told me about a pet deer which father caught when it was quite young; she fed it milk and tamed it so it would come to the door when it was hungry. One day she had stirred batter for buckwheat cakes and set it to rise on the hearth. When the fawn found the door a little open he walked in snuffing about and put his nose to the bottom of the crock of batter, but finding it was not milk, gave a snort and the batter went all over the nice scoured floor.

The fawn grew to be a fine deer; one day a neighbor came to talk with father, leaving his dog outside the door; presently there was a thump and howl at the door, startling the men in the kitchen, and on opening the door they found the deer sitting on his haunches beating the dog unmercifully with his front feet. The deer disappeared in the Spring and returned to its mate.

Father supported the Government in the trouble of 1837 and was some time afterwards appointed captain of the Nelson militia. He annually called out his men on the fourth of June, King George's birthday, and afterwards on Queen Victoria's birthday, the twenty-fourth of May.

Once when I was only a baby he came stepping out in his suit of blue with red sash and sword. I was afraid of him and ran to mother for protection, not old enough to realize that he was my protector and would fight to the bitter end for home and country.

It was the custom to pass a bottle of whiskey around in those days, and often on training days some of the men would get too much and would quarrel and fight. Father was a teetotaler and had formed a resolution to not touch liquor long before there was a temperance society in this place.

At a raising or logging bee the host would almost take offense if every man did not take some liquor, but father would politely refuse.

At one time a drunken old fellow was getting too much, and father hit on the plan to waste the whiskey without making him angry, so he said, "Pass the bottle to me." But the other said, "Oh, you don't drink." Father said, "Never mind, I have worked as hard as you and have a right to my share." So father poured out some on his leather boot and rubbed it in, and kept pouring and rubbing in while the men looked on with surprise; but father said good naturedly that his boots had gotten hard and hurt him and that would soften them, so by a little tact he got the old fellow home to his family.

Father was brave, true and honorable; he hated meanness, and was stern and cross sometimes if things did not go right, so much so that we were afraid to offend him; but he never used bad language, nor allowed it to be used by his hired men. He was most tenderhearted when anyone needed help, and it was known everywhere that my parents never sent a poor beggar hungry from their door.

The Indian squaw would come with her little pappoose strapped on her back, and mother would coo to the baby and make the poor squaw smile. Mother would cut the crust off the loaf, cut a hole in it and put in a piece of butter and wrap it up for the squaw to carry with her.

Mother spun yarn from the sheep wool and colored it in different shades and got it woven into lovely plaids, and had flannel dresses made which were very pretty, durable and very becoming. She always looked sweet in her white cap, as it was then the custom to wear every day.

I remember the old warming pan; when our beds were cold at night mother would put a shovelful of hot coals in the pan, which had a long wooden handle, then carry it up and iron be-

tween the blankets of the bed, then our prayers were quickly said and we jumped into bed and slept the sleep of the innocent.

Our evening meal often was corn porridge, and mother knew how to make it digestible, cooking it until it was done; we also liked it for breakfast. Salt yeast bread that mother made lingers in my memory, baked in the brick oven in the yard. Mother's fried cake and mince pie and buckwheat pancakes were always praised by the visitors.

Father had bees and honey was plentiful. Good big pieces of white honeycomb would be laid on a platter for everybody to have all they wanted.

We were all fond of sassafras; the roots were washed clean, cut up and stewed in the coffeepot, then we drank it like coffee.

Mother was a splendid nurse; we needed no other when we were sick. Often she was awakened in the middle of the night by a rap at the door; a neighbor had a sick wife and child, and she always went if it was possible, and for years she kept it up until her health gave out.

She was called Aunt Lizzie Lucas by all the neighbors and was loved by all.

Mother was a sweet singer and often gathered us around her on summer evenings. We had learned to sing by note without the use of musical instruments, so we often had a choir of our own, as my brothers had good bass voices, and when the neighbors came in to help we had quite a concert. Those were happy days

"Where is now the merry party
  I remember long ago?
Laughing round the Christmas fire,
  Sporting in its ruddy glow.
Or in summer's pleasant evenings,
  In the meadows on the hay?
They have all dispersed and wandered
  Far away, far away.
Some have gone from us forever,
  Longer here they might not stay;
They have reached a fairer region
  Far away, far away."

Memoir of Rev. Daniel VanNorman Lucas

BY HIS SISTER, ELIZA C. LUCAS MATTHEWMAN

The subject of this memoir was the son of John and Elizabeth Lucas, and was born July 12th, 1834, and died June 10th, 1911.

He was the fifth son, the older boys being farmers; but Daniel, preferring books, obtained a fair education at the public school. He afterwards entered Victoria College, where he distinguished himself as a close student, getting his B. A.. Subsequently he received the degree of M. A. from an American University.

Entering the ministry of the Methodist Church, he commenced public life as a minister in charge at Farmersville, in the County of Leeds.

Such was his success that he attracted the attention of the Church authorities, and was appointed to a mission at Victoria, Vançouver Island, B. C., about the year 1855. He met with most gratifying success, but on account of ill health returned to Ontario and was stationed for a few years near Brantford, Ontario, among the Indian tribes on the Grand River.

His next appointment was travelling lecturer for Stanstead College, and he established his reputation as one of the foremost platform speakers in the lecture fields of the Dominion.

These lectures had grown out of efforts to advance local interest, coupled with a deep sympathy for the enlightenment of the lower classes; the titles being suggestive of humanity in

the broadest sense of the term: "British Columbia and the Indian Tribes," "China and the Chinese," "Abraham Lincoln and American Slavery." All were themes worthy of the orator and philanthropist. He won the highest enconiums from the press, the pulpit and the people, and even from so practical a body as the Emigration Committee of the House of Commons, for the tact, eloquence, pathos and humor with which he treated his themes.

He had charge of different churches in the city of Montreal, living there eight years. His three sons, Clarence, Melville and Wilfred, studied in the college there, and remained there while he and his wife toured around the world. He had been chosen, on account of his ability as a temperance lecturer, to go to Australia and New Zealand to help the cause of temperance. His wife, Adelia, was a daughter of Rev. Joseph Reynolds, and an earnest worker in every good cause, being one of the founders of the W. C. T. U. in Canada. In Montreal, Toronto and Grimsby she was honored with the presidency of missionary and temperance enterprises. While in Australia she assisted in organizing W. C. T. U. there, and she and her husband addressed meetings on various phases of Christian work in all the continents of the world. She was called away from her bodily suffering in her sixtieth year, in 1905, leaving her sorrowing husband and three sons; the eldest, Clarence, is a professor of music in the city of New York.

I shall not attempt to say much more about my dear brother, as his books and publications are scattered all over the world. He travelled extensively and was known and loved by tens of thousands of good people, and the children especially loved Uncle Dan wherever he went.

When I was married in this old homestead, Daniel was the officiating minister. He baptized my children, and when my daughters were married in this same old home, the same dear Uncle Dan was called on to officiate; and then again he baptized their children.

He was a tower of strength, standing six feet and over, and for several years weighing two hundred and twenty-five pounds, but like the mighty oak of the forest, he had to fall. He is gone and we miss him. We shall never forget him. He left a grand testimony, and like Paul, he fought a good fight, finished his course and entered the rest promised to the faithful.

So ended the life on earth of one of the third generation of the Lucas family in America. May many thousands be led home to Heaven through the preaching of Daniel V. Lucas is the earnest prayer of his sister, Eliza C. Lucas Matthewman.

The Heroes of Stoney Creek

Respectfully Inscribed to the Wentworth Historical Society on the occasion of its Twentieth Annual Meeting, 7th June, 1909.

Their bodies are down in the dust;
  Their souls are still living with us;
And Wentworth will always, we trust,
  Preserve their proud memory thus.

They saved both the cream and the crown
  Of the fairest Dominion on earth;
And won everlasting renown
  To themselves and the land of their birth.

No need to give names: they will glow
  Like stars on the forehead of Fame;
And ne'er shall an enemy crow
  O'er the land which such heroes can claim.

—Wm. Murray.

Hamilton, 7th June, 1909.

An Account of the Battle of Stoney Creek

Mainly Derived from the Recollections of Pioneer Days of Abraham Corman, Esq., and put together by his Granddaughter, Miss Hazel A. Corman

In the early nineties of the eighteenth century this country was practically wild. Settlers were few and far between. They had no railroads, macadamized roads, electric telegraph, telephone, nor the good postal service of to-day. This was so until after the American War of Independence and the U. E. Loyalists preferred to come to Canada. Among these Loyalists was one Silas Hopkins and family, who endured many hardships to remain true to the old flag.

They loaded their few household goods on covered wagons, which served as their home during the trip to Canada from New Jersey. They led or drove their cattle with them. Many days the travelling was slow and very bad, and the roads were bush-roads and Indian trails. Every night and morning the cows had to be milked, and, as a consequence, they had to stop frequently to churn and to make bread. This lasted for many weeks until they reached West Flamboro. After getting a home chopped out and a bright prospect in view, Mrs. Hopkins died, leaving him with a family of small children. Mr. Hopkins knew he couldn't possibly be mother and father both to his children, so he wrote to his dead wife's sister, who was still living in New Jersey, asking her to be his second wife.

The postal facilities were not as complete then as they are to-day; it sometimes took days or weeks to deliver a letter where now it takes but a few hours. The mail was carried by neighbours or couriers to a more thickly settled centre where it was taken by stage coach.

The duties of the household pressed heavily upon him, and as no answer came he decided that she didn't care enough about it to answer or that she hadn't gotten the letter, so he asked a woman whom he had met in Flamboro to accept the position of stepmother to his family. She readily consented and they were married at the first opportunity.

After the wedding Mr. Hopkins got an answer from his sister-in-law accepting him. The poor man was in a predicament. He went to his brother in agony exclaiming, "Oh! Gabriel, what shall I do?" Gabriel answered, "Silas, what can you do?" Silas had the extreme pleasure of writing to his sister-in-law explaining the situation.

A few years passed and Canada was again plunged into war, and we find Silas Hopkins in the war of 1812-14. The war in Canada dragged along slowly, the Americans holding sway, but it was not to last for very long, although General Harrison had control of the west and York was captured. The Battle of Queenston Heights (Oct. 13, 1812) was over and the men who were wounded in the battle were home on furlough. One of these was Isaac Corman. He was setting a few posts for a sluice-way near the road on the afternoon of June the fifth, 1813, when the American army under Chandler and Winder marched up the stone road toward Hamilton. When about a mile east of Stoney Creek, the leader of the advance guard observed Corman at work. He approached and asked him where the Indians were camped, if they were on the mountain. The Americans had a great fear of the Indians. The officer asked several questions and to each Corman answered, "I don't know." Disappointed at gaining so little information, the officer drew his sword and held it over his head exclaiming, "What in —— do you know?" Corman calmly replied, "I am in your power, but I know you are no gentleman, or you wouldn't speak like that."

For his impudence, the officer ordered his arrest and he was taken to camp. Instead of going right to the Gage homestead, as many suppose they did, some of the American army turned north

on what is now known as Lake Avenue, and followed the lake shore to the old Lottridge homestead. Mr. Lottridge kept the Government House, or King's Head Inn, which was built during Governor Simcoe's regime, and was situated between the lake and Lottridge's Creek, or as it is now, it was immediately south of the filtering basin.

The Americans took complete possession of it, dumping barrels of flour, pork and provisions into the creek. Mrs. Lottridge and the children took refuge in the woods; her husband was at that time fighting in the British ranks.

The Americans camped near this Government House, expecting soldiers and supplies by boat. These boats had been delayed and the army ran short of provisions, so they had to go to the Gage homestead where the commissariat was. Here they camped for the night.

While camped on the beach, Corman heard the officers speak of Kentucky, so he remarked that he too was from Kentucky. Then they fell into conversation, and when the officers learned that he was a first cousin of General Harrison, commander of the forces in the west, they told him he might go home. He thanked them but asked how he was to pass the picket line. They rashly gave him the password for the night. He successfully passed the sentries and started home. When about two miles from home he met his wife's youngest brother who had come to hunt him up. Mrs. Corman had grown anxious and her brother had volunteered to search for him. This young fellow was William Green, better known as Billy Green, the Scout. He and his brother Levi were at their sister's, Mrs Annie Muir, for dinner. She lived on top of the Grimsby Mountain. While here the boys heard quite a noise in the direction of Grimsby Village, and, going to the brow of the mountain, they saw the American army marching westward toward Stoney Creek. They started for home at once, keeping the mountain top road all the way, and they arrived at Stoney Creek ahead of the Americans. They broke the news to the few settlers in the vicinity. There was an exciting time for a few hours. The villagers and surrounding settlers

gathered together their few belongings to conceal them from the enemy. These poor creatures were nearly all U. E. Loyalists or descendants, and they had had a hard struggle to make a home for their families in the new country.

Later in the afternoon the enemy came in view, passed the Corman homestead, taking Corman with them, and came to Stoney Creek. They halted at the inn kept by John Brady for drink and food. They made further enquiries about the Indians.

After devouring all the eatables in sight and draining the town pump, the order was given to advance, and the long straggling column slowly proceeded on their weary journey toward Burlington Heights, but when just outside the village the supply wagons halted at the Gage homestead for the night. The few cavalry and the infantry camped here after returning from the lake.

In the meantime Corman had given the countersign, "Will. Hen. Har.," to Green, who started for home on the mountain. He borrowed his brother Levi's horse, called "Tip," and about midnight he started for General Vincent's camp by a circuitous route up and around the mountain, past Albion Mills and around the brow of the mountain to Vincent's camp. He told them his errand and urged them to make haste, but they doubted his word. After much questioning they were finally convinced. Harvey asked Green if he knew the road, and when he said "Yes, I know every foot of it," Harvey told Green to take the lead and he rode at his side to the Battlefield at Stoney Creek.

Many will think Corman betrayed a trust in giving the countersign, but when you consider the strength of the Americans in Canada and the seriousness of it all, it is conceded that he did a very noble and patriotic deed.

After meeting Green, Corman went on home, but he had not gone far when five Americans overtook him and went home with him. It was like locking the stable door after the horse was

stolen. They stayed with him all night, two watching him for the first half of the night and the other two for the last half, the sergeant changing the watches. Corman slept very little, he saw the joke (?) too well. About four o'clock in the morning he asked the sergeant if he heard firing. The sergeant said it was the reveille of the camp. Corman buried his head in the bed to smother the laughter. Had the Americans ever found out what he had done, I would hate to think of the results.

Billy Green led the forces down the Lewis Lane. They could not follow the bush road as the Americans had two cannons there, facing the west. From there they saw the camp-fires and Green led the men in a southeasterly direction across the flats of the creek, up its banks and full upon the enemy. The greatest silence was observed throughout.

Then followed the Battle of Stoney Creek, pretty much as it is described in our histories. The little old log church which stood just west of the battlefield was riddled with bullets. This church was one of the extremely few in this country. People came for miles and miles to hear the Gospel here. One man brought his family from Flamboro to attend church. It took him several days to come and go. The ministers came sometimes from Niagara, and then travelled back again. The structure was pretty badly destroyed, so they put siding on it consisting of rough boards. This was torn down about forty years ago. Many of the residents of Stoney Creek remember it, the boys, now men, gathered the old handmade nails or picked up bullets as they fell out of the walls. The churchyard still remains.

After the battle, six or eight Americans were found hiding under the house. Possibly this and similar cases will help to account for the number of Americans who were never accounted for. In looking over the cannons captured, General Chandler was found hiding under one. When the British attempted to take him prisoner he tried to get off on the plea that he was no soldier. Harvey smiled and said, "I see you are no soldier." It is thought he was hoping to escape the British, and, if possible, make his departure by night.

There have been many disputes about the spelling of the name of this historic hamlet, but the correct spelling is Stoney Creek, as a man named Mr. Stoney settled along the creek running near the village. It was known as Stoney's Creek. The apostrophe and s are dropped, making it Stoney Creek. It is not called Stoney Creek because of the stones of which the creek boasts, as many suppose.

While the men were at war our women were not idle. They had to go ahead and do all the farm work. The Indians were constantly plundering the houses of the defenceless women. . Mrs. Yeager had tolerated these raids until she decided she would stand it no longer. Next time they came to her, demanding food or supplies, she picked up the huge poker lying beside the fireplace and mowed the Indians down from left to right. The rest backed out of the door fearing a similar fate and vowed vengeance on her. She kept on the alert and one day an Indian appeared at the back of the house where she was making maple sugar. The syrup was boiling in the kettles and she stood stirring it. Her first thought was that the Indians had come to wreak their vengeance, so she called out to him to bring them on, she was ready for them. The Indian turned and ran. When she was relating this story, we asked her what she would have done, and she said she would have thrown dippersful of the boiling syrup at them. She thought this was the best weapon she could have used.

In other homes, they sprinkled gunpowder around the house or built fires of pine stumps to keep the wolves from the door. If the children were late in bringing up the cows from the woods, they heard the howls of wolves lurking in the shadows.

Living in this civilized country of to-day we do not half appreciate it. Listen to some old settler tell stories of the pioneer days of Wentworth and if you do not swell with reverence for our nation-builders, it is not because there is no cause for it. Many of our greatest heroes live, die and are buried without recognition. One of these is Billy Green. The fate of Canada rested upon his shoulders and see how well he responded. We may

thank him, for one, for our Canada, and yet practically no one knows where he is buried. How can we help being such a prosperous people when we consider our ancestry, the bravest and truest men and women who ever lived.

As the situation in Canada was becoming very serious, the Canadians realized their position and called out all the men who could hold a gun.

One boy, Jacob Garner, was only sixteen years of age when called out. He and a younger brother, who had to assume the duties of the farm during their father's absence in battle, were plowing with two yoke of oxen for the summer's crop. While still plowing Jacob was called to serve in the battle of Chippewa, 1814. He unyoked the oxen and left the plow, chains and yokes in the furrow. In the fall these were found overgrown with grass.

Many interesting incidents occurred during his service; also some pretty gruesome ones. One of the troopers, a neighbour of Garner's, was riding along when he was struck by a spent bullet. As he fell off his horse, he cried out, "Go ahead, boys, I am wounded," but finding that no bones were broken, he remounted and took his place in the ranks. After the battle several troopers examined the wound and found that the skin was not even broken but there was a very bad bruise. Needless to say they had much sport at his expense.

During Jacob Garner's station at Fort George (now Niagara-on-the-Lake), he was sent home fifteen miles for a supply of tobacco. The men had run out and one of Garner's neighbours had a supply of home-grown tobacco which he offered. Before setting out, an officer cautioned him to be on the alert for Indians, as a lot of American Indians were camped on this side of the river. He gave him a generous drink of Jamaica rum to brace him up. In due time Garner returned with the tobacco, and when asked how he got along he said, "Fine. As long as the rum stayed with me I felt as if I could whip all the redskins in North America, but later, when I spied several Indians on the far side

of a clearing, I at once dropped behind the first log I found; but, Captain, I got back all right." Probably his Jamaica rum did not serve its purpose very faithfully.

The saddest of all his experience was when he was drafted to carry out a sentence of court-martial. One of the men had deserted and had been caught in the act. The penalty was death by court-martial. Jacob Garner was only seventeen and was detailed in a squad to carry out the sentence. A comrade, who was well advanced in years, could not bear to see this mere boy do such a deed. He offered to take his place and was accepted, but the boy had to witness it. He would never have known if he had shot him, as several muskets were loaded with blank cartridges. The deserter was dressed in white according to the orders at that time. His grave was dug and he was placed beside it. Garner said it was the most awful sight he ever saw, to see the expression on the face of the deserter as he fell into his grave and to see the blood streaming down over the white robes. It was a sight he never forgot.

What brave men and patriotic, our good old pioneers must have been! Think what they endured and suffered for home and Canada. One man left his wife at home very sick. He worried so that one night he quietly left the camp and stole home. He arrived in time to see her die. He dug her grave by night and buried her. In the morning he went back to fight for his country. Although he had done a serious thing, the officer's heart relented and he overlooked it.

Our men were brave; so, too, were our women. As Napoleon said, "It was not England's soldiers who defeated me; it was her spindles." So it might be said that the Canadian women were the mainspring of the heroic deeds of our men. This is shown in an example at the time of the Fenian raids. Mrs. Carter and her sister, Martha Scholfield, were left alone, Mrs. Carter's husband and their father having gone to fight. The second storey of the house was filled with arms and ammunition. They guarded this, never opening the door except with the greatest

precautions. One night a knock came, and after asking who was there and being told it was a friend, she calmly remarked that if they were friends they wouldn't mind staying out. They went away and left them alone. They always thought it was some enemy.

When the house was relieved of the arms the women became Florence Nightingales and tended to the wounded. Once when Fenians were brought in, Mrs. Carter asked her sister if she thought she could take as good care of them as of her Canadian boys. She said she always cared for the Canadians first.

These are our noble ancestors.

Pioneer Days

BY HELEN GIBSON.

I wanted a story of the Copes, the earliest settlers of Southern Beverly, so I went to Mrs. Inksetter, the great granddaughter of William Cope and grandmother of Conrad Cope, and she gladly told me of early days.

Though eighty-six years of age, her mind is as vigorous and her memory as clear as ever it was. She can remember eighty years ago, when the deer, following their beaten path, came to drink at the pond to the north of her home; she can remember the wild pigeons in numbers that blackened the sky, and the wolves that howled around their sheep fold. She often tells of how, one night, the wolves killed several sheep. In the morning her grandfather bade her run and tell her uncle to come and help to skin the carcasses. As she ran through the open fields and into the forest on her way to her uncle's, she quaked with fear; behind every bush a forest wolf sulked, his fierce eyes glaring, and red tongue licking the terrible fangs! That night in her little trundle bed she dreamed the wolves had got her at last!

In 1785, William Cope, his wife, aged mother-in-law, and five sons, with their wives and children, left their comfortable homes in New York State and started for Upper Canada. There they intended to make a home in the wilderness, in a land where the Union Jack could still wave. Carrying their household goods with them they travelled many weary miles. Coming at last to the Niagara River they crossed above the Falls, and for ten years lived along the river. They then left that district and made their way by boat along the shores of the lake to Burlington Bay.

The small boats were heavily laden and several times they were swamped and their occupants soaked in the icy water. So they would be forced to land and build great fires to dry their clothing and warm their chilled limbs. The old grandmother was their greatest care. Often the sturdy grandsons would carry her from the boat to be first on the beach, for she, brave woman, was a hundred years old, and she had come with them to end her days in the wilderness.

They landed at the place where Hamilton now stands, a swampy district overgrown with Indian grass. The mosquitoes and rattlesnakes drove them farther inland, so they finally settled in Beverly. It was April when they came and started pioneer life in that dense forest.

With only axe and auger for tools, they built their log cabin, using clay for plaster, and bass wood bark for roofing. They cleared a little field and planted Indian corn. Apple seeds, too, were planted, that later grew into fruitful trees, and a little garden flourished in the heart of the forest.

Their food that year consisted of fish from the streams, game from the forest and cornbread. One of their great difficulties was in getting their corn ground, for the nearest mill was at Niagara, sixty miles away. To overcome this, a mortar and pestle were made of hardwood, and in the evenings the neighbours would gather and grind the corn into flour.

At first they had no stock, but after a few years they managed to get a few cows, sheep and pigs. Then indeed they felt rich, for they spun the wool into yarn, and wove it into warm woollen cloth. Before this their clothing had been made from coarse linen, which was none too warm in winter. Their food supply, too, was much more generous.

Conrad Cope, one of the sons, settled with his wife and little ones on the farm now owned by Robert Inksetter. His wife was from Long Island, where her father owned a large estate and

many slaves. She had been accustomed to a life of luxury, as the wardrobe she took with her showed, but bravely she faced the hardships of those early days, and endured without a murmur the discomforts of pioneer life in Upper Canada. But there is a limit to even a brave woman's patience. The people were all very democratic in those days. One morning, while Conrad Cope and his wife were at breakfast, a negro came to the door of their cabin. Mr. Cope hospitably invited him to sit down and have some breakfast. This he did, but Sarah Sands Cope arose from the table. She said afterwards to her husband that her father would have disowned her if he had known her to sit at the table with a negro.

At husking bees, camp meetings and weddings the pioneers enjoyed social times. The backwoods girls, short and tall, stout and thin, alike borrowed Mrs. Cope's silk dresses for their weddings. For once in their simple lives they heard the rustle of silken skirts and felt the soft fall of lace over their toil worn hands. After the wedding the gown would be duly returned to the owner.

The aged grandmother lived for seven years in that new home. She loved to wander through the little garden and watch the green things grow. In the late summer days it was her delight to pick the green cucumbers that grew so well in that rich soil. The spicy breath from the pines would fan her wrinkled cheek as she stood there thinking of her childhood's home. Did her dim old eyes see the lovely panorama that stretched before her —the hills and valleys, the forest, and beyond the glint of that blue inland sea? At the ripe age of one hundred and seven she was "gathered unto her fathers," the first white woman laid to rest in the wilderness of Beverly pines.

Retrospective
1915

By The Secretary.

The departure from the conventional which characterized the arrangement for the 22nd Annual Meeting of our Society proved to be so enjoyable that it will probably establish the practice of out-door annuals at least. This departure consisted in making the newly acquired and beautiful Wabasso Park the place of meeting, and combining business with pleasure, in the shape of a basket picnic. The business meeting, following a ramble through the Park, consisted in the election of officers, routine business, passing accounts, electing new members, followed by an interesting statement by Mr. K. Martin on the landing place of La Salle, on his visit to the neutral village at Lake Medad. His researches pointed to this Park as the probable location, and suggested that a monument be erected to mark the spot. Mr. Geo. Nursey spoke of his early experiences in Canada in his usual humorous style.

The terrible war has interfered sadly with the Society's work. So many calls for money and effort has absorbed the interest and effort of all classes, so societies such as ours necessarily suffer.

An open meeting in November brought out some excellent papers by pupils of our Model School, as printed in this volume.

Michael Showers:

Loyalist, Ranger, Citizen

By J. H. Smith.

Biography is simply a department of history, but nevertheless a very important one, for no events of a really national character have ever occurred except under the guidance of a strong minded and intelligent leader. Biography bears the same relation to history as an individual does to a nation. Biography is the story of a person, history of a community of persons—a nation. Biography deals with the incidents and events peculiar to the life of an individual; history with the larger events that affect the nation as a whole. Thus it will be readily seen that biography is a phase of history in a concrete form, and is limited in its application to a single personality. Hence while we may find it difficult to form a correct mental image of an event as it affects a nation, it will be comparatively easy to do so when associated with an individual. Biography may therefore be considered as the foundation of which history is the superstructure, and all memoirs, sketches, and biographies may be regarded as valuable material for the historian.

I have said this much about the relation of these two subjects to one another for the specific purpose of directing your minds to the consideration of the life and character of one Michael Showers, Loyalist, Ranger and Citizen, who was one of the representative loyalists that settled at the "Head of the Lake" during the last decade of the eighteenth century. By representative, I simply mean one who is a fair type of a class of people, who ranks as a private citizen, who shares their experiences, and who is familiar with the human life they lead. Very frequently we have placed before us the story of the lives of those in official positions, but seldom of those in the more seclud-

ed walks of life. The story of the common people is a very interesting one, though it may be void of stirring events, yet it bears its share of the tragedies and comedies of life. What I chiefly desire to do is to present to the reader a picture of the times in which he lived, of the environment of the people, their manner of living, and their aspirations. It may be said in passing, and you will pardon me for referring to it, that I am one of the descendants of the family of which he was the head, and that I have in my posession some facts not too generally known to the present generation. I have a very clear recollection, as a child, of seeing most of his sons and daughters, for they visited at my grandfather's home occassionally, where I then lived. And I have heard them tell many stories of the hardships they encountered, the privations they endured, as well as the labors they performed, while hewing out for themselves homes in the forests of our country. We can, at least, form only an imperfect conception of what they did and what they endured. Their record is embodied in the princely heritage they have left us, in our homes, our liberties and our British connection. All honour to them.

Michael Showers was of German descent, and was born in the year 1733, in the state of Pennsylvania. He was married to a Miss Van Tock when he was twenty-three years of age. She was a lineal descendant of the famous Anneke Jans, and consequently was of Dutch descent, with a strain of Swedish blood in her veins, which she inherited from her grandfather, Abraham Van Tock, a Swedish settler in New Jersey.

Michael Showers was first and foremost a U. E. Loyalist of the most pronounced type. He was a full private in Col. Butler's famous battalion, known to us as "Butler's Rangers," and last, but not least, he was an honoured citizen of the new province of Upper Canada from the time it was separated from Lower Canada by the Constitutional Act of 1791.

To every student of history it is a well known fact that during the 18th century the principal official positions in the colonies were filled by members of the families of the upper and middle

classes of the people of Great Britain, while the tillers of the soil, the mechanics and the tradesman belonged to the peasantry or lower classes.

The representatives of the official classes have received their due meed of praise for the work they did so well, but few, if any, of the great army of toilers, the common people, the Loyalists for love of British rule, for the prestige of British Citizenship, and for the honour of the King, have been brought before the public, so that their true place in history may be definitely fixed. It is true that it may be somewhat late in the day to present their claims for recognition, to pay a just tribute to their loyalty, and to their worth as citizens, but now we are in a much better position to judge truly of their character, of the work they have done, and the influence they have wielded in making and retaining Canada as one of the greatest of the sons of that mother of nations—Great Britain.

Michael Showers, as a representative of the common people, claims recognition as a loyalist for services rendered, for he and his brother and his father were volunteers in the British army from 1777 to 1783, and endured the hardships of many a severe and trying campaign during the Revolutionary War. When the war broke out his home was near the present city of Pittston, in the valley of the Wyoming, celebrated for its beauty by Thomas Campbell in his poem, "Gertrude of Wyoming." Nor was it for its beauty alone that it was noted. The fertility of its soil, the picturesqueness of its environment, and the convenience of its water communication made it a very desirable location for a home.

Historians have called the battle of Wyoming a massacre, and have pictured it as one of great cruelty and bloodshed. It must be borne in mind that this was a battle between two bodies of trained soldiers and not a massacre of helpless women and children. These were protected and placed within forts for safety. At the first battle, the rebels attacked the loyalists and were defeated with great slaughter, and fled in dismay. Later

on a second battle was fought, and the remaining loyalists were driven from their homes. They were forced to leave all behind. In their retreat to Niagara and Lachine, the two points in Canada they desired to reach, they suffered untold hardships and privations.

I will give you the story of this first flight as told by one who is thoroughly conversant with the loyalist side of the question. The writer of the letter from which I am about to quote, tells the story as her grandmother told it to her. "As I remember it," my grandmother said, "my father and my two brothers joined the loyalist party in the year 1776, and went with the British to the seat of war. My father and one of my brothers held commissions, but of what class I do not know. My brother was killed, or died from wounds, and was buried in St. Mark's Churchyard, Niagara. When the war began, we lived on a beautiful farm in the Wyoming valley, on the banks of the Susquehanna, and were in very comfortable circumstances as compared with our neighbors. My mother was left at home to look after the family and the farm. One day we were driven from our comfortable homes and were forced to leave them. I had been sent out to play with the children near the banks of the river. This was in the spring of 1781 or 1782, I am not exactly sure which year. While we were playing, I saw my mother and my eldest sister running rapidly towards us, evidently in much distress. At her command, we ran to the landing place and got into the boats. She then told us that the rebels were coming after us and destroying everything. The other loyalist families took to their boats, and in the course of time, after suffering many privations and much hardship, we arrived at Lachine in Canada. The only thing I remember mother bringing with her was an apron which she snatched from a chair and threw over her head. We left the dinner cooking on the kitchen stove, the cattle and the sheep in the barnyard and the horses in the stable; all were taken by the rebels, and we have never received any compensation for the loss we then sustained.

"After we reached Lachine, we were billeted out for some time, with but scanty rations and clothing, furnished by the

British Government. Early in the fall, we were ordered to proceed to Niagara, again in open boats. We were a long time in reaching our destination, as we had to travel mostly by night, and lie in ambush for hours in the daytime. We were mostly supplied with provisions by friendly Indians, who also set up beacon lights to guide us. On one occasion we were so nearly starving that the mothers were deliberating upon killing the dogs that were with us to supply food for the famishing children. Fortunately for us, some friendly Indians met us and gave us some bean bread, which lasted until we were met by the soldiers who were sent as a convoy to convey us to Niagara.

"The meeting of friends after a long separation, that had been full of dangers and privations, was an event never to be forgotten. Words fail to express what was said and done. The change from real danger to comparative safety soon restored our spirits, and we were quite happy. Once more we were billeted out, but not for any great length of time. My lot was cast in the home of Col. Butler, where I remained for some months. They were childless and wanted to adopt me, but my mother would not consent. I was married to Captain John Aikman of Queenston. He was of Scottish descent, though born in the north of Ireland, and many of the family are still living in Scotland. During the war he had charge of the repairs of the artillery, and when it closed we moved to the Head of the Lake, and settled in what is now the Township of Barton."

For some time prior to the breaking out of hostilities between the American Colonists and the mother country, special efforts were made by the rebels to enlist the Six Nation Indians in their cause. Fortunately for the British, Sir William Johnston, sometimes called "Mohawk Johnston," was at that time at the head of Indian affairs and was Superintendent of the Northern tribes. Undoubtedly, he was the most influential and most skillful man in the Province of New York in dealing with these people. He had been very successful in enlisting this powerful confederacy against the aggressions of the French, and as a reward for his services received a grant of 100,000 acres of land

from the King. To retain his influence, and to strengthen his power over them, he at times adopted their dress and manners, joined in their festivities, and conformed to their customs. In all his business transactions he was strictly honest, and in administering the law he gave them even-handed justice. By his honesty and his uprightness he cemented their friendship and strengthened their confidence in the integrity of the British. This was of the greatest importance at this time, for the rebels were using every means in their power to break this alliance, but their most strenuous efforts failed to accomplish their purpose.

In the ordinary walks of life, Sir William Johnston was a man of quiet and reserved manner, and possessed remarkable control over his temper an dover his tongue, but when occasion demanded it, he was a man of action, and was gifted with a strong, rugged eloquence that appealed to these people. In July, 1774, a general council of these tribes was held at his home, called for the purpose of discussing certain wrongs the Indians had suffered at the hands of the white people, as well as the murder of some of their friends. The Indians were in an ugly temper, for they felt keenly the wrongs they had suffered, and were determined on vengeance. Sir William delivered a tactful and persuasive address, which soothed their ruffled tempers and prevented any untoward action on their part. He then retired to his private room, took a glass of wine, for the day was very hot, leaned back in his chair and died without a struggle. This was a very serious calamity for the loyalists, for there was no person to fill his place and control the Indians as he had done.

Guy Johnston and Colonel Daniel Claus were sons-in-law of Sir William Johnston, the former being Deputy Superintendent of the Six Nations and of the Western Indians, and the latter of the Canadian Indians. Neither of these men possessed the necessary tact and shrewdness to handle these people to advantage. Moreover, there was more or less official jealousy between them which kept cropping out, and added greatly to the difficulties of the situation. Another man that came into prominence at this

time was John Butler, the son of an Irish subaltern, and whose son afterwards played an important part in this great war, as the commander of that famous battalion, Butler's Rangers.

Owing to a difference of opinion regarding the employment of Indians in offensive operations, and some other difficulties that had aggravated the situation from time to time, Guy Johnston and Colonel Claus applied for leave of absence and sailed for England in November, 1775. At this juncture, Colonel Butler was sent to Niagara to use his influence in preserving the good-will of the Indians, in which he was only partially successful, owing to the opposition of Captain Joseph Brant. Information from the border settlements came to him quite frequently, for a constant stream of fugitives succeeded in reaching the Niagara River. The stories they told of the hardships endured by the loyalists showed the authorities the necessity there existed for prompt and decisive action. Letters were received asking Colonel Butler to form a body of rangers, and many volunteered for that service. After much trouble, some misgivings and not a few disappointments, Colonel Butler, in June, 1777, was able to send Governor Carlton a list of five captains, nine lieutenants, and seventy-five rangers, most of whom could speak some of the Indian languages.

A battle was fought near Fort Stanwic, where the City of Rome, N. Y., now stands, which gave the victory to Col. Butler, but when he reached the Fort itself he found it too strong to capture, and so this preliminary victory was practically barren of results. Butler then went to Quebec to see the Governor, Sir Guy Carleton, and get his permission to organize a battalion of rangers. This was accomplished, and he received official instructions to raise eight companies, each composed of a captain, a lieutenant, three sergeants, three corporals, and fifty privates. Two of these companies were to be formed of the people speaking the Indian language and acquainted with their customs and manner of making war, and were to receive four shillings New York currency (50c) a day. The remaining companies to be composed of people well acquainted with the woods. In con-

sideration of the fatigue they were likely to suffer they were to be paid two shillings a day. Officers and privates were required to clothe and arm themselves entirely at their own expense. This is the organization of Butler's Rangers, in which battalion Michael Showers and his two eldest sons served as privates.

When the war was concluded, and the Treaty of Peace duly signed by the proper authorities, his regiment was disbanded. Many of the members settled around the Head of the Lake, and along the southern shore of Lake Ontario, took up land and proceeded to clear it and provide themselves with homes. Michael Showers, sr., settled on Lot 13 in the First Concession of West Flamboro (now part of the Town of Dundas), where he spent the remainder of his days. In selecting farms these men, whenever possible, chose lots through which there were streams of running water. The more ambitious and far-sighted were careful to select a lot where the stream was rapid, thus forming a mill site. Michael Showers was one of these, and soon had in operation one of the old-fashioned saw mills still to be found in some parts of this province. This mill was the first of the many manufactories which have helped to make the town of Dundas.

Time will not permit to enter into details regarding his descendants. It will, however, be of interest to know that Michael Showers and Hannah Van Tock had twelve children. Of the sons that were privates in Butler's Rangers, one was buried in Old St. Mark's, Niagara; the other we have no trace of.

Sarah, the eldest daughter, born in 1761, married David Van Every in 1782; Elizabeth, born Feb. 27, 1764, married Lieut. Peter M. Ball; Magdalene, born in 1765, married Capt. Wm. Depew; Hannah, born Sept. 30, 1769, married Capt. John Aikman, Aug. 13, 1787; Lieut. Michael, born in 1771, married Eleanor Thorne in 1792; Ann, born in 1774, married Isaac Smith in 1794; John, born in 1776, married, no family; Mary, born in 1781, married Wm. Lottridge in 1800; Katy, born in 1784, married Charles Stewart, no family; Major Daniel, born in 1787, married Miss Lawrason, no family.

MICHAEL SHOWERS' WILL.

In the name of God, Amen, the fifth day of April, in the year of our Lord, 1796, I, Michael Showers, Senior, in the Township of Flamborough, Gentleman, being very sick and weak in body but of perfect mind and memory, thanks be given to God therefor, calling into mind the mortality of my body and knowing that it is appointed for all men to die, do make, and ordain this my last will and testament, that is to say, principally and first of all, I give and recommend my soul into the hands of God that gave it, and for my body I recommend it to the earth to be buried in a Christian like and decent manner, at the decision of my executors, nothing doubting but at the general resurrection, I shall receive the same again by the mighty power of God, and as touching such worldly estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me in this life, I give, devise and dispose of the same in the following manner and form:—It is my will and I do order that in the first place all my just debts and funeral charges be paid and satisfied. I give and bequeath unto Hannah, my dearly beloved wife, all my effects as long as she is my widow, if it should be the will of God that my wife or widow should die before my youngest children are of age, or my youngest son Daniel is Twenty-one years of age, I would wish the property to stay together for the support of the Orphan children; if my widow is yet alive after the children are of age, the property is not to be divided until her death, and then to divide the moveables equal among all my children, except my eldest son Michael one yoke of good oxen and John two yoke of good oxen, likewise Daniel two yoke of good oxen, this to be extraordinary above my daughters.

N. B.—The land is to be divided thus:—Daniel is to have three hundred acres and John one hundred. And the improved lands to be divided equal, John to have one part and Daniel the other. This is to them, their heirs and assigns forever. I choose

Peter Ball and my son Michael to be the executors. I would wish the children to have learning to read and write. Ratifying and confirming this and no other to be my last will and testament, in witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal the day and year above written.

Signed, sealed and published and pronounced and declared by the said Michael Showers as his last will and testament in the presence of us the subscribers.

MICHAEL SHOWERS

(Seal.)

John Mills.
Ralph Morden.

Memo.—Paper bears water mark 1794.

Historical Notes

By JUSTUS A. GRIFFIN

The great war in Europe, Asia and Arica, in which this country is taking an active part, overshadows and dwarfs the happenings in our own locality. The events of the war, however, are being recorded with much care by specialists who are devoting their time to that work, and it behooves us, as a local society, to make note of those things in our neighborhood that may be of interest in years to come. Yet the time your historian has free for the work and the space at his disposal are quite limited, so the notes must be brief, and by no means complete.

MILITARY.

Early in the war the 4th (Hamilton) Battery of Field Artillery went as a unit to Europe, and in the time which has since elapsed Hamilton has contributed nearly 8,000 men to the various corps for overseas service. Up to June 1, 1916, this (No. 2) Military District had enlisted 75,341 men for the war, which is more than double the number supplied by the whole Province of Quebec (Districts No. 4 and No. 5), and more than any other of the twelve Military Districts in Canada. No. 2 District includes Toronto and Hamilton with several smaller cities and a number of counties. The total number credited to Ontario at that date was 138,449 out of the total of 332,364 enrolled in the Dominion.

It is but a few years since the highest military rank in the Canadian service was that of Lieut.-Colonel; now there are many Colonels, Brigadier Generals and even a few Major Generals. The homes of two of the Generals are in Hamilton. They are Brig. Gen. Sir John M. Gibson and Brig. Gen. W. A. Logie, the latter being in command of No. 2 District. Several Hamilton men are

on the staff of Gen. Logie, among them being Colonel S. C. Mewburn, Lieut.-Colonel (Dr.) George Acheson and Lieut.-Col. (Rev.) George H. Williams, D.D.

The casualty lists of the war include the names of a number of Hamilton men, many of them members of prominent families. I have not obtained a complete list, but believe that the names are all being kept by officials and will be preserved either in the City Hall or the Public Library, or both. However, I have noted the names of a few of those who have been killed, as follows: Lieut.-Col. W. R. Marshall; Major Leckie, son of our City Treasurer; Capt. Frederick G. McLaren, son of the late Lieut.-Col. Henry McLaren; Capt. McNair; Lieut. F. M. Gibson, son of Brig. General Sir John M. Gibson; Lieutenants Washington, Herbt. R. Daw and H. R. Thomson; Sergt.-Major Wm. Warwick and John R. Lumsden, of the Army Y. M. C. Assn.

The manufacture of war munitions and the bountiful harvests have both contributed to keep our factories busy, while the number of men withdrawn by the overseas forces is making it very difficult to turn out the work required. Notwithstanding the difficulties, additions have become necessary for many of the factories, and some new industries have been commenced. In the present condition of affairs there is no reason for any able-bodied man or woman to be out of employment.

NEW BUILDINGS.

There has not been much speculative building during the past year and the wish to economize, coupled with a conservative money market, has prevented the erection of some needed buildings. Consequently there is a shorter list to present than in last year's report. There have been no new school buildings started in Hamilton, but the Robert Land School, which was opened last autumn, is already too small, and tenders have been let for an eight-room addition. Plans are being laid and the land has been bought for a large new technical school, while in the County of Wentworth also new schools have been completed. Pessimists

have voiced the opinion that the population of Hamilton was being greatly depleted, but our school statistics tell a different story. There were 819 more pupils on the rolls of our public schools in May, 1916, than there were in May last year, and 1477 more than in April, 1913. I haven't the figures for the Separate Schools, but believe they show a similar increase.

Only two churches have been completed since our last volume was printed, both Anglican. They are, St. Peter's, on Main street east, and St. James, on Ottawa street, north of Barton. Other buildings of a public nature which are in course of erection are the new Hospital on the Mountain, an addition to St. Joseph's Hospital, and the Mercantile Trust Company building on Main street, near James. The I. O. F. Hall on Main street east, near Ferguson Ave., was completed and occupied some months ago. The new Connaught Hotel is now practically completed and has been formally opened. It is one of the finest and largest in Canada and well situated, though it has not such a commanding position nor such spectacular surroundings as the Chateau Frontenac at Quebec, the Chateau Laurier in Ottawa, or The Empress of Victoria, B. C.

Of buildings that interest the public generally, while entirely commercial in their purpose, are the T. Eaton Co. factory on John and Hughson streets, and the new Arcade Department store on James street, both of which are nearing completion and add greatly to the central part of the city.

The following figures obtained from the Building Inspector's office, being extracts from records for year ending Oct. 31, 1915, will give some idea of the progress of the city:

Building Permits—New Buildings	$1,736,690.00
Building Permits, Alterations	736,788.00
202 Brick Dwellings, estimated cost	733,680.00
54 Frame Dwellings, estimated cost	33,910.00

It may be noted that people applying for permits generally estimate the cost at considerably less than is shown by the actual result. In recording the growth of the city a noticeable feature

is the great increase in the number of apartment houses and flats. Several commodious and attractive buildings of this character have been erected during the past year, and many of the alteration permits have been for the purpose of enlarging and altering dwellings and business buildings to serve as apartment houses or flats.

THE DEPARTED.

Death has removed many who had been long resident in this city, some of them belonging to families which settled here when the place was known as the Head of the Lake. The following names by no means include all, but are those noted by your historian:

Campbell Ferrie, a native of Hamilton, died in Oct., 1915, in his sixty-sixth year; at the time of his death he was manager of the Hamilton Provident and Loan Society, an institution with which he had been identified for years. He was a member of the family which gave this city its first Mayor, Colin Ferrie, who occupied the chair in 1846.

At Winnipeg, on Nov. 13, 1915, there died a former Hamiltonian, Dr. W. H. Montague, who had been very prominent in political life as well as in the business world. He was born in Middlesex County, Ont., in 1853.

Colin C. Campbell, who died Nov. 15, 1915, was a native of Hamilton, and was senior member of the firm of R. Campbell & Sons, pottery manufacturers, a business established by his father. He served six years as a member of the Cemetery Board, in the work of which he was much interested and to which he devoted a great deal of his time, particularly during the three years he was chairman.

William W. Main, Assistant City Treasurer, died Nov. 5, 1915. Mr. Main was born in this city 55 years ago and spent all his life here. For many years he conducted a rope factory which had been established by his father. In 1903 he was elected alderman, receiving the second largest vote in an election at large, and

retained the confidence of the electors during the four years he was in the Council. Mr. Main was active in church life as well as in business and civic work. His eldest son is Capt. and Adjutant in the 86th Machine Gun Battalion, now in England.

Mrs. Keziah E. (Ford) Crossman, a daughter of Nehemiah Ford (the sixth mayor of Hamilton, who occupied the civic chair in 1852), died in this city Dec. 11. 1915.

Frederick W. Watkins, who died Dec. 11, 1915, was born and educated in Hamilton and spent practically all his life here. Mr. Watkins was not only an enterprising business man, but was interested in everything that tended to make people better and happier. He was strong in Christian faith, a great worker in the Y. M. C. A., in his church and in the cause of total abstinence and prohibition of the liquor traffic.

Dr. Algernon Woolverton, a member of a well-known United Empire Loyalist family, died in Florence, Italy, on Dec. 9, 1915. For many years he practiced his profession in Hamilton. He was medical examiner for the Federal Life Assurance Company, a member of the Board of Education and for several years was its representative on the Library Board, of which he was chairman in 1905.

Alexander Gillespie Ramsay, who was born in Edinburgh, Scotland, in 1829, died in Toronto, Ont., Dec., 1915. In 1859 Mr. Ramsay came to Canada to take the management of the Canada Life Assurance Company, the head office of which was then in Hamilton. He was President of the Company from 1875 till 1899, when he retired. In 1903 he removed to Toronto. During his long residence in this city he was associated with several financial institutions and took an active part in several clubs.

A few years ago a college professor in Edmonton, Alberta, contributed an article to one of our Canadian magazines, deprecating the tendency to boastfulness common among Canadians. Probably he was right in trying to curb that feature in

national life, but he was wrong in some of his statements. One thing he said was that there was no Canadian author nor engineer of international reputation, and another of his assertions was that no Canadian had made an invention known internationally. These assertions are without foundation, although one can imagine that the mistake arose from ignorance of the fact that no patent nor copyright can be secured in the United States after being patented or copyrighted in another country. The United States furnishing the largest market, Canadians have generally taken out their patents or copyrights in that country first. As a consequence the invention or the book has been called American. All this is introductory to a notice of the death of a Canadian inventor, whose discovery is known and used not only in America, but in Europe, Asia and Africa. Thos. L. Willson, who was a son of the late Thos. W. Willson, of Woodstock, a nephew of Hugh B. Willson, first editor of the Hamilton Times, and grandson of Hon. John Willson, of Winona, a prominent United Empire Loyalist and at one time Speaker of the Upper Canada Legislature. Mr. T. L. Willson was born at Princeton, Ont., and educated at the Collegiate Institute, Hamilton. He was employed as a druggist's assistant when he discovered acetylene gas, and invented the means for bringing it into practical use. He died in New York Dec. 22, 1915, his body being taken to his home in Ottawa.

George R. Roberts, born in England in 1839, died in Toronto, Jan. 12, 1916, was for many years a well-known business man in Hamilton. When a youth he was a fellow-worker, on the Canada Christian Advocate, with Mr. Richard Butler, the "Muser" of the Hamilton Spectator. He removed to Toronto in 1881 to become manager of the Canadian Baptist.

Charles D. Blachford was born in Hamilton, was educated here, and leaving school entered his father's office, became a partner in the business and continued in it till his death. He was very much interested in local history, though he never joined this society. He died on the 18th January, aged 59 years.

Mrs. Cynthia Elizabeth (Gage) Mills, widow of the late Nelson Mills and mother of Charles, Stanley, Robert and Edwin Mills, well-known business men of this city, died at her residence, Queen street south, on the 22nd January, 1916. Mrs. Mills was born in Burlington (then Wellington Square), in 1832. Her father belonged to the Loyalist family of Gage which settled at the Head of the Lake shortly after the war of the Revolution. Her maternal grandfather was the Hon. John Willson, of Winona. Mrs. Mills was an active member of the United Empire Loyalist Association and helped in its work. She was a devoted supporter of the Y. M. C. Association, having donated the lot on which its building is erected, and contributed largely to the funds raised for its construction. Other charitable, religious and temperance work always found in her a liberal supporter.

On January 20, 1916, another of the Gage family died in this city: Mrs. Alma Shepherdson (Gage) Ryckman, widow of Capt. Hamilton Ryckman, of Ryckman's Corners. Mrs. Ryckman had attained the advanced age of 92 years and 5 months.

This Society lost one of its most active, devoted and useful members when Mrs. Jane (Bennetts) Sutherland passed away, Feb. 18, 1916. Mrs. Sutherland found time not only for the many duties which devolve upon a pastor's wife, to which she attended with devotion, but her energetic and sympathetic ways were useful in other societies, particularly the Daughters of the Empire and the Wentworth Historical Society, in both of which she filled office for many years. Mrs. Sutherland was a native of St. Austell, Cornwall, England, and at the age of fifteen came to Canada with her father, the late James Bennetts, who came as Superintendent of the Duke of Wellington Mines, at Bruce Mines.

Lieut.-Col. Alexander Huggins Moore, who died in this city March 23, 1916, was a member of the Wentworth Historical Society from its early days. He was born in Ireland Aug. 15, 1842, and came to Hamilton with his parents in 1849. He received his education here and continued to be a citizen of Hamilton till his death. In his early days he entered a bank as clerk and after some years became manager of Stinson's Bank. For

several years past he has been in the insurance business. Col. Moore when a young man enlisted in the 13th Royal Regiment of this city. In 1866 he received a commission and remained with the regiment until he had served his term as commanding officer. He was for eleven years an alderman of the city and was afterward on the Hospital Board from 1896 till his death.

John T. Glassco, son of the late W. H. Glassco, died in this city April 4, 1916. He was born in Toronto in 1842 and came to Hamilton with his parents in 1843; he received his education in this city, and on leaving school entered the office of Geo. E. Forster & Co., wholesale grocers, where he remained some time. He left this position to enter business with his father. Later he fomed a partnerhip with the late T. H. Macpherson in the wholesale grocery business.

Student—

If there should be another flood
  For refuge hither fly;
Though all the world should be submerged.
  History would still be dry.

Professor—

When all the world has been submerged,
  No rocks appear on high;
With fear and trembling you will cling
  To History, because it's dry.

PAPERS AND RECORDS

OF THE

Wentworth Historical Society

Volume Eight

AUTHORS OF PAPERS ARE ALONE RESPONSIBLE FOR STATEMENTS AND OPINIONS EXPRESSED HEREIN

HAMILTON
The Griffin & Richmond Co., Ltd., Printers
1919

WENTWORTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

Officers

President . . . . . REV. P. L. SPENCER.
1st Vice-President . . . . . MRS. M. HENDERSON
2nd Vice-President . . . . . J. A. GRIFFIN
Secretary-Treasurer. . . . . J. H. LAND
Historian . . . . . J. A. GRIFFIN
Librarian . . . . . J. H. LAND
Auditor . . . . . W. A. DAVIDSON

Executive Committee:

Richard Butler
J. Gardner
Lt.-Col. J. A. Orr
J. G. Cloke
Kirwan Martin
A. C. Beasley
W. F. Moore
J. A. Barr
J. Plant

Ladies' Committee:

President—Mrs. M. Henderson, 47 Forest Ave.
Secretary—Mrs. J. Gardner, 138 Breadalbane St.

CONTENTS

Synopsis of Proceedings

1917 - 1918

GENERAL.

The only line of work available in these troublous times has been that of collecting information concerning the early settlers' families. Work that is becoming increasingly difficult as the years pass. So many have neglected to care for old documents and traditions. The Normal School staff took a most commendable step when it encouraged its pupils to write Historical sketches on this subject, resulting in some most interesting papers being written by them. An attempt was made to inaugurate stated monthly meetings as a means of reviving interest in our work, but failed to materialize. The disposal of the Museum fund of the Ladies' Committee received much consideration, and in November, 1918, the sum of $2,000 was invested in Victory Bonds, leaving a balance of $48.00 in the bank. The Bonds are held in the name of two trustees, viz., General Sir John M. Gibson and Kirwan Martin, Esq. Two additional offices were created, viz., a Historian and a Librarian. An attempt was made to secure room in the old Registry office building, but without success.

OPEN MEETINGS.

An open meeting was held on April 26th, 1917, when Canon Spencer read a paper on "Our Dominion," describing the Coat-of-Arms of each Province and the Dominion, with beautifully colored slides of each, as well as some views of historic or picturesque places.

At the Annual Meeting in Wabasso Park, Mr. W. F. Moore read a most interesting paper on "Old Dundas, and Mr. Mitchell followed with an address on the importance of preserving old family relics and records.

HISTORICAL LAND MARK.

In Wabasso Park was the landing place of Sieur De La Salle, the French explorer, when on his way to the Indian village at Lake Medad, and it is deemed of sufficient importance to warrant the Society in marking the spot with an inscribed stone, and steps are being taken to that end.

LIBRARY.

The Librarian's report shows 612 vols. duly catalogued and deposited in the Public Library basement, and a number of vols. waiting entry and classification.

FINANCES.

The Treasurer's books show a bank balance of $360.43, and no liabilities.

OBITUARY.

We have suffered the loss by death of some of our oldest and most valued members in the persons of Mr. J. H. Smith, our Past President; Mrs. Edward Martin, the first Treasurer of the Ladies' Committee; Mr. S. F. Lazier, one of our original Executive Council members; Mr. R. T. Steele, also for years a member of the Executive; Mr. T. H. A. Begue; Rev. J. H. Mahony, and Mrs. Clementina Fessenden, our Corresponding Secretary, an enthusiastic Imperialist, who gained word-wide fame as the "Mother" of Empire Day.

J. H. LAND, Sec.-Treas.

The Flag We Bear

Composed by CANON P. L. SPENCER.

Let us sing a song
As we march along,
A song of the flag we bear.
Let us tell what mean
The lines on it seen
In red, white and blue, so fair.
Let us mark its birth
And proclaim its worth,
For a place in fame it holds;
And we well may raise
A glad strain of praise
For the deeds done beneath its folds.

Chorus—

Oh, the flag we bear
Is beyond compare,
So carry it far afield;
Let the nations know
That where'er we go
We never to wrong will yield.

On its face shows large
The cross of St. George—
The red sign of England dear.
The dragon of hate
Was sent to its fate
By that hero's trusty spear.
Behind it we view
The white on the blue—
St. Andrew's, to Scotland wed;
While clearly we trace
For Ireland a place
In St. Patrick's bright cross of red.

The red is the blood,
Poured forth in a flood,
To bring to the weak just laws;
The white bans deceit,
When nations we greet,
The blue sky-wide shows our cause.
We strive for world-peace,
From base deeds release,
The keeping of each pledged word.
When tyrants assail
We Nelson's sign hail,
And employ with full force the sword.

Let the maple tree
To the crosses three
Give leaves for a garland green.
Let our east and west
Send their manhood best
To guard empire, king and queen.
We will work, give, pray,
To advance the day
When all hate and war shall cease,
When shall triumph right
And the world delight
In the rule of the Prince of Peace.

The Canadian Flag

ITS MAKING AND ITS MEANING.

BY CANON P. L. SPENCER.

On an afternoon in the month of July, 1917, I was standing with a friend and fellow-worker on the G. T. R. platform at St. Catharines, waiting for the 5:15 p. m. train, by which we intended to return to Hamilton. To make the minutes contribute somewhat to mental profit, I began to study the Dominion Coat-of-Arms, an adornment of the huge poster that served as an advertisement of the Toronto Industrial Exhibition and that reminded the travelling public of the passing of Canada's Jubilee year. I observed that the directors of the Fair had honored all the nine organized civil divisions of the Dominion, for besides the heraldic representations of the four original Provinces confederated in 1867, there appeared the emblems of the five areas that have since that date become Provinces and thus helped to build up this young and growing Confederacy. Not feeling sure respecting the identity of one or two of these provincial badges, I appealed to my friend for his interpretation, but I found that his knowledge of the subject was not superior to my own imperfect acquaintance. While we were quietly discussing the matter, several other intending travellers became interested. Not one of them, however, was able to determine with certainty the meaning of all the badges. There then occurred to me the thought that there was need of some definite, accurate and reliable information on the origin of these pictorial designs and on the objects which they were intended to represent. After trying, without much success, to obtain the desired information in documents within easy reach, I decided to apply to one of the Dominion Government Departments. Remembering that the name attached to the admirable Jubilee pamphlets issued by the Ottawa authorities was that of Sir George Foster, I addressed myself to that veteran statesman. His reply, which showed much interest and no little kindness, is worthy of quotation, and is as follows:

MEMORANDUM.

"The Arms of the four original Provinces of Canada were granted by Royal Warrant, dated May 26th, 1868, a copy of which is attached. The Dominion Shield is composed of the Arms of these four Provinces quarterly—Ontario being the upper left-hand corner, Quebec the upper right-hand corner, Nova Scotia the lower left-hand corner, and New Brunswick the lower right-hand corner. A coloured representation of these Arms is also attached.

These are the only Arms that were granted for many years. As time went on, the other Provinces began to assume Arms of their own invention, gratuitously and without any semblance of authority. Further, an erroneous impression got into the public mind that the Arms of the Dominion must necessarily be an aggregation of the Arms of the Provinces; so forthwith fantastic Arms began to be grouped together on what was called a Dominion Shield. All this was grossly irregular and improper.

In 1896, the Department of the Secretary of State undertook the task of seeing whether or not it was possible to persuade those Provinces which had not got Arms, to apply for them in the regular fashion. After ten years of effort this was accomplished and the Provinces of Prince Edward Island, Manitoba, Saskatchewan, Alberta and British Columbia have now regular Arms of their own. Authentic copies of the Provincial Arms might be secured from the Under-Secretary of State, the King's Printer, or the Provincial Governments.

With reference to the Royal Warrant, it is always interpreted as assigning Arms to the Dominion as well as to the Provinces; but on reading it, one sees that it does nothing of the kind. It assigns Arms to the four Provinces and a Great Seal to the Dominion, but the Great Seal is not Arms. The device on the Great Seal of Canada, while all right as a Seal, does not constitute Arms, and it is contended that the Dominion of Canada has no Arms to-day. Everything points to the theory that at the Confederation Conference the question of Armorial bearings was left to the last, pending further consideration, which did not materialize."

This explanation throws much light on the origin of the various coats-of-arms representative of the Provinces of the Dominion, and shows that only those of the four original Provinces, Ontario, Quebec, Nova Scotia and New Brunswick, have a rightful and legitimate place on the Great Seal of the Dominion, and, by implication, on the Canadian Flag.

As, however, each of the nine existing Provinces has received permission to use individually the coat-of-arms which is now commonly associated with its name, and as each of these emblems has its own special characteristics expressed in comely heraldic forms and colors, we shall do well to devote a short time this evening to a study of each Provincial coat-of-arms and so learn the interpretation of the several parts thereof. The heraldic colors exhibited, or attempted to be shown, are seven in number, viz., argent, or, gules, azure, vert, purpure, and sable, which in common phraseology are equivalent to silver, gold, red, blue, green, purple and black. For this information and much of the additional explanatory matter that follows, I am indebted to Mr. George Sherwood Hodgins, of Toronto, whose paper entitled **The Heraldry of Canada,** and contributed to the volume of records of the Ontario Historical Society for the year 1915, is an extremely valuable treatise dealing with this interesting subject. For the colored prints from which were made, by a clever and enthusiastic photographic artist of Toronto, the lantern transparencies to be shown this evening, I have to acknowledge my obligation to Messrs. Wymans & Sons, Government Booksellers, Fetter Lane, London, England, whose two volumes of Colonial Flags, Badges and Arms are filled with brilliant productions of the printer's art.

I. Taking the Provincial Arms in the order of the importance of the Provinces represented and paying due regard to the dates at which the latter entered into Confederation, we notice first the Arms of our own Province, Ontario, the Royal Warrant for the authorization dating May 26, 1868. The heraldic language which describes the emblematic picture says:

"Vert, a sprig of three leaves of Maple slipped Or; on a chief argent, the Cross of St. George." This in plain English means that the color of the shield is green, that the maple leaves are united by their stems and are colored with a golden tint; that the upper part of the shield is of a silvery hue, and holds or displays the Cross of St. George in the ordinary form and color. The green is supposed to refer to Ireland, the "Emerald Isle," from which many of the early settlers migrated. The golden hue of the leaves is indicative of the natural beauties of the Canadian autumn, that season being the time of the year during which the Prince of Wales, afterwards King Edward VII., visited this Province in 1860.

On February 27, 1909, Ontario was honored by Royal authority with the privilege of attaching to the shield a crest, supporters, and a motto. The Royal Warrant says: "Upon a wreath

of the colors a bear passant sable," which means that above the shield there may be placed a black bear walking and holding up one of his fore-paws. The supporters are, "on the dexter," or right, "side a moose, and on the sinister," or left, "side a Canadian deer, both proper," that is, natural in form and appearance. As these two animal figures on the sides of the shield will appear on the screen in positions reversed, or interchanged, I may explain that the heraldic phraseology supposes the holder to be standing behind the shield as he exhibits it to the observer.

A Latin motto is inscribed on a sub-jacent scroll, and reads: "Ut incepit fidelis sic permanet," which has been freely translated into the English sentence: "As loyal she became, so shall she ever remain," while a rigid literal rendering would be: "As faithful it began, so it continues."

II. The Royal Warrant which gave Quebec its coat-of-arms and which is of the same date as Ontario's kingly commission, reads in heraldic language thus: "On the fess gules, between two fleurs de lis in chief, azure, and a sprig of three leaves of Maple, slipped, vert, in base; a lion passant guardant Or." Translated into English "understanded" by the average citizen, this means that on the red middle third of the shield there is a golden lion walking, with fore-paw raised, and watching, that is, looking outward from the shield. The animal denotes the British Monarch's sovereignty in the Province of Quebec. The two fleurs-de-lis which appear in blue on the upper third of the shield on a ground of gold, remind us of the former French rule that held this Province, the fleur-de-lis being the ancient and well-known emblem of France. The lower third, or base, of the Quebec shield is described as containing three green maple leaves with stalks. As the ground is golden, the colors are the reverse of those of the corresponding parts of the Ontario coat-of-arms. The emblems of two ancient sovereignties or nations are in this heraldic representation of old Lower Canada thus happily blended and at the same time united with the threefold forest emblem of the new and enlarged Dominion. May we not hope that the union of British and French in Canada, still for more than a century and a half an undoubted and patent fact, will encourage the leaders of the two great nations whose languages they speak to form an international alliance of friendship and co-operation for preserving peace in the world, for elevating the uncivilized to a level with their own peoples, and for exemplifying to mankind in general the principles of justice, freedom, kindliness, and truth?

III...The lower left-hand quarter of the escutcheon of the Dominion is occupied by the coat-of-arms of Nova Scotia, so called by the early British immigrants who settled in the colony in 1622 and who hailed from the land of the Scots. The heraldic arms, which date from May 26, 1868, as do those of the two sister provinces already dealt with, are: "Or, on a fess wavy azure, between three thistles proper, a salmon naiant argent." Nova Scotia's shield, accordingly, glitters with a golden radiance, like that of old Scotia. On the chief, or upper third, of the shield of this Canadian maritime province appear a pair of Scottish thistles, and on the base, or lower third, is a single thistle, with the two attached leaves in somewhat exaggerated proportions. These three familiar emblems are, however, not without a foundation of truth, said to be **proper**, that is, like the corresponding natural objects. The wavy fess or central part of the shield is blue, the double idea of water in motion being thus indicated. In harmony with this feature there occurs upon the blue wavy surface a silver salmon, its position being horizontal, to signify that the fish is living and swimming. This emblem evidently denotes that one of the important industries of Nova Scotia is gathering the harvest of its rivers. Many persons when they first view the greater collection of the nine coats-of-arms are inclined to suppose that this fish stamps the shield as that of British Columbia. We shall, however, later see that the far western or Pacific province is represented in a manner quite different from this and more accordant with its natural position.

IV. New Brunswck, the fourth of the original component parts of the Dominion, received its Royal Warrant on the same day as those which we have already considered. Its shield is a thing of beauty and carries a classical illustration. In the language of heraldry it is:

"Or, on waves, a lymphad or ancient galley with oars in action, proper, on a chief gules, a lion passant guardant Or."

The Province is said to have been named in honor of King George I. of England, who, being Elector of Hanover, which included Brunswick as one of its three duchies, had for his Royal Arms the Brunswick token of two gold lions on a red ground. The golden lion on the red upper part of the New Brunswick shield, accordingly, tells of royalty of a century ago. The major portion of the shield contains an object which carries the imagination back to an early period of civilization, viz., an ancient eight-oared galley bearing a single mast and a single sail. It is said to have the oars "in action," because they are seen to be dipped

in the water, the color of the element as well as that of the ship being natural or "proper." This interesting figure copied from some ancient drawing or wall-painting points to the shipbuilding industry which distinguished the province in pioneer days.

V. Of the provinces which since the act of Confederation have cast in their lot with the original four, the first to be mentioned is Manitoba, the date of its entrance into the union being 1870, although the Royal Warrant granting Arms to it was not issued until the 10th of May, 1905. The wording descriptive of the shield is: "Vert, on a rock a buffalo, statant, proper. On a chief argent, the cross of St. George." Thus in the upper third on a silver field or surface appears the red sign of England, the pricinpal of the three countries that constitute the motherland; and thus is expressed the loyalty of the people of the chief prairie province together with their belief in the Christian virtues that were so eminently displayed in the character of the saintly hero who overcame the dragon of error, cruelty, and lust.

The field of the remaining two-thirds is true to the color of the wild herbage of the prairie and the growing product of the husbandman's toil, the "No. 1 hard wheat," which has made Manitoba famous in the grain marts of the world. On this ground of green is seen a rough, rocky platform, upon which stands, in a striking but natural attitude, a "Bos Americanus," or American Ox, commonly, though not quite correctly, called the Buffalo, a noble animal, a few years ago in danger of extinction, but now happily in a position secure against that fate.

VI. Taking the provinces in the order of their entrance into Confederation we have next to consider the badge of the remote western member of the Canadian national family—British Columbia, a territory which can justly boast of great things, for its shores are laved by the greatest ocean on this planet, its forest giants tower hundreds of feet towards the sky, its canyons reach to depths almost immeasurable, and its mountain peaks pierce the clouds and attain a height that can be reckoned not only in metres but also in miles.

The heraldic text is: "Argent, three bars wavy azure, issuant from the base a demi sun in splendor, proper. On a chief, the Union device, charged in the centre point with an antique crown, Or." The exposition, which may deal with the second clause of the text first, tells us that at the top of the shield we shall see the Union Jack and at the intersection of the arms of the crosses we shall find a golden crown, on the top of which are

a number of trianguler plates of the precious metal, this coronal adornment signifying the province's former status as that of a crown colony of Great Britain. The lower part of the shield reminds us of the blue waves of the Pacific and the daily setting of the orb of day in its splendor of light and glory. The unthinking observer may have imagined the bright object to be the rising sun, but a moment's consideration will correct that supposition. The image is undoubtedly the solar sphere sinking into the lap of the ocean which lies to the west of the province and thus indicating the latter's geographical position. In harmony with this emblem is the motto inscribed below in the words, "Splendor Sine Occasu," "Splendor without Setting."

VII. Two years elapsed before a further enlargement of the Dominion took place. This was brought about by the addition of the little eastern province of Prince Edward's Island, the date being 1873. The insular position of this smallest of the Canadian states and the difficulty that its people experienced in maintaining regular communication with the mainland, especially during the winter season, largely account for its tardy decision to join Confederation. Its Royal Warrant is dated 30th of May, 1905, the blazon of its Arms designating: "Argent, on an island, vert, to the sinister an oak tree fructed, to the dexter thereof three oak saplings sprouting, all proper. On a chief gules a lion passant guardant, Or." This tells us in plain English that the top of the badge contains on a red ground a golden lion in a moving, watchful attitude, that on a silver ground or surface below there appears a green island, and that on this piece of land there is growing, on the left hand of a person stationed behind the shield, an oak tree with blossoms and acorns on its boughs, while on the person's right are to be seen three young trees of the same species, but sufficiently near the older tree to be under its shadow or protection. The Latin underlying motto, "Parva Sub Ingenti," is given in English as, "The Small beneath the Great." The three saplings probably indicate the three counties which the island comprises, and their proximity to the greater and older tree may signify the nearness of the island to the mainland and its security by virtue of its association with the latter. The lion in the upper part tells of the power and watchfulness of British sovereignty. A tight little island is this province, seventh in the order of acceptance of the benefits, duties and responsibilities of Confederation, and well does it bear its royal name, that of Prince Edward, otherwise known as Duke of Kent, the father of Queen Victoria of happy memory, for the inhabitants are second to none in loyalty and patriotic sentiment and feeling.

VIII. Returning in imagination to the vast western plains we note that the former huge territory named after the magnificent stream, the Saskatchewan, is now an important province bearing the same name. Its promotion dates from the year 1905, while its Royal Warrant bears the date August 25th, 1906. The wording is brief but instructive, being:

"Vert, three garbs in fess, Or; on a chief of the last, a lion passant guardant, gules." Contrary to the usual combination the royal lion on this badge is red, while the ground on which it appears is golden. The distinguishing feature, however, is a row of three sheaves of wheat standing on a green surface and beautifully contrasting with this ground in their bright golden hue. Thus interpreted the distinguishing part of the shield is easily seen to be remarkably appropriate, as both the verdure of the prairie and its wonderful grain-producing power are clearly represented.

IX. The sister province of Alberta, though like Manitoba and Saskatchewan, chiefly distinguished for its grassy surface and wheat-yielding soil, possesses, nevertheless, some natural features that mark a resemblance between it and its western neighbor, British Columbia. Accordingly, the blazon of its Arms endeavors to unite in emblematic representation both prairie and mountain. The province is the connecting link between the middle west and the farthest west. Its name, which was bestowed upon it during the tenure of office of the Marquis of Lorne, Governor-General, honors the royal wife of that Scottish nobleman, Princess Louise Carolina Alberta, a daughter of Queen Victoria. It was admitted into the fellowship of confederated provinces in 1905, and its Royal Warrant was issued on May 30, of the year 1907. Its heraldic token is described as follows: "Azure, in front of a range of snow mountains, proper, a range of hills, vert; in base, a wheat field surmounted by a prairie proper; on a chief argent, a St. George's cross." Thus, besides the red Christian sign on a silver surface, betokening British rule, we have next below this part the snow-covered peaks of the Rocky Mountains; and on a narrow band underneath the central space we see a strip of prairie edged with elevations, locally named the foot-hills, while the lowest section is occupied by a field of wheat, the ears and stalks of which are true to nature. The colors, red, blue, green and silver, are shown in pleasing harmony and due proportion. Sunny Alberta's coat-of-arms, though the last to be composed or constructed, ranks, for beauty, variety, and instructive design, with the best among the eight previously issued by the official authors with royal sanction and approval.

In the course of our survey of this imposing array of heraldic tokens, borrowed from both the animal and the vegetable kingdom, you will have observed that no place has been assigned to that well-known Canadian backwoods rodent and builder, the beaver. In former times it appeared on the five-cent postage stamps, and occupied a conspicuous place on other representative objects. Perhaps it has been omitted from the flag on account of its comparatively small size and strength, the other quadrupeds conscripted being large, powerful, and awe-inspiring creatures, and therefore better qualified to convey the notion of largeness of territory and forcefulness of aim and character.

As reference to the need of imperial sanction for the right of a province to appear on the Dominion coat-of-arms has been made, I must confess that I largely sympathize with that patriotic sentiment which has found expression in placing on the flag the three-times-three provincial badges, and surrounding the whole with a wreath of maple leaves, although such a display may be regarded as showing a lack of due submission to authority as well as being contrary to good judgment. As there is no likelihood of more than one or two other provinces being formed within the Dominion, the fly of the flag is in no danger of being crowded with the provincial coats-of-arms. Since, moreover, there seems to be a general desire to have the flag adorned with the armorial bearings of all the provinces, would it not be well for some organization of importance to set in motion the machinery needed for securing the proper authorization for this greater display?

Having no desire to detain you with any lengthy moral exhortation which might be added as an application of the subject of this essay, I will conclude with a reflection which has probably occupied your own minds, viz., that amid the remarkable variety of interests and elements that are pictured for us in these armorial bearings, that which gives power to a nation and brings prosperity of a lasting nature has by no means been forgotten. Commerce, Argriculture, Natural Resources, and kindred factors have their due place; but more than once occurs the symbol of Christian Truth, that sign which is associated with the name of the Christian martyr St. George, the patron saint of England, the token which Constantine is said to have beheld and which, as he read the accompanying words, "In hoc signo vinces," **In this sign thou shalt conquer,** inspired him with courage, and gave him an assurance of a prosperous future. Let us be loyal to the imperial and spiritual teaching of the Flag, never forgetting that our great land is a part of a still greater Empire, over which rules

a wise, just and gracious Sovereign, for whose guidance and protection we do well often to raise our hearts and voices to the King of kings in our national hymn or anthem. Having so done, we may add such words as these:

O, Lord, the Empire bless.
In times of storm and stress
Be Thou its Stay.
Save it from counsels wrong,
Keep it secure and strong,
Its righteous course prolong
Till Thine own day.

The part which the Ruler of the universe has assigned to our youthful Canadian nation in the great future work of uplifting the human race and ameliorating the ills to which it is subject, is, I think, chiefly moral and religious. During the next fifty years our legislators, philanthropists, and moral reformers should make their aim and endeavor the removal of the causes of the misery, discontent, and unnecessary suffering that affect our growing population. The minority should be saved or helped by the majority. The sins of impurity and infidelity should be regarded with greater disfavor than the disappearing offence of inebriety. The lessening of the physical and mental ills, insanity, imbecility, and tuberculosis, should occupy the attention of the greatest men and women of the Dominion. Useful employment for all at all times should be made a possibility. The Divine maxim, commonly called the Golden Rule, should guide and animate the employers of labor equally with the men and women who form the industrial army, viz., "Whatsoever ye would that men should do unto you, do ye even so to them." Acting on this principle sincerely and comprehensively, Canadians will make their land fit to be the home of tens of millions of peace-loving, industrious, and freedom-prizing people. Influenced by the just laws passed by the Government, the high moral tone of the leaders among the citizens, and the general respect for institutions that have religious sanction, new-comers will help to build up a strong, united and God-fearing nation.

As Canadian soldiers in the present gigantic international conflict have shown surpassing valor and have accomplished wonders, so in the perpetual war against disease, poverty, crime, and all social wrongs the Canadian people in general will, with the blessing of the Almighty, before the arrival of the Dominion's centennial, make for themselves an honored name among the

nations of the world and bring happiness to millions who otherwise would know it not.

Let us work, give, pray
To advance the day
When the curse of war shall cease,
When shall triumph right,
And the world delight
In the rule of the Prince of Peace.

The Recollections of Lieut. John Land

A MILITIA MAN, IN THE REBELLION OF 1837.

BY JOHN H. LAND.

The dispute over the "Clergy Reserves," and the dissatisfaction with the "Family Compact," ended in that hot headed reformer, Wm. Lyon McKenzie, persuading his followers that there was no way out of the tangle, or of getting a representative government, but by force of arms; he gathered his forces back of Toronto, intending to swoop down, capture the Governor and Council, and take the reins himself. Joe Birney got wind of it, the same night, and posted to town hot foot to report to father, warning old "Oakey" Chisholm, at Wellington Square, and others, on the way. Oakey, never waiting for orders, drummed up as many as he could reach, of his company, and rode lickety split for Toronto, getting there, and into the old fort just ahead of the rebels, who were afterwards attacked and dispersed at Gallows Hill. Capt. Servos had raised a troop of cavalry, the "third Gore," with me for his Lnit. There was a great hurrah and call to arms, and I was sent to Toronto with despatches. Stopping at Oakville to change horses, I noticed a little man, who was getting a shoe set on his horse, and who seemed to be in a good deal of a splutter about something, hurrying the blacksmith, and keeping a sharp eye on the road to Toronto the while, going off at a tearing gallop as soon as the shoe was set. While I was waiting, Marlatt came up and said: "What's his hurry, I wonder; what mischief has he been up to now?" "Why," I said, "Who is he?" "Oh, that's McKenzie," said he; "Wm. Lyon McKenzie, who has been making all the trouble in Toronto." "Well, he ain't much to look at," said I; "if I had known it I would have arrested him. Didn't you know he had taken up arms? He has too good a start now, and I have despatches to deliver, so some one else must catch him." And mounting my horse, I rode off. Before I had gone far I met four horsemen, who stopped me and enquired if I had met a man, describing McKenzie and his horse. I told them when, and where, and they asked me why I hadn't seized him. There had been a fight with

him and his rebels, at Gallows Hill, and he had shot a man, and they were after him. Telling them the road he had taken, I rode on to Toronto and delivered my despatches. The town was in an uproar. All sorts of rumors and reports flying round, as to the extent and danger of the rebellion. Having to wait within call for orders, I had only time to get a meal and feed my horse, when I was sent back with orders calling out the militia, getting home about midnight. The belief was, that Toronto would be attacked by the rebel army, reported to be anywhere from five hundred to five thousand strong, and the Gore militia was ordered down there for duty. I got leave to go too. We went by boat and it was so crowded that I never expected to reach shore again. If they had kept still it might have been all right, but they kept rushing to one side or the other, as something attracted their attention, and the old steamer would heel over until the one wheel was out of the water altogether. The Capt., nearly crazed, would yell at them to get back, there would be a rush to the other side, and down she'd go again on that side. We finally reached Toronto, to find that the rebel army had disbanded, and we were not wanted. So after making a big noise, and having a good feed, we came back. I'd enough of the boat, so drove home with John Applegarth, who had missed the boat, going down, and had driven.

For some time there was nothing to do but drill, and guard duty. Then word came that Duncom had collected an army in Scotland Township, and was threatening Brantford. Sir Allan McNab was ordered to march against him, and with some six hundred militia and the 3rd Gore cavalry we started off, making Ancaster that evening. I had caught a heavy cold, and after a big dose of hot whiskey, went to bed in Tidy's tavern. My room was near the kitchen, and I was kept awake and restless by Mother Tidy's "A-a-a-a-hem," "A-a-a-a-hem," all night long, it seemed, as she busied herself with the cooking necessary for meeting the appetites of her unexpected guests. Added to this was the racket of the men, who, in spite of the tramp out, and the knowledge that there was another longer one before them next day, spent the night dancing and carousing, in defiance of the officers' advice and orders. We reached Brantford next night, and the men were quiet enough by now. I was put on duty with a guard on the bridge. About 10 o'clock Davis came riding out, gave the countersign, and hinted that he was going to see where the rebels were. I told him to be careful, but he only laughed and rode away. Towards morning he came back, saying he had been to the rebel camp, and if we got an early start, we could catch them nicely. There was no hurry, however, in the morning, no move being made till after noon. Then we marched to the at-

tack in fine feather, the cavalry bringing up the rear; I with the rear rank, in my place, the Capt. leading the front files. Everybody was on the lookout, and when a shot was heard, and the Captain fell with his horse, we thought that the ball was opening, and the order came: "Third Gore cavalry will advance." We spurred past the infantry in the full expectation of meeting the rebel fire. Old George Hughson shouted from the ranks as we passed, "Give it to 'em, John; give it to 'em." We dashed up the road, but there was no sign of any enemy, and on reaching the village found that their much vaunted army had dispersed that morning. The Captain had been pretty badly shaken up by his fall, and was sent home. We spent some days in rounding up the more prominent rebels, searching houses for incriminating documents, arms, etc.; among others, that of Dr. Duncom, their leader. The officer sent on this errand insisted, in spite of my protests, on taking every paper he could find, whether it had any bearing on politics, or the rising, or not. The victorious army marched home rejoicing over its bloodless victory. I am quite sure now that Col. McNab sent word by Davis to the rebels that they had better disperse and save any bloodshed. Early in December orders came for the Gore militia to march to Chippewa, McKenzie having taken possession of and fortified Navy Island, in the Niagara river. As the roads were soft, teams were secured for the infantry, and good speed was made to the front. We were quartered in Chippewa, out of range of the rebel battery, which was mounted behind a breastwork of logs and earth, on the Island. Our guns were planted opposite, the rebels firing at them as they were being placed. Their shots went pretty wide, as a rule, but one hit a rail fence, on which a lot of spectators, soldiers and civilians, were roosting, watching the fun. No one was hurt, but rails and spectators went down in a heap.

Our guns soon got to firing back, the first shots going high, cutting trees and branches in the woods on the island. The third shot, however, hit the breastwork, sending the logs flying round the rebels' ears. We could see them bolting out of that, like rabbits. Several times they opened fire on us, but the first shot of ours that hit their works, or came near it, would send them flying. One of their shots took both legs off of a man who was working at a grind stone, sharpening swords. Another passed through a barn, killing a man who was sleeping in the hay mow. One day I was ordered out with a patrol, to carry orders to Fort Erie. The road lay along the river bank, within musket shot of the island. Every rebel in sight took a shot at us, bullets going overhead or kicking up the mud under our horses' feet, none coming too close to be pleasant. On the way back my sergeant objected to riding

on my right, as that would bring him next the river, and he was afraid of being hit. I told him in pretty plain language what I thought of him, and, if he was so blamed careful of his precious carcase, I would shelter him. However, there was only a shot or two taken at us on the way back.

One morning a boat came from the American side with a white flag. The officer came to protest against our shot, which he claimed had reached their shore, and demanded that we should stop at once. Sir Allan answered that he was sorry our shot had frightened them, that they were aimed at rebels on Canadian soil, and would continue to be sent until the rebels were driven out. There was talk of an attack on the island, and at last some boats were secured, but nothing was done. In the meantime the steamer Caroline was plying back and forth from Schlosser, on the American side to the island with supplies for the rebels. Capt. Drew got permission to take a party and cut her out. Three boats were prepared, and there was a rush for places. Drew picked on men who had some experience on the water, as with the Falls below them, any accident or mismanagement would mean sure death. Tom Hatt came and borrowed my pistols as he was one of the party—by the way, I never saw them again, nor could I find out what became of them. George Land was also one of the crew, and told me they were challenged and fired at as they got near the vessel, but pulled in, boarded her, drove all the crew ashore, cut her loose under a sharp fire from the shore, set her afire and started her on the way to the Falls. Capt. Drew was wounded and some of the men got bullets through their hats and clothes, but all got safely back to camp. The blazing steamer was a grand sight, as she drifted down to and over the falls. Active preparations now began for the attack, a lot of boats were secured and soon after the Caroline had been disposed of, a number of them filled with men started from up the river and dropped down to the island just after sunrise, landed without opposition and found the place deserted. The rebels had slipped away in the night. This ended the campaign, and we were ordered home. The house where we were billeted belonged to a rebel sympathizer, who had hidden his pork and other provisions very carefully. As we had to depend on him for food, and as he swore he had nothing but potatoes and flour, we fared badly for a day or two, till Nat Hughson found out that he was living high himself, and also found where the stuff was hidden. Then we had him up, accused him of defrauding the government, threatened to hang him for a traitor, and he caved in, begged for mercy, and we lived well after that, I can tell you.

The winter so far had been mild and open, little or no frost, and mud everywhere. The day before we started for home a cold snap came on, froze everything up tight, making the rough roads hard as iron. One tavern we stopped at on the way home had a large gilt ball for a sign. The men amused themselves trying to hit it while riding at full gallop. Nearly every pistol had been heavily loaded, and flew out of their hands when they fired. The ball was not damaged at all.

After a couple of days rest I was sent with despatches to London, riding my horse "Dutcher" about half way to Brantford before I changed. The horse they gave me seemed pretty light, and I found him not well broken, and slipping about on the icy road. When I reached Brantford and had daylight to look him over, I found it was a colt that had never been shod, I left him there with orders to have him shod, ready for me as I came back. When riding through the Queen's bush on the way home, somebody took a shot at me, the ball whizzing past my ear. Drawing my pistol, I wheeled my horse to go after him, but remembered that I was on duty with despatches, not to fight, and rode on. When I got home and got supper I went to bed and slept till midnight, then started for Toronto, where I delivered my despatches, had a good rest, and rode quietly home. There was a good deal of agitation, and many false alarms during the winter and spring of 1838, but all had quieted down by summer, and the troops were discharged.

Upper Canada in 1827

++++

From a letter written on the 2nd of Nov., 1827, by W. H. Scott to His Cousin, Baptist Kerrigahan, Dublin, Ireland. Postage 4/6.

My dear Babtist,—

Pictou, N. S.

I came here yesterday evening on board the schooner "Three Sisters," bound from Quebec for St. Johns, Newfoundland, after being out for 16 days from the former port. (Here follows a detailed account of his voyage, and the troubles following the stranding of the vessel on a rock in the St. Lawrence.)

In my letter to you from Halifax, I mentioned that it was my intention to visit Canada. I have done so. Also a great part of the Northern States, and on a much larger scale than I had, when I wrote you, any idea of, when I left St. Johns, N. B. I intended to go and see the country by Fredericton, and up the St. John river, but was induced to change the route . . . . . I went from St. Johns to Boston, New York, and Philadelphia . . . . . returned to New York, and took the steamboat next morning for Albany, where we arrived in 11 hours, a distance of 150 miles. . . . . The scenery on the Hudson is the finest that can be imagined, particularly through the Highlands. . . . . From Albany I went to the Falls of Niagara . . . . . The scenery along the banks of the Mohawk river is generally very romantic and beautiful. The country here is very flourishing, little towns rising up out of the woods. However, there is a great deal of the land very poor, all sand, and even the Genesee country, that is the boast of the Americans, has a great deal of swampy land. . . . . I was very much pleased with my journey through this country, and indeed with the entire way to Boston, New York, Philadelphia, Albany, &c. I arrived at the Falls of Niagara about the 12th of Oct., a week after the "Michigan" went over the falls. The crowd of people who were collected together to witness the scene has seldom been equalled in this country. With the Falls, I was

highly delighted. You cannot form anything like an adequate idea of them at first sight. It requires a person to stop a few days, to see them to advantage, and to visit them frequently from different points. It is totally impossible to comprehend the grandeur and magnificence of the scene, without visiting them often, and the more minutely you visit them, and the oftener you see them, the much more you will be filled with admiration of them. It is totally impossible for the pencil or pen of the most celebrated artist, or the most eloquent orator that the world ever produced, to give anything like an adequate idea of the magnitude and grandeur of this stupendous cataract.

From the Falls I went up the bank of the Niagara river to Fort Erie, at its junction with Lake Erie, and crossed over to Buffalo, on the American side, which is the head of the Erie canal. It is situated on the shores of Lake Erie. And again along the banks of the Niagara river to the Falls, and down to Lewiston and the town of Niagara, situated on the banks of the Niagara river and Lake Ontario. The site of the little town is most beautiful. It is 36 miles across the "Head of the Lake" to York by water. 2 or 3 steamers are in constant operation, plying between York and Kingston, at the foot or lower end of Lake Ontario, through the summer season. One steamer leaves York every morning for Niagara, and returns the same afternoon. The scenery along the banks of Niagara river is delightful, and the country is as fine as any in the world. I went by stage coach from Niagara round by the "Head of the Lake" to York; all along the scenery is uncommonly fine, producing everything that can be desired, in the greatest profusion, with very little labor and without any manure. The climate is very superior. The winters not very long nor severe, like that of Lower Canada. The spring, about York and this part of Western Canada, is 6 weeks earlier at least than Quebec and Montreal, and also as long in the fall, before winter sets in. I do not think there is a finer country in all the world than all parts of Upper Canada. The distance between the two great lakes, Ontario and Erie, is from 30 to 40 miles, and extends back to the head of both lakes, something more. This part of land is considered as good as any part of America, without any waste land. The whole country bordering on the lakes, or rather, between Ontario, Erie and Huron, extending down the northern shore of Ontario to the Ottawa and St. Lawrence, is considered, by all who have seen it, to be the finest tract of land in America. Even the Americans, who are prejudiced in favor of their own country, acknowledge this to be the case. They have some tracts as good, but they have a larger

proportion of waste or swampy land intermixed with the good. What the country needs is men of capital and enterprise, to make it as fine and fruitful as any in the world. A man of means could purchase property very low, and after cutting down the timber, put in his crop of grain or vegetables, will produce the finest crop you ever saw. All kinds of fruits come to the greatest perfection in the open air, particularly in the neck of land, or isthmus, that lies along the Niagara river, extending backward between lakes Erie and Ontario, all along the shore of Lake Erie. The summers in Upper Canada, though warm, are not nearly so scorching as those in the States, particularly near New York and Philadelphia, and the eastern coasts of the Atlantic; the heat is intolerable. I never suffered so much with the heat as when travelling through the States. The country is generally sandy, so that the traveller is greatly annoyed by it. From York I travelled by land down the north or Canadian side of Lake Ontario, to Kingston. The country is very fine and in most places well settled all along the shore. The scenery is also beautiful. From Kingston I went by water down the St. Lawrence to Montreal and Quebec. Kingston, as well as York, are both flourishing little towns, improving very fast. (Here follows his description of his trip to Quebec, and the well settled country.)

In my opinion it is not at all known by the people of the Old Country; until a few years ago, or even until very lately, its worth was not known to the home government. They, it seems, are lately beginning to know the true value of this rising country. The interest that the Mother country has shown in this for a few years past shows the opinion they entertain of its value. They are now cutting a canal from Kingston, Lake Ontario, through the interior of the country, down till it meets the Ottawa, or Grand River, 130 miles from Montreal, the Rideau Canal. This canal, if I recollect rightly, is 130 miles long. It is intended to answer the double purpose of facilitating the internal commerce of the country, by opening another channel for the conveyance of goods and produce to and from the Upper Province, and also for the purpose of transporting troops and military stores, with expedition and security, to the upper country, in case of a rupture with the States, so that all things can be transported to and from, without being annoyed by the Americans; also to avoid the inconvenience attending the transporting of goods up and down the rapids of the St. Lawrence. They are also cutting another canal to unite Lakes Ontario and Erie, to avoid the portage of goods up and down by land, from Queenston on the Niagara River to Chippewa, then reship them again for the

Upper Lakes. Queenston, I should inform you, is a small town below the Falls, about 7 miles, and at the head of navigation for all vessels that navigate Lake Ontario. Chippewa is another small town 3 miles above the Falls, where all goods that are transported up or down are obliged to be loaded or carried by land between these two places. This canal is called the Welland Canal, and will unite the two Lakes, to avoid this portage. It begins about 12 miles from the town of Niagara, at the head of Lake Ontario, and runs into the Welland river, or Chippewa. And another cut from the Welland river runs into Lake Erie, near the mouth of the Grand river, that falls into Lake Erie about 40 miles above the junction of the Niagara river with Lake Erie. These two canals are now carrying on with great despatch, and will add incalculable benefit to the Canadas. The latter canal on a scale sufficient to admit all vessels that navigate both lakes, say vessels from 100 to 150 tons burden, to pass through. Our Government is also fortifying every part of the country that requires it. The fortifications at Quebec are on an immense scale, and the sums of money expended therein prodigeous. They are also going to fortify the mountain in rear of Montreal, Kingston, and all other places on the frontier. At Kingston, on Lake Ontario, we have a man of war of 100 guns, besides 2 or 3 ships of 65 guns, several frigates laid up, and there are 2 other first rate men of war and a frigate on the stocks, partly finished since the late war. . . . . I have endeavoured to give you a faint outline of my journey, and of that part of the country through which I passed. You will most likely say that I am partial to Canada. I will freely tell you I am quite in love with it. Should like very much to reside in some part of Upper Canada. I have seen so many fine places in it. It is difficult to say which I would prefer. So much for the Country. . . . . .

Burkholder Family Tree

✦✦✦✦

JACOB BURKHOLDER was born in Switzerland about the year 1747, and while still a child went from Switzerland to Mannheim, in the Province of Baden, Germany, and lived there until about the year 1765, when he came to America while still a young man and settled in Pennsylvania. He was married in Pennsylvania to one Sophie Reche. Jacob Burkholder was a U. E. Loyalist and came to Canada in 1794 because he preferred to live under the British flag. He received a grant of land on the Mountain a short distance back of Hamilton and settled on lot 8 in the 4th Concession of the Township of Barton. His three eldest sons were of age at this time and they also received grants of land as well. Jacob Burkholder died in 1812 or 1813 and was buried in the Burkholder burying ground. The family experienced very great hardships when they first settled in Canada. Fortunately Jacob Burkholder was a weaver, and by reason of his trade obtained work weaving clothes for a Mr. Horning, who previously was obliged to wear deer skins. Although the family were not privileged to attend school in those days, they read and spoke both German and English. The children of Jacob Burkholder were:—

1. CHRISTIAN BURKHOLDER.
2. DAVID BURKHOLDER.
3. MAGDALEN BURKHOLDER. (Married John Neff and then John Keagey.)
4. JACOB BURKHOLDER.
5. BARBARA BURKHOLDER. (Married Peter Thomas.)
6. PETER BURKHOLDER.

CHRISTIAN BURKHOLDER

was born in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, in 1770. Came with his father in 1794 to Canada where he subsequently married Mary Hess, of Lancaster County, Pennsylvania. He located on lot 8, in the 5th Concession of Barton. He died on 16th Sept.,

1843, and was buried in the Burkholder burying grounds. Mary Hess died in 1862. His children were:

1. SUSAN—married William Munn.
2. JACOB HESS.
3. DANIEL.
4. ANNIE—married Alex. McCann.
5. JOHN.
6. SOPHIA—married David Snyder.
7. HENRY.
8. ENOCH.
9. ELIJAH.
10. DAVID.

DAVID BURKHOLDER (Brother of Christian).

His Sons were:

1. ABRAHAM—went to Michigan. He and all descendants but one girl dead.

2. ISAAC—His children were: Dr. Wesley Burkholder, of Palermo (dead); Mrs. Abraham Martin; Mrs. John Street, of Palermo, now of London; Mrs. George Cline.

3. JACOB—Died in South Cayuga. Isaac Burkholder, of Nelson, is his son.

4. PETER—Died, unmarried, in Barton.

5. HENRY—Died in Michigan. Had a son Henry, a Free Methodist preacher.

6. JOHN—Unmarried.

7. SAMUEL—Died up in Waterloo.

8. JOSEPH—Living in Campbelltown, Michigan.

MAGDALEN BURKHOLDER (Sister of Christian).

Her children were:

1. ABRAHAM NEFF—of Barton (dead). His son was John Neff, now dead.

2. JACOB NEFF—Lived in Barton (now dead).

3. SOPHIA—Married Thomas Bennett (both dead).

4. KATE—Married John Aikman, of Ancaster, afterwards moved to Iowa.

5. ELIZABETH—Married Harry Bouslaugh and then John Cline. Lived on Mountain, below Grimsby.

6. JOHN NEFF—Died in West Flamboro.

7. ANNIE—Married Morris Lutz, of Galt.

8. PETER NEFF—Last living in Galt.

9. SAMUEL NEFF—of Troy, Beverley (dead). Samuel Neff is his only child living.

JACOB BURKHOLDER (Brother of Christian).

His children were:

1. JOHN—Died when a young man.

2. MICHAEL—Father of Harry, of Chicago, formerly a wool merchant of Hamilton; Jane Pettit; Michael, who was drowned; John G. Y., formerly insurance agent of Hamilton, and prominent in Canadian Club work, but now of British Columbia; Courtland, formerly of Hamilton, but now of Chicago; Nellie Streeter, of Chicago.

3. SOPHIA—Married Henry Beasley, father of the former City Clerk, and Grandfather of Alex. C. Beasley, Barrister, of Hamilton.

4. HANNAH—Married John Davis, father of William Davis, of Stoney Creek, and grandfather of Walter H. Davis, former City Auditor, and now in charge of the Income War Tax Act.

PETER BURKHOLDER (Brother of Christian).

His children were:

1. ANNA—of Sheffield, Ontario, widow of Beverley Humphrey. She learned to spin wool and flax and to weave when she was barely seven years old.

2. ELIJAH—(Major) now dead—Father of George W. Burkholder in the Customs at Hamilton.

3. SOPHIA—Married one Moffatt, now a widow in Hamilton.

4. PETER—Died in Barton; father of Mabel Burkholder, the authoress.

5. DAVID—Formerly lived in Hamilton, but moved to Chicago, and is now dead. Father of Nettie Burkholder, of the Ontario Ladies' College, at Whitby; and Gussie.

6. JOEL—Died in Barton, across from Amos Burkholder's home.

7. ELIZABETH—Married William Taylor, of Wyndham, farmer.

8. SUSAN—Married John Wilkins, constable.

9. AMOS—Well known insurance agent, died on the old homestead.

CHILDREN AND GRANDCHILDREN OF CHRISTIAN BURKHOLDER.

SUSAN

Married William Munn (both dead).

Their children were:

1. ALVIN—Dead.
2. MARY—Married one Moore and subsequently one Baker.
3. SOPHIA—Married Palmer Utter (both dead).
4. ANNIE—Married Samuel Nash (both dead).
5. JAMES—Lived in Barton, on the Mountain (now dead).
6. WILLIAM—Now dead. Father of Mrs. Stevenson, Mrs. Kelk, of Toronto, and some other girls.
7. ELIZABETH—Married James Gage, of Binbrook. Their daughter married William Spera, of Red Hill.
8. HARRIET—Married Solomon Gage (both dead). Mother of William L. Gage, and Mrs. William Nash, of Stoney Creek.
9. SUSAN—Married John Wentworth, and afterwards Logan McCann.
10. HARMON—Lived in Barton (now dead).

JACOB HESS BURKHOLDER

He was born on the 14th of November, 1802, and died on the 27th of January, 1895, in his 93rd year, as the result of a fall. He was born in Barton, on the Mountain, and at the time of his

marriage he settled on lot No. 4, in the 3rd concession of Barton, under the Mountain, which he cleared for cultivation. Jacob Hess Burkholder was very much interested in Sunday School work, and was for over sixty years superintendent of the Bartonville Sunday School. He was for many years Clerk of Barton Township, and served the Township well in that capacity at a salary which would seem paltry in these days. His children were:

1. DANIEL—Died unmarried.

2. CAROLINE A.—Married Joshua Brethour, formerly of the well known firm of Brethour & Howden (both dead).

3. MARY ANN—Married Andrew T. Olmsted (both dead). They had six girls and two boys, Jacob Olmsted and William N. Olmsted, of Ancaster.

4. WILLIAM S.—Was born on the 17th of December, 1834, and married Adeline Scott, daughter of Squire Scott, of Brant County, on the 30th of May, 1860, and has been living for over sixty years in his present home just west of Bartonville. His beloved wife died on the 4th of January, 1906. Before he retired from business, William S. Burkholder was a prominent fruit grower, and was one of the first to bring choice fruits of all varieties to Hamilton market. He is still hale and hearty, and although over four score years is still a familiar figure in Hamilton and the Township of Barton, and many a time may be seen driving his automobile. He bids fair to attain a longevity for which the original members of the Burkholder family are noted. His children are: Harry F. Burkholder, of Hamilton, a retired fruit grower, and now Assessor of the Township of Barton, and Charles E. Burkholder, B. A., of Hamilton, Barrister-at-law, and his grandchildren are Mary Scott and Adeline Burkholder, the children of Charles E. Burkholder.

DANIEL BURKHOLDER
(dead)

His children were:

1. MARY—Married John Stevenson, of Caistor—now widow living in Hamilton.

2. ELIZA—Married James Smith, of Caistor (dead).

3. JANE—Married Isaac Nelson, of Caistor (both dead).

4. HARRIET—Married William Merritt, now in Michigan (dead).

5. HESTER—Married Porter, of Hamilton.

6. SUSAN—Married Cyrus Culp, of Burlington.
7. DANIEL—Grimsby (now dead).
8. SOPHIA—Married Omar Bartlett, of Caistor.
9. CAROLINE.

ANNIE

Married Alex. McCann (dead).

Their children were:

1. MARY JANE—Married John Bunson (dead). She now lives in Bronte.
2. LOGAN—Who lives in Burlington.
3. EZEKIEL—Near Goderich.
4. ANNIE—Dead.
5. SUSAN—Married James Harrison, Milton (both dead).
6. KATE (or Catherine)—Married Thos. Wilmott, now in Cleveland.

JOHN BURKHOLDER (Dead).

His children were:

1. WILLIAM—His grandson is William Burkholder, the well known football player and soldier.
2. SUSAN—Married George Lampman, of Tapleytown.
3. CHRISTOPHER—Tapleytown.
4. JOHN—Jordan, Carpenter.
5. MARIETTE—Married Geo. Hildreth, of Tapleytown.
6. JESSIE—Married Charles Wesley Marshall (dead).
7. TAMER—Married Myrus Clark, of Burlington.
8. DAVID—Dead.
9. DOROTHY—Present wife of C. W. Marshall.

SOPHIA.

Married David Snyder (dead).

Their children were:

1. JOHN ELI—Leamington.

2. MARY—of Dundas, widow of J. B. Watson.

3. HESTER—Spinster, lives in Hamilton.

4. JAMES—North West Territory, Riding Mountain P. O.

5. SARAH JANE—Married Isaac Hutchison, of Brantford (both dead).

6. ELLEN—Married James Watt, of Saltfleet, who has moved away (dead).

HENRY BURKHOLDER

Born 9th September, 1815.
Died (aged 90) 1905, in Michigan.
Married Susanna Snider, of Trafalgar. No children.
He assisted very much in compiling family tree.

ENOCH B. BURKHOLDER (Dead).

His children were:

1. WILLIAM STOCKTON—of Norwich (dead).
2. CHRISTOPHER—of Norwich.
3. WESLEY—About five miles west of Delhi.
4. CHARLES—Tilsonburg. Bicycle manufacturer.
5. MARY ANN—Dead.

ELIJAH BURKHOLDER

Married Cynthia Smith.

Their children were:

1. JACOB—Went to Louisiana. His wife is now near Leamington.

2. KATE—Married Robert Simpson, near Leamington. Saw Mill.

3. CHRISTINA—Married William McKay, of Barton.

4. CYRUS W.—Binbrook (dead).

5. LEWIS.

6. EUPHEMIA—Married Albert Long, of Glanford, farmer.

7. EMMA—Married George Barrett, of Glanford, agent.

8. LENA—Married Fred Magill, works or worked for Express Company.

DAVID BURKHOLDER.

Married Deborah Coon.

Their children were:

1. MARY ELIZABETH—Married James D. Marshall, of Binbrook.

2. EMMA—Married Cyrus Marshall, of Glanford (dead).

3. JOSEPH HENRY—of Binbrook.

The above Family Tree was compiled by Charles E. Burkholder, who received much assistance from Henry Burkholder, late of Michigan, who died at the ripe age of ninety years, and from Miss Nettie Burkholder, of the Ontario Ladies' College, Whitby.

Dated at Hamilton, the 20th day of May, 1918.

Lincoln Militia—1812-14

BY H. H. ROBERTSON.

(The late H. H. Robertson, in the course of his researches regarding the militia, gathered a great many scraps of history which he did not publish, and a number of them are given here. In 1812-14 the County of Lincoln included nearly all of the present County of Wentworth. This fact is explained in Mr. Robertson's paper in Volume Four of Wentworth Historical Society Papers. The 5th Lincoln Regiment was recruited in the Townships of Barton, Ancaster, Saltfleet and West Flamborough.)

✣✣✣✣

OFFICERS 1st LINCOLN, JULY 23, 1812.

Flank Company—
James Crooks, Capt.; Martin McLellan, Lieut.; Anselm Foster, Ensign.

No. 1 Company—
Andrew Heron, Capt.; William Powers, Lieut.; Elijah Secord, Ensign.

No. 2 Company—
Geo. Lowe, Capt.; Geo. A. Ball, Lieut; Henry Pauling, Ensign.

No. 3 Company—
William Robertson, Capt.; John Ball, Lieut.; Adam Brown, Ensign.

No. 4 Company—
George Lawrence, Capt.; John Servos, Lieut.

No. 5 Company—
George Reid, Capt.; William Servos, Lieut.; George Darby, Ensign.

No. 6 Company—
George Hamilton, Capt.; Thos. McCormack, Lieut.; John May, Ensign.

No. 7 Company—
John Jones, Capt.; John Secord, Lieut.; Simcoe Shepperson, Ensign.

Flank Company—
John McEwan, Capt.; Robt. Rankin, Lieut.; George Adams, Ensign.

State of the Flankers at Niagara. July 5, 1812.—
1 Col., 1 Major, 3 Capts., 5 Luits., 3 Ensigns, 1 Adjutant, 1 Quartermaster, 7 Sergeants, 1 Corporal, 1 Drummer, 209 privates.

State of 1st Lincoln at Niagara. July 5th, 1812—
1 Co., 1 Major, 9 Capts., 10 Luits., 8 Ensigns, 1 Adjutant, 1 Quarter Master, 25 Sergeants, 340 Privates=396.
19 absent without leave.

State of Flank Cos., Lincoln Militia. July 10, 1812—
James Crooks' Co.—4 officers, 66 non-com. and privates.
John McEwan's Co.—4 officers, 69 non-com. and privates.
— Lyon's Co.—3 officers, 27 non-com. and privates.
— Nelles' Co.—3 officers, 75 non-com. and privates.
Wm. Crooks' Co.—3 officers, 75 non-com. and privates.

John Hendershot, private of 5th Lincoln, killed on duty as sentry at Queenston, Sept. 4th, 1812.

At Queenston, detachments of all Lincoln Militia, battalions under Col. Joseph Butler and Thomas Clark, were engaged. Of these, Capts. Applegath's, Samuel Hatt's, James Durand's, James Crooks' and John McEwan's Companys marched from Niagara, and John Rowe's and Robert Hamilton's Companys from Chippewa. At Queenston the Lincoln Artillery lost 1 rank-and-file wounded.; Lincoln Militia lost Adjutant McIntyre, 1 Sergeant, and 12 rank-and-file wounded, 10 rank-and-file missing. Besides officers already named, Luit. T. Butler, commanding a Flank Co., Luit. John P. Ball, of Artillery; Capt. Powell, commanding Artillery at Fort George, Capt. Kirby and Luit. Bryson at Fort Erie, were mentioned in despatches.

On the 17th and 18th of March, during the bombardment of Fort Erie, a detachment of Lincoln Militia, under Lt.-Col. Thos. Clark, was stationed some distance up the Lake shore, to oppose any landing that might be attempted by the enemy on the ice.

By a general order of March 16th, three Companys of the five Lincoln Battalions were ordered for service on the Niagara frontier; and on the 17th Col. Claus was ordered to send a Company of at least 60 men each to Fort George, Queenston, Chippewa and Fort Erie.

On March 29th, 6 Companys of the 1st and 4th Lincoln, of 50 men each, were ordered to Fort George; and 6 Companys of the 5th Lincoln and 2nd York to Queenston.

On the 27th May, the landing of the Americans, 4000 strong,

at Fort George, was opposed by 90 men of the Glengarry Regt., 40 Royal Newfoundland, 27 Black Corps, Capt. Runsbury 100 (2 Co's) Lincoln Militia, and 310 of 8th Regt. Total 567.

Overwhelmed by the fire of the American fleet and batteries, and more than half killed and wounded, the little force retired.

Capt. Martin McLellan and privates Charles Wright and William Cameron, of the 1st Lincoln, were killed, and many wounded.

After the occupation of Fort George by the enemy, a large part of the Lincoln Regt. were disbanded, and allowed to return to their homes, where many of them were paroled by the enemy.

On 19th June a number of these were arrested and deported to the United States, where they were kept in close confinement until December. Among these were Lt.-Col. Clench, Capts. John Powell, Geo. Lowe, John DeCew, John McEwan, John Jones, — Baxter, Jacob A. Ball, Luits. Wm. Powles, Jonathan Williams and John Bradt.

Upon the advance of the British forces after Stoney Creek, the militia displayed great zeal and activity, harrassing the enemy and bringing in many prisoners. Major Evans said, on 10th June that, "The loyal part of the country was thoroughly aroused yesterday, and I am informed that the militia had captured a depot of arms at Queenston; and in the evening they took possession of the village."

At the Beaver Dams a detachment of 10 or 20 men under Major Secord did good service.

On the 4th July, Col. Thos. Clark, with 34 of Lincoln men, and a small party from the 49th, crossed from Chippewa to Schlosser, and took the block-house there, with a fieldpiece and 17 prisoners.

On the 11th July he joined Lt.-Col. Bishopp's expedition to Black Rock, with 40 of the Lincoln men, and on Bishopp's fall, took command. In this action he was slightly wounded.

On 17th Sept., the 1st Lincoln was directed to assemble at headquarters, and 2 Co.'s of the 2nd Lincoln at Queenston. Capt. Kirby, Luits. Ball, Hamilton and Servos, distinguished themselves at the storming of Fort Niagara, and were mentioned in despatches. At the taking of Buffalo, Luits. Davis, Putnam and Anderson, volunteered to pilot boats across the river. 3 militia men were killed, and Capt. Servos and 5 wounded.

The 2nd Lincoln were engaged in the Battle of Chippewa, July 5th, 1814, under Lt.-Col. Thos. Dickson, and when he was wounded Major David Secord took command.

The historian, David Thompson, says: "The 2nd Lincoln Regt., under command of Major David Secord, distinguished themselves by feats of genuine bravery and heroism, stimulated by the example of their gallant leader, which is seldom surpassed by the most experienced veterans." Capts. George Turney and John Lowe, Luit. Christian McDonald, Pvts. Samuel Adams, Joseph Bastedo, Louis Blanchette, James Forsyth, Stephen Peer, R. Taylor, Jacob Wilkinson, and Timothy Skinner were killed, and 37 others wounded, out of a total of 110 engaged.

After this action they showed themselves unalterably hostile. Gen. Riall wrote that they were "fervent beyond parallel in the cause of their King and Country." The American Major McFarland, who was killed at Lundy's Lane, wrote to his wife, "The whole population is against us; not a foraging party goes out but is fired on, and frequently returns with reduced numbers."

At Lundy's Lane, pvt. Geo. Coghill, of 1st Lincoln, was killed; a pvt. of the 2nd Lincoln wounded; 2 officers and 3 pvts. of the 4th Lincoln wounded, 2 officers missing; 1 officer and 3 men of the 5th Lincoln wounded.

Odd Characters

BY JOHN H. LAND.

++++

That portion of our fair Dominion, known first of all as "The Head of the Lake," later incorporated in the "Gore District," in that "Garden of Canada," the Niagara Peninsula, peopled as it was by those hardy pioneers, who for love of the flag under which they had always found freedom, and scope for their energies and aspirations, had left fair homes and fruitful fields, for this "wilderness of Canada;" then (as now even, with many of our "cousins" to the South) an unknown, inhospitable land, teeming with all sorts of noxious wild beasts, and the much dreaded Indian; with a climate arctic in its rigor of winter, snow and ice. I said they **left** their fair homes. Say, rather, that they were **driven out,** hunted like wild beasts; their homes burned, crops, goods and stock confiscated, or wantonly destroyed, by bands of "Patriots," often disguised as Indians.

One instance was that of Robert Land, who was hunted from home, his house burned, his family escaping by night, just in time, taking nothing but the clothes they wore. They owed their lives to the warning of a friendly Chief, who, at peril of his life, told them of the fate of their neighbors, who were murdered. On hearing of this tragedy, Robert Land started for Canada, believing it to be **his** family who had been slain. A friend, one of whose descendants has held the highest office in the gift of this City, Mr. Morden, who was to show him the way, was captured and slain without mercy. A Mr. McDonald, a loyalist in Virginia, met a similar fate, one son being carried off and all the rest of the family murdered. This boy escaped to the British in New York. One of his descendants was the late Dr. McDonald of this City. These are two instances. In almost every case there was the same tale to tell, details and localities only differing.

Outside of the fort at Niagara, and the little trading post at York—now Toronto—all this region was primitive forest. The only roads were Indian trails, or the lakes and streams. The only conveyance, good "Shanks' mare," or the canoe. The Indian roamed at will over this fair garden, danced his "corn dance," his "war dance," kept his feasts of the "green corn" and the

"white dog," fought, hunted, loved, and was happy. The bears, wolves, wild-cats, and the dreaded panther were plentiful, finding harbour and breeding places along the mountain and in the windfalls. Rattlesnakes abounded, until the white man's pigs, the old-fashioned "razor back racers," ate them all up. This, then, was the land of promise to which these U. E. Loyalists bent their steps. Out from under the aegis of that "Goddess of Liberty" who left no man free on whom she could fasten chains; out to be under the meteor flag, they came, a procession of martyrs.

Of those settling at the Head of the Lake, Robert Land was the first; then came Richard Beasley, Rousseaux—at Ancaster. Then came the Hornings, Filmans, Van Every's, Aikmans, Seccords, Mills, Kirkendalls, Springers, Robert Land's family, Fergusons, Choates, Sniders, Depews, Lottridges, Cains, Reynolds, Shermans, Hughsons, Hamiltons, and many more later. Not all the later arrivals were Loyalists; for as reports filtered back to the States,, the "Patriots" felt that this fair Province must not be allowed to slip through their fingers, so came to take possession. But they were too late. Then in 1812-15 they tried to get it by force of arms; but Fort Detroit, Queenston Heights, Fort Erie, Stoney Creek, and Lundy's Lane, with the smoking ruins of Buffalo and Washington, convinced them that "Barkis was not willin'."

The Loyalists came here on foot. Some of the later comers from Pennsylvania, of thrifty Dutch stock, managed to bring a few cattle, feather beds, and tools with them. Horning brought his horses and 10 cattle. It was one of the children's amusements, morning and night, to take the pails of milk to the top of any hillock near, and, pouring it out, watch the white flood dash down the little hill. The milk they carried with them was slung in a can to the saddle. So they had a nice batch of butter when they halted next. The first houses of these pioneers were as varied in architectural styles as their owners were in feature, ranging from the unpretentious "shack" to the solid log house. But they were vigorous and enterprising, and about 1800 the first brick house was built by Richard Beasley, and it stands today as a part of Dundurn Castle. As might be supposed, they were unable to bring many, even of the crude implements of those days, with them, for culture of the soil, and in more than one instance the crop was put in with a hoe, and reaped with a knife, when they did not pull it up by the roots. Fortunately for them, game and wild fowl were plentiful—ducks and geese in the lake and partridge in the woods. As ammunition was scarce, it was a

constant practice with the boys and men to carry stones whenever they went into the bush, and many times they, in this primitive fashion, secured the wherewithal to satisfy an appetite proverbially good. As population increased, the older settlers sold their surplus to the new comers at fancy prices. Wheat, one shilling a bushel; corn, sixpence; oats about the same, and so on. Then came the demand for export facilities; Beasley's storehouse could not handle it, so Abel Land built a wharf and storehouse at the foot of Wellington street. Batteaux were used to carry grain and goods to and from Niagara, York or Kingston. By and by they began to manufacture for themselves, and Aikman's plows were in demand for miles around. They were made of wood, faced with flat bars of iron, to closely cover the wood.

"Yankee" Sherman was the first blacksmith. His shop was on King street, just east of Sanford. Old "Daddy" Robb was the first shoemaker; Needham the first weaver, and Mills the first tailor. The two former were peripatetic, making their rounds twice each year, making boots for the family of home-made leather, and cloth from yarn spun by the women folk.

Queer characters some of these first settlers were. Two brothers, Jake and Henry Smith, revelled in the possession of the sobriquets of "Slope" and Spank." Jake, or "Slope," was a short and chubby black-haired little man, given to whiskey and brag; "Spank"—Henry—was a big, burly man, with a rough shock of red hair, and voice like a fog-horn. It is told of him that his supply of provisions for a trip to Court at Niagara always consisted of a lot of "pancakes," made the full size of the frying-pan, and packed one over the other, so that he looked, with his rations strapped on his back as if he were carrying off somebody's grindstone. He always laid in a stock of sauerkraut for the winter, making a hogshead full for himself, one for his wife, and a barrel for each child. He was a good provider. That this quantity was necessary will be evident when I say that his ingenuity evolved an expeditious method of feeding himself, by making a slide from a shingle cut to fit under his chin; putting one end in the dish, he could, with his fork, shovel the succulent edible into his mouth. "Slope," poor fellow, died a victim of misplaced confidence. He was fond of brandy, and while at work one day carrying the hod, building a chimney, he happened to say he could drink a quart of it. A bet was made, the brandy produced, and he drank the whole quart. Offered to bet he could drink another, it was not forthcoming, so he picked up his hod. Just as he reached the ladder he fell and expired in a few minutes.

"Spank" was also the victim of drink, and died miserably. William Applegarth was the first schoolmaster. His schoolhouse was a little log cabin somewhere in the vicinity of the present Wentworth St. School. It may well be supposed that his class, though not large, was very select, consisting as it did exclusively of the children of the "First Families," and that his salary was not enough to keep him awake nights devising ways for its investment. He "boarded round," after the fashion of those good old days. Old Tom Reynolds, a blacksmith, is entitled to rank among the characters of those old days. He learned his trade with Sherman, and set up a shop for himself when that worthy gave up his forge and took to farming and trading. Reynolds was the king of practical jokers, and never failed to work off the rough sort that obtained in those times on all and sundry. He fixed up a pail of water on or under the roof of his shop in such a way that he could bring down a dash of that useful fluid on the head of his victim. Putting his grindstone under it, he invited "Slope" to do the "circular work" for him, and as soon as he had got fairly to work—dash! came a dipperful of water. There was a jump, some violent language, a thorough search for the joker, in which Reynolds joined, but as nobody could be found poor "Slope" got quieted down, and went grumbling to work, only to have the joke repeated, till he could stand it no longer, and went off to fill up with whiskey to counteract the effects of the water. Old Dr. Case was the man above all others that Reynolds delighted to play his tricks on. The good doctor was rather dignified, and that was looked on as a mortal sin by our hero of the forge, who always had a piece of hot iron lying handy for the Dr. to touch whenever he came to his shop. Having learned from that best of teachers experience, the Dr. at last insisted on Tom's handling the finished work himself. On one occasion the Dr. brought a chain to be mended, and left to attend to some other matters. The job was done and cold. When Tom spied the Dr. coming he slipped the whole chain in the fire till it was nearly red, then flung it carelessly to the floor. The Dr. came hurrying in, poked the chain over with his stick to find the mend, then boldly took it up by the cold part. Of course he dropped it, and Tom Reynolds never caught the Dr. with hot iron again.

The butt of the neighborhood was old Ben Quick, a brother of the celebrated "Indian Slayer" Tom Quick, whose name was a terror to the Red men in Southern New York and Pennsylvania. It was rumored that Ben was as ferocious as Tom, and had to leave that country on account of it. Indeed, years after, an old

squaw swore he had killed her father and brother, and nearly scared poor Ben to death with her threats—duly translated by Charley Depew and others. Ben was one of the handy men, working around among the settlers, trapping, hunting and fishing in the intervals. He was a tall, lank, loose-jointed customer, stoop shouldered, and had acquired the Indian gait and speed. Strange to say a spark of ambition touched him, and he decided he'd be a Freemason. It must have been not long after The Barton Lodge was instituted in 1795. Charley Depew, at whose house Ben made his headquarters, was a member, and promised him he should be admitted at the first opportunity. This presented itself when they were at York, with a lot of others, probably attending court. Depew pretended that a Lodge would be held some miles out of York, and they could take it in on their way home. Accordingly he timed it so that the Lodge should be reached after dark. As soon as they saw the lights, Ben was left in charge of two of the conspirators, while the rest went on into the "Lodge," which happened to be a blacksmith shop. As soon as the coast was clear one of the attendants decided on going to see if he could find out what they were doing and how long they would have to wait. In a minute he came hurrying back with the news that they were initiating a candidate, and advised Ben to come with them and see the fun. Nothing loth, Ben and his guards crept softly up; taking a good grip on his arms, they pushed him forward till he could, through a chink in the logs, get a full view of the scene. The awful sight transfixed him with horror. On an anvil sat the candidate, stripped and blindfolded; a huge fire roared in the forge, in which a log chain was being heated. At some preconcerted signal, the command to "invest the candidate" was given. The red-hot chain was seized with tongs, dragged from the fire as though to wrap it about the victim, whose well-feigned shriek was drowned in Bill's yell of mortal terror, as, flinging aside his guards, he broke for liberty, loped off up the road, and never stopped running till he got safely hidden in Depew's straw stack, where he was found two days after still trembling with fear. He was told he had committed an unpardonable offence against the craft, and if ever he was found by a member of that Lodge he would be flayed alive. He never could be got within twenty miles of York again.

Old Dr. Case's wife was famed for making cheese. Her skim milk cheeses were in demand by economical housewives, they lasted so long. Charley Depew managed, on one of his visits, to drop a good sized boulder into the curd, "unbeknownst." Now, as luck would have it, Mrs. Charley got that very identical

cheese months afterwards in some deal between them. After many attempts to cut it, she called Charley to her aid, who, with a well garnished commentary on their method of cheese-making, took it out to the woodpile, hunted up his sharpest axe, and with a full swinging blow, brought it down on the very rock he had so carefully placed there. The effect on the cheese was insignificant, but he had to buy him a new axe, and in those days they cost something. He had his cheese made at home after that.

They had their pleasures, too, these pioneers; it was not all work. In the winter it was a continual round of visiting. Husking bees, quilting bees, peeling bees, etc., were in order, and the forest echoed and re-echoed the sonorous jangle of the big sleigh-bells. The "latch string" was always "out," and everybody was welcome. The steady winter's job for the men was threshing out the grain, by putting a layer of sheaves on the barn floor, and driving horses round and round over them till the grain was trampled out, when the straw was raked off and the grain and chaff shovelled aside to be afterwards winnowed and cleaned.

Looking back from the present day, it seems as though they must have been wonderfully plucky and hardy to endure such hardships, but they did not consider them such. They were healthy, hardy and happy. They had faith in the future and in themselves, and we, their descendants, know how well founded that faith was, when we look on this fair country, and this flourishing and "an ambitious" city that now covers the scene of those early struggles.

Dundas in the Early Days

BY W. F. MOORE.

++++

I find it quite difficult to get reliable information in regard to the early history of the town of Dundas—few books exist, and I have not had access to any newspapers of that early period. There are none living in the town now whose memory goes back more than 60 years. That is modern history of which we have plenty. This emphasizes the need of Historical Societies, but these Societies were not organized sufficiently early in the history of the country. The late Inspector J. H. Smith made a collection. I do not know what became of it. Mrs. Begue, of Dundas, had her husband's and father-in-laws's papers, which will probably give a fairly complete and accurate history of the locality. I can have access to these papers and shall try to put in order data that may be valuable. A book published in Dundas in 1836 gives a good deal of information. The author was Dr. Rolph, who possessed considerable literary talent. The Hamilton Spectator publishes regularly the Muser's contributions. I have found these very helpful. Indeed, I think our Society should cut these out of the Spectator and file them away. Another book that will be found useful is Wentworth's Law Works. I have received help from all these sources.

In 1836 we read. "The inhabitants of Great Britain have been too apt to consider Canada merely a region of ice and snow, of pine forests and lakes, of trappers and Indians, with a few forts and villages, and producing only furs, moccasins and ship timber."

I have two maps—one of 1801—and a large and better one of 1848.

The 1801 map seemingly pays much attention to the stream as I find the word quay in four places along the margin of the creek. Evidently it was navigable for boats of some draught. There was no canal in those days.

Over one hundred and one years ago—about the 21st of August, 1818, the first number of the Upper Canada Phoenix was

issued in Dundas, Richard Cockrell being the publisher and editor. One hundred years later the Saturday Muser of the Hamilton Daily Spectator had the rare privilege of looking reverently upon a copy of the Phoenix, dated Sept. 28, 1819. Nathaniel Hughson, of Hamilton, was one of the early residents of Dundas, and when he moved to Hamilton, like a wise man and loyal to the town of his youth, and probably of his birth, he continued his subscription to the Phoenix, which was then the only newspaper printed in the Gore district, and probably one of the oldest in Upper Canada. Dundas in those days was the metropolis of the Head of Lake Ontario. Ancaster began to loom up after many days, and in the year 1827 was the proud owner of the Gore Gazette, published and edited by the Gurnetts.

Unfortunately for history the last known copy of the Dundas Phoenix was the one above referred to. The owner, R. O. Bigelow, was a nephew of Nathaniel Hughson, and he preserved it as a sacred treasure, handed down to him by his uncle. Mr. Bigelow promised that some day he would present the ancient relic to the Dundas Library; but he put it off too long, for within a few months he died after a brief illness. The Muser called at his sister's, where he made his home, and learned that all the old papers had been burned. That was the last of the ancient Upper Canada Phoenix.

It was an easy thing to be the editor of a newspaper in those early days, and no one dreamed 100 years ago that they were making history worth preserving. There was not a line of editorial in the copy of the Phoenix; almost all of it was clippings from foreign countries, and only one line of local interest announcing the death of Richard Hatt.

The business men of a hundred years ago did not let their neighbors know what they had for sale. Indeed the Sheriff was the best advertiser in those days, for nearly every other farmer was in debt and could not pay for his land, and the sheriff had the pleasant job of selling the farm to satisfy the demands of the creditors. Here are a few of the public spirited men who used the columns of the Phoenix to let the world, and Dundas in particular, know what they were doing: Tomlinson and Kerr were the village blacksmiths; Sheriff Simmons had five farms advertised for sale; Abraham Smith and David Beasley did business in Hamilton and Dundas as partners; George Calvert owned a farm out on Dundas St., in the township of Nelson, that he was compelled to sell to get even with the world. It was a farm of 150 acres, and one of its superior advantages was that it was near

C. Hopkin's tavern. John Binkley had a horse stolen from his pasture field one night, and he advertised his loss in the Phoenix, offering a reward of $10 for the return of the horse and $10 for the capture of the thief. William Fonger owned a farm of 112 acres in East Flamboro, on which Matthew and William Crooks had a mortgage. The Sheriff sold that farm and Crooks bought it. William Markle had a fine farm of 300 acres, but he was badly in debt, and Richard Hatt took a mortgage on the land and loaned him the money to square himself with the world. The Sheriff finally sold that farm and Richard Hatt became the owner. But we will not continue the advertising.

The Upper Canada Phoenix was finally borne to the newspaper graveyard, and its principal mourners were the men who forgot to pay their annual subscriptions to the paper. In time its successors were the Dundas Warder, owned and edited by Robert Spence, who made some money as an auctioneer as well as a publisher, got elected to parliament and became postmaster-general of Canada. Jones & Harris bought the Warder and owned it for a few years, making a little money. The Warder finally went to the newspaper graveyard. Then the Dundas Banner began to draw the breath of newspaper life. William Pigott, an American printer, had worked for some time in Hamilton, and having saved a little money he bethought him that Dundas would be a pleasant town in which to get rid of it, so he started the Banner and he was sorry for it a few months later. Jones & Harris, the former publishers of the Warder, came to his rescue, and they were sorry for it a year or so later. Then the writer of the Saturday Musings in the Hamilton Spectator thought it a big thing to be the editor of a paper and he took over the dead Banner, expecting to renew its life. Major Notman encouraged the youth, and devoted one whole Sunday to giving him his first lesson in politics. That Sunday night, while walking back to Hamilton, for money was too great a luxury to be spent on hiring a horse and buggy, the embryo editor got "cold feet," as the slang phrase goes, and came to the conclusion that Dundas was not to be his future home. Meeting James Somerville the next day the prospective owner of the Banner persuaded him to take it off his hands, and Dundas made by the change. Mr. Somerville got rich editing and auctioneering and was elected to parliament. And now the Dundas Star shines for all when the night is free from clouds.

About eighty years ago a druggist named Leslie settled in Dundas to cater to the diseased stomachs of the inhabitants of

the valley city. John McLean, the father of the editor of the Toronto World, was Leslie's drug clerk in those days. In the year 1844, Leslie, under the nom de plume of Andrew Marvel, had printed an almanac of more than usual information and interest, and full of bitterness toward the churches, especially the Anglican, the Roman Catholic and the Presbyterian. Here is a specimen: "The government table is spread for all. The stern Presbyterian eats from the same dish with the haughty advocate of Prelacy, who hands him over to the uncovenanted mercies of God. The intolerant Episcopalian quaffs the wine of administration with the Roman Catholic, while they reciprocally charge each other as the agents of the most damnable heresy. And all three partake of the fruits of the hothouse of political iniquity with the Brahmins and the Budda priests of India, while they are professionally laboring for the conversion of the latter to the Christian faith."

Pretty strong medicine for a village druggist to deal out to his almanac customers. But, mind you, Dundas was in its infancy when Leslie used to dose them with jalap and rhubarb.

"The village of Dundas, now about to be incorporated (1836) is situated in a most picturesque ravine between the opposing mountains of Ancaster and West Flamboro, fronting a luxuriant valley through which Desjardins Canal passes, connecting with the waters of Burlington Lake. This village, though situated more advantageously both for external commerce and internal communication than any other place at the head of Lake Ontario, has not advanced with nearly the same rapidity as other places not possessing a tithe of the same natural advantages which appertain to Dundas. A delightful stream of water running from the Flamboro mountain and supplying the very extensive works of the Hon. Francis Crooks, called the Darnley Mills, consisting of grist mills, paper mills, distillery, etc., also other mills on its route, passing through the beautiful grounds of Dr. Hamilton, where it rushes over a rocky precipice fully a hundred feet in height into a rich woodland glen, then supplying more mills and finally emptying into the basin at the head of the canal.

"The Presbyterian, Episcopal and Baptist congregations make use, alternately, of a small church in the village, but this scandalous opprobrium is likely soon to cease as the members of the Scotch and English churches are about erecting separate places of worship for themselves."

The charter members of the church were David Oliphant, John Leslie, Thos. Ross, Wm. Binkley, John Gamble. It was free

to all denominations, on part of lot 17, 1st con., W. F. The first Board of Trustees were: M. Overfield, J. Paterson, D. Oliphant and T. Hilton. This lot is on the Watson property, on King St. E. Some persons are still living who worshipped in the old church.

The writer at this period is supposed to be standing on the top of the mountain, probably at the peak. He says: "Towards the east a long vista of woods is seen, bounded by the mountain extending towards Niagara, also the flourishing town of Dundas and Hamilton in the vale, with the glittering cupola of the Court House on the latter, and the small lake, with the beach dividing it from the waters of Lake Ontario, the white mists in the extreme distance arising from the waters of Niagara Falls, rolling and circling in the most fantastic forms are frequently seen.

"The entrance into George Rolph's demesne is particularly striking. From the lofty iron gates, handsomely finished, enclosed and surrounded by walls of fine stone, resembling and quite worthy the entrance to a nobleman's mansion. Indeed there is nothing I have seen or heard of like it in America; but oh! what a disappointment! Splendid as is the entrance it is like that mentioned in Goldsmith's 'Citizen of the World.' 'A splendid entrance to nothing.' In the grounds is a saline spring, just in the rear of the office. I am satisfied from its strength that any quantity of salt could be manufactured from it."

Hatts, Hares and Heads—these are three of the oldest families in the historic town of Dundas, and they, in their various branches, know a good deal of the records of the place. In their honor, streets are named, and big building blocks are christened. But family names are not the most interesting things in the old town, nor are the pretty modern day scenes pictured in the lately published "Picturesque Dundas." To regard the Valley City from its really interesting point of view, one must see the old with the new, the ruin alongside the modern and up-to-date, and perhaps there is no other town in Canada possessing so much of one with an equal showing of another. When they compiled a hymn book for the Anglican Church they entitled it "A Collection of Hymns, Ancient and Modern." A fitting descriptive name for Dundas would be "A Collection of Houses, Ancient and Modern."

They call the place the Valley City, and that is quite right. In only one way can it be reached or departed from on the level, and that is by the canal route. All other ways the traveller is led up and down hill; nevertheless they are pleasant ways and well worth travelling. It took its name—Dundas—from the name of the long military highway opened up by Governor Sim-

coe from the St. Lawrence to London, and christened after Henry Dundas, Viscount Melville, Secretary of War in the Duke of Portland's Cabinet. That Dundas Street, then the way of the warrior, is now known better among the County Councillors and others as the Governor's Road, and is used safely by the followers of the peaceful art of farming, and pleasant pastime of bicycling or driving. At the time when the tramp of armed men was more common in the colony than now, Dundas was an important place, and only the advent of steam railways saved it from losing all its natural loveliness and becoming a great and bustling centre of trade and commerce. Lucky accident that discovered the value of steam and saved Dundas! It has been all evolution in the town in the valley until finally the place seems to have discovered its mission and settled down to fulfill that mission as a beautiful outskirt of Hamilton, with a sufficiency of manufacturing and other business to warrant its existence as an incorporated town.

In those earlier days, when valley people were flighty and soaring in enterprise as the mighty hills about their homes, they projected and successfully carried through the Desjardins Canal scheme and for years fondly clung to the deluded hope that their town was to be the future great city of the province. They had good enough right to the aspiring, too, for at that time, with the shipping they had, their port was the busiest along Ontario's shores. It was in those days that the sight of from twelve to fifteen large masted boats—grain, lumber and general carriers, from seaport places on the St. Lawrence River, gathered in the canal basin. In those days the shores of the basin were lined with great warehouses where grain and other products were stored for shipment. From Galt, Guelph, Preston, Durham, and all other inland centres in Dundas direction, the farmers brought their stuff to the canal for shipment, and it was no uncommon sight in the busy season to see as many as a hundred teams hauling loads down King Street to the warehouses at the canal. It used also to be the headquarters for importations by water, and many a shipment of immigrants first set foot on Canadian soil from the basin wharves. Many of the poor wretches, too, died about there, and their bones, to the number of several hundred bodies, mingle with the dust of cholera victims in the dismal cemetery on the heights, their deaths being due to ship fever. James Reynolds, now dead, was an engineer on the canal, nearly 60 years ago, and handled many of the vessels whose prows were pointed toward the canal mouth from the lake. The steamer Queen of the West was one of the first boats to ply the mad waters, and there were many others.

The canal was a fine piece of work dredged through the immense marsh that at that time lay to the east of the town. Since that time, however, both canal and marsh have been gradually undergoing the evolution process, and today hundreds of acres of land used for gardening were at that time far under water. The drying up is going on even more rapidly now than ever before, and the day is sure to come when the finest garden land in the country will be found in the marsh land in the valley between the heights and Dundas. Coote's Paradise they call that piece of country even to this day, though most people now who use that name do not know what it means. In all past time the marsh has been noted as the gathering of water fowl, and in the early days when the men of war, stationed at York and other places, wanted good shooting, they would come here for it. Captain Coote, of the King's Regiment, the Eighth, was one of those sport lovers, and so great was his passion, and so assiduously did he follow the sport at this place that it was nick-named Coote's Paradise.

Of course when the boom of shipping was on the Dundas people embarked in all kinds of manufacturing ventures, and having an abundance of water power handy, factories of all kinds sprang up on every hand. They were mostly of stone, hewn from the rocky hills around, and for that reason they will stand, making the town the picturesque town it is. On nearly every street of the place ruins of some kind or other are to be found, and each ruin represents a step in the evolution of the place.

Back of the cotton mills and at the foot of the hill leading up to Col. Gwyn's residence, is a good specimen, which in some degree illustrates them all. It is all that is left to tell the story of an oatmeal and flour mill which flourished in the fifties. Down about the canal basin and along the banks of the creek, leading from Ancaster, the deserted places are most numerous, and wherever they appear they lend a charm and beauty to the scene. It is out of the Valley City, too, that the great iron gates now hanging at the Dundurn Park entrance, once used to hang, and it is said that the stone blocks on which they rested are still to be seen.

But what has been written here is not intended to go beyond the canal and its influence upon the town. Old residents will talk of its past glories; present day residents see it merely as a sort of recreation spot where boating may be indulged in in the summer and where in winter there is good skating. Today the basin instead of being filled as of yore with grain laden vessels waiting the spring time and the opening of navigation to go on their

way to Montreal, is a deserted looking spot, all ice and snow, its pile lined side breaking away and ceasing to be of value in keeping back the caving shore line.

Nothing in the shape of shipping, but a steam yacht and a few sail boats now float on its waters, and the enterprise of the town is turned in different directions, all in the midst of scenes unexcelled by nature in any other part of the world. So beautiful, so wonderful, in fact, that artists even from far-away Japan, have made the place their home, and spent their best efforts upon the beauties they found so lavishly distributed in and around the corporation confines.

I got the following interesting information from Oliver Hobson, still living in Dundas. His memory is good for a man of his age, 78. Mr. Hobson came to Dundas in 1864, and was engaged as servant by George Rolph, who gave him $10 a month and board, good pay in those days. George Rolph lived in the house now occupied by W. G. Mallett. The entrance to this property was on King Street, near or exactly where Lang's store now stands. The wall and gates were taken down by Allan McNab. Jimmy Lomas took the stones of the wall down and numbered them; these and the gates were removed to Dundurn Park, Hamilton. Col. J. J. Grafton is of the opinion that these gates are now at the entrance of the House of Providence gateway. I questioned Mr. Hobson carefully about this and he is emphatic that he is quite right. He is sustained in this argument by Mr. Butler, of the Hamilton Spectator. I think the opinion of these two gentlemen should settle this question. On some of these stones the initials "J. A." (James Allen) the stonecutter, may still be seen. The stones and gates were removed from Dundas about 1850. George Rolph intended to have a private park, the centre of which would be where Knox Church now stands, but at this time his wife died and Mr. Rolph lost all ambition in this scheme. George Rolph now accepted an offer from Allan McNab and Hon. Sir Wm. Cayley for the whole of his property. This fine estate ran east from Sydenham Street, taking in the R. J. Nelson grape yard, down to the property owned by the late Chas. Morson. Blyth, a surveyor from Hamilton, laid off in town lots that portion of the property lying east of Sydenham Street. This was done by order of the owners, McNab and Cayley. The lots did not sell and George Rolph took back again a good many lots as part payment of the sale.

Dundas Park—Dr. Weeks and others wanted to buy this property from George Rolph for a race course, but Mr. Rolph

would not sell it, as he was on principle opposed to racing. John F. Woods bought what is known as the Lawrason property, north of the Park, the Kay farm and the property now owned by Swithin King and the Dundas Driving Park. Mr. Wood was only a go-between for Dr. Walker, who immediately bought from Mr. Wood all the property and made the present Dundas Park. In the course of time R. T. Wilson had possession of the park, and in 1885 sold it to the town of Dundas.

George Rolph, an army man in the early days, travelled from Detroit to Kingston on horse-back, as there was no other way of travelling. The route ran through Dundas. When a horse gave out he traded it or gave it away and got another one. One day he was passing through Dundas along the York Road. His horse was spent; he saw a good one in the little beaver meadow on the property where Col. Knowles now lives. He took down the fence, turned his own horse loose, caught the good one, and put saddle and bridle on it. Just then the owner, Mr. Lyons, grandfather of W. E. Lyons, appeared on the scene and said: "Now, you are stealing my horse." "No," said Mr. Rolph, "I am only taking it. You keep mine and charge the difference to the Government." Mr. Lyons had to be satisfied and Mr. Rolph rode off.

Mr. Hobson still owns the rocking chair in which Mr. Rolph as a baby was rocked. Mr. Hobson said to the writer: "I am not a rich man, but I would not sell that chair for $1,000."

The first Roman Catholic Church of the town stood on the lot back of Cowper's express office. Father O'Reilly was the priest in charge, and he lived in a little brick cottage where Cowper's express office now stands. This cottage was given by Mr. Rolph as a gift to the priest. "So long as he continued to live there," but if he left the house it was to revert to the Rolph estate. The church was burned down and the Roman Catholics bought from Matthews and Allen the property on which St. Augustine's Church and the priest's house now stand. They wanted to sell the brick cottage but found it did not belong to them. Mr. Rolph generously told them to get a purchaser and he would make them a deed, which he gave them as a gift. Mr. Rolph gave the stone free for the foundation of the church, and it was quarried on the Sydenham hillside. There was a toll-gate on the Sydenham at that time, as the old timers will remember. It was owned by Mr. Rolph. The Roman Catholics asked that they might be freed from the toll on the loads of stone brought through. Mr. Rolph would not consent, but told the gate-keeper to keep

track of the loads and Mr. Rolph remitted the amount to the Sydenham Road.

Coleman, Hart and Gray got a charter to build the Sydenham Road. The charter was about to lapse and Mr. Rolph took it up. He built the road by day labor. He went to Quebec, then seat of Government, and got permission to charge a toll equal to ten per cent. of the cost. The road would become free when the expenditure was met. James Hare opposed the granting of the charter as he was interested in the Horse-Kill Road and surrounding property. To meet Hare's objection a forty foot road was surveyed, laid off and mapped, commencing at Humphrey Dyment's gate, running to the York Road, striking the latter at the line fence between the cemetery and the McIntosh farm. I think that this is not generally known by the township and town fathers.

Hon. Robt. Spence, formerly the Postmaster-General, owned and lived in the house now occupied by Mrs. Thos. Millington.

The Grafton store was owned by Postmaster Graham's father, who conducted an exclusive grocery business on this stand. The Grafton home, now called "The Maples," was owned by James Coleman, who named it "Antrim Cottage." It was a cottage then; the late Mr. J. B. Grafton put the second story on it. Mr. Coleman also built Mr. Powell's store and conducted business there under the name of Coleman and Dickee. He also owned and operated a grist mill on the same stand as W. J. Kerr's mill. The Kerr mill was owned and operated by a man named Ewart, who built what is now known as the Ewart dam. The Ewarts lived in the house formerly occupied by M. D. Wilson, on the site of the present Bertram offices. This building was torn down a few years ago.

A good story is told of Mr. Binkley, a rough, intelligent old pioneer. He came to the Ewart house one morning dressed in picturesque garb, broad brimmed straw hat, flannel shirt open at the throat, full cloth pants, one leg thrust into the leg of a long boot, the other gracefully resting on the lug of the other boot. He knocked at the door, which was soon opened by Mrs. Ewart. "I want to see Jimmie," said Mr. Binkley. "What do you mean, sir—do you know who you are talking to?" "Oh, yes," said the unabashed Mr. Binkley, "before you were married you were called Fannie Crooks." Mr. Binkley managed to see Jimmie, who laughed heartily when told of the incident by his wife. "Oh," said he, "you should not have said anything, that man is one of

the wealthiest men of this section, and is a good patron of my private bank."

The blankets that took the first prize at the first great world's exhibition in the Crystal Palace, England, were made in Dundas, by Black Jack Patterson. He made the Queen a present of these blankets. Mr. Patterson built the house—McKechnie House—now occupied by Miss Collins. He lived there for many years.

The first screws made in Canada were made in Dundas by Mr. J. P. Billington.

The first cannon in Dundas was made by the present Bertram firm for Maj. Notman, who had an artillery company.

The Burlington Canal was opened in 1823. The following is a table of tolls:

Flour, per barrel, eight pence; Whiskey, per barrel, 12 pence; Salt, per barrel, 12 pence; Boats under 5 tons, 5 shillings; Boats over 5 tons, 15 pence per ton.

Vegetables and fruit passed free. A drawbridge was constructed over the canal, and no toll was to be collected for its use.

In 1826 the Desjardins Canal Co. received the charter for its construction. Peter Desjardins was the chief man in the company, hence the name. The canal was to remain the property of the company for fifty years; at the expiration of that period it became the property of the Canadian Government. The canal was to be 132 feet wide, and that 132 feet was to include the banks of the canal, any roads or tow-paths.

The Dundas and Waterloo Road was then projected. The charter for this road was granted in 1829. Absalom Slade & Son were the principal promoters. The road was to cost $125,000. Toll gates were to be erected not less than nine miles apart. Here are a few of the tolls—they were so heavy that travelling on the road was almost prohibited. It must be remembered that money in those days had easily four times the buying power of money today:

One pair of horses and wagon, 45c; one pair of horses and wagon with steel springs, 90c; 1 horse and sleigh, 15c. The Act further says: Where the road passes through a district whereon pines of great length and magnitude exclude the rays of the sun, the trees may be felled to the distance of one chain on each side of the road."

Mr. D. Patterson gave us the following information:

The Great Western Railway made the present cut for the canal. The canal originally went in a long curve around by the Valley Inn. It was the intention to have a swing bridge over the canal, but no good foundation could be obtained for abutments. It was decided to change the route of the canal to its present position, and the Great Western Co. gave Dundas $30,000 for the stoppage of the canal while the bridge was being built. An American company had the contract of building the line from Niagara to London. The contract called for them to be able to run a train through by the first day of January, 1854, which they did. The stretch across the marsh was very difficult. No bottom could be found; while oak piles were brought down from Copetown and were spliced and driven into the marsh to a depth of 100 feet and still there was no bottom. The gang worked for two years, night and day. They piled in gravel and dirt on top of those piles but it all sank in the ooze, and in two years they had the track only ten feet above the marsh. Piles were driven into this embankment and the trestle work was finished as they thought. One morning when they came back to work they found that the track had settled five feet during the night and fresh trestle work had to be built on top of this, and finally to their great relief the track stopped sinking. All of this trouble was brought about by a desire of the company to please two Canadian Directors, Sir Allan McNab and Dr. Hamilton. McNab wanted the line near or through Dundurn, which he then owned, and Dr. Hamilton owned the Fisher property at Dundas. He thought that by running the line along the mountain side he could open up several building stone quarries. The stone was too porous and contractors would not buy it nor use it. In fact the stone for the Grand Trunk bridges near Dundas was brought from a quarry on the town line between Beverley and Dumfries, owned by James Seager. If it had not been for the selfishness of the two directors the line would probably have come through the McKittrick property and on up through the Woodley property, following the original route of the T., H. & B.

Rev. Ralph Leeming

An Address from his parishioners and friends.

To the Reverend Ralph Leeming, Missionary of the
Church of England, Ancaster.

Reverend Sir:

The undersigned Church Wardens, Vestry, and Congregations of Barton, Ancaster, and Hamilton, Magistrate and other inhabitants of the District of Gore, learning with deep and sincere regret, that you are soon going to leave this mission, and return to your native country, cannot permit you to depart without offering you some testimony of that respect and esteem in which we have long held your personal, as well as your clerical character.

Through a period of fourteen years, during which you have discharged the duties of a missionary in this part of this Diocese, we have the satisfaction of testifying to your steady and unwearied exertions to promote the cause of Christianity in the important situation of a minister of the Gospel of Salvation.

In your separation from this community at large, and in particular from those of the Church who have been long accustomed to your Public Services, we feel a regret not easily expressed.

United as we have been so long, in bonds far stronger than those of any common tie—cemented by time and frequent intercourse and without one breach to distract that union created by unanimity of feeling, action, and worship, our separation is by us the more deeply felt.

We have witnessed your constant attention to all those duties required of you, and we have participated in those feelings which Religion points out, and which ought to exist between a Christian minister and his flock.

The distance of space which is shortly to separate you from us, leaves us small hopes of our ever again being reunited in that relationship in which we have so long and so happily stood; but we trust that you will believe these expressions as sincere, as they are spontaneously offered—that wherever in the Providence of God your lot may be cast, you have our hearty prayers that you may enjoy happiness, peace, prosperity and every earthly blessing.

In departing from this country, you carry with you our earnest wishes for your safe arrival, with your beloved consort, and that your native shores may offer you the sacred welcome of a happy home. Had your longer residence with us been ordered consistent with your views and arrangements, the continuance of your services would have been far preferred to the chance that may attend the appointment of a successor; but as that seems not to be the case, we beg to offer you our affectionate farewell.

District of Gore, U. C., July, 1830.

John Willson, J. P.
Chairman Qr. Session.
Allan N. MacNab
Wm. M. Jarvis,
Sheriff G. D.
W. Crooks, J. P.
Thos. Taylor, District Judge
John Law, Clk. G. D. Ct.
Jas. B. Ewart
Robt. Berrie
Geo. Rolph
Geo. S. Tiffany
James Durand, Sr.
Joseph Ireland
Richard Beasley, J. P.
John Simm, J. P.
Philip Sovereign, J. P.
Richard Hatt
B. McDermot
Stephen Randall
District Schoolmaster
P. H. Hamilton, J. P.
D. K. Servos, J. P.
Daniel Lewis, J. P.
Elijah Secord, J. P.
William J. Kerr
John Chisholm
David Beasley
Wm. Notman
Wm. Holme, J. P.
Matthew Crooks, J. P.
William Case
Jas. McBride, J. P.
F. G. Winslow
George Hamilton, M. P. P.
Lewis Burwell
Danl. O'Reilly, J. P.
Benjamin Tydd
Joseph Rolston
B. Ferguson
Alec. S. Milne
Michael Aikman
John Rolph
George Carey
J. Hathaway
M. C. Nickerson
Samuel Andrus
J. Brant
John Daniels
Peter Hogeboom
Geo. Hogeboom
Daniel Showers
E. Ritchie
W. D. Ritchie
John Findlay
James Chep
Thomas Baker
Edm. Burton
W. C. Ross
John Willison
Theophilus Sampson
Stephen Kitson
Jacob Kern, Jr.
William B. Proctor
William Kern
Samuel Kern
Church Wardens—
David Kern
Thos. Hammill
Job Lodor
Samuel Tisdale
Vestry—
William Proctor, J. P.
Paul Huffman
John Almas
Andrew Flock
Joseph Rymal
William Rymal
Conrad Filman
Peter R. Ludlow
John Aikman
Patrick Hammill
Jacob Filman
Jacob Rymal

Peter Filman
Jno. Burwell
Geo. Rousseaux
Oliver Tiffany, B. A.,
Physician and Surgeon
Robert Hammill
Charles Hammill
Alexander R. McKay
John Brackenridge
Alexander Everitt
J. Thorner
Wm. A. Ritchie
John D. McKay
Thomas Choate
John Erwin
Henry Pigott
J. Hamilton (M. D. ?)
John Hatt
John Duggan
John Smith
J. H. VanEvery
John Winer
James G. Strobridge
Abraham Smith
Michael Homer
Wm. Thomas
Wm. Findlay
James Racey, J. P.
Hugh Wilson, J. P.
Wm. McCay, J. P.
W. Chisholm, J. P.
Robert Land, J. P.
Thos. Racey
Henry Beasley
James Brown
John A. Cameron
Andrew T. Kirby
Joseph Shepard
Charles Duffy
Andrew McIlroy
J. D. Oliver
Alexander Ferguson
Wm. B. Sheldon
John Aikman
Jas. H. Aikman
Geo. Tiffany, A. M.
James H. Sampson
George Douglass
Preserved Cooley
Asa McGregory
Eli Erwin
D. S. Ross
David Newton
James Gurnett
Samuel Dakin
David Marr
H. G. Barlow
Gabl. Gurnett
James French
William F. Barnes
Paul Huffman, Jr.
Jos. Hammill

A Backward Look

By J. A. GRIFFIN

In the three years which have elapsed since volume seven of our papers was published, in 1916, the members of the Wentworth Historical Society have been so absorbed in patriotic and other duties that many interesting events have passed unrecorded in our annals.

The great world war practically came to an end when the armistice was signed, Nov. 11, 1918, though the peace treaty has not yet been signed. It is not the intention to here attempt even a brief epitome of the four years and three months of desolating, deadly strife. That work is being thoroughly attended to by a multitude of writers. But it appears to be appropriate for this Society to record a short summary of the part taken by this little corner of the Dominion of Canada.

The City of Hamilton supplied about 11,000 men, and nearly 3,000 more were contributed by Wentworth County to the Canadian Army, being more than the equivalent of a division in the German army. Every branch of the military service was represented in this little army.

While this man power was being sent and doing its duty the factories of Hamilton supplied vast stores of munitions and clothing, and the gardens, farms and orchards of the country sent the necessary food. In preserving, packing and forwarding fruit and vegetables the Red Cross Society made a record that was an inspiration to, if not the envy of, other parts of the country, and this was nearly all gratuitous work of the men and women of that useful Society.

Nor has this city any reason to be ashamed of its voluntary contributions to the various patriotic funds. According to the statement of a Toronto gentleman, who took the trouble to gather the figures, Hamilton has contributed $4,629,011 to these funds in the period between Aug. 4, 1914, and Oct. 15, 1918. These figures do not include the subscriptions to the various Victory Loans. The amount is made up as follows:

Belgian Relief, $67,108; British Navy League, $92,904; British Red Cross, $274,613; Canadian Patriotic Fund, $2,329,706;

Canadian Red Cross, $433,055; Catholic Army Huts, Knights of Columbus, $40,350; East Hamilton War Relief, $4,612; field comforts and the like, $15,375; Great War Veterans' Association, $22,098; Hospital Fund, $30,941; Hospital Ship Fund, $17,424; Italian Red Cross, $11,159; Navy League of Canada, $29,625; Polish (Jewish) Relief, $32,503; Prisoners of War, $20,975; recruiting purposes, $2,783; Red Triangle Y. M. C. A., military work, $140,000; returned soldiers, $51,010; Save a Soldier, $31,477; soldiers' insurance, $342,656; Salvation Army (comfort huts), $5,800; Secours National (French Red Cross), $140,475; Serbian Relief and Montenegrin, $25,000; tobacco fund, $7,600; Women's War Work, $106,297; local Red Cross, estimated value of wool and supplies purchased which have not been included in C. or B. R. C. contribution, $353,465, making a grand total of $4,629,011.

Notwithstanding the great drain on its man power the city has continued to grow in numbers, and the Assessment Commissioner estimates that the population is now nearly 120,000 and growing daily. New enterprises have been located here and old factories have been enlarged.

This city did not undertake many great improvements during the war years, though many projects for improving and beautifying its natural advantages have been discussed.

An important event which engaged the attention of the city in common with all the rest of Canada was the general election held in December, 1917, when Union Government was endorsed by the popular vote.

On the 15th of March, 1919, a by-law regarding Hydro-Electric Railways was by a referendum voted upon by the property owners of Hamilton and carried with a large majority. This by-law created a liability for about $6,000,000, which is certainly a large sum for 120,000 people. The promoters and advocates maintain that the project will be a marvellous benefit to the community.

Not many buildings of a public nature have been added to the city during the past two years. The first section of the Mountain Hospital has been completed and occupied. The beautiful situation, the clear open spaces around it, the magnificent outlook and the fresh, bracing air make this an ideal location for a hospital.

The new Technical School, or the first unit of it, is under

construction, and future volumes of our papers will have the opportunity of detailing its progress and its usefulness.

The eloquent pastor of a Hamilton church recently said that this city was remarkable for the number of its very aged people. Anyone who studies the columns of our daily papers must be impressed by the frequency of notices regarding octogenarians and nonogenarians. Brief reference to a few of these is made in the following short accounts of some of the departed citizens who during their lives were identified with this Society or were in some way especially connected with the history of Hamilton:

Joseph H. Smith, late County School Inspector, was born in the Township of Flamborough West in 1839, and died in Hamilton, Sept., 1917. His family were U. E. Loyalists, who were among the earliest settlers of Flamborough West. In 1794 Isaac Smith was married to Ann Showers, the fifth daughter of Michael Showers, who with his two eldest sons served in Butler's Rangers. After the close of the war of the revolution Michael Showers settled in Flamborough West, and part of the Town of Dundas is located on what was his farm. Miss Showers was born in 1774, and was therefore twenty years of age when she married. Joseph H. Smith was a grandson of this pioneer couple. He was studious, ambitious and determined to succeed in his chosen profession—the training of the children of his native country. After qualifying for the work he taught in various schools, widening his experience and fitting himself for greater usefulness. In or about 1870 he was appointed Inspector of Schools for the County of Wentworth, which position he held till he retired in January, 1917, after nearly fifty years active and useful service. He was an enthusiast for the improvement of the schools, not only in regard to the subjects taught and the methods of teaching, but in the matter of good and convenient buildings with attractive surroundings; many are the monuments to his untiring efforts in that respect to be found in the country. Some of the subjects in which he fostered an interest among the children were history, art, nature study and the cultivation of school gardens. His aim was to create or encourage in the pupils a real love for the subjects studied, not merely following a routine from necessity. As a means of awakening an interest in Canadian history, he suggested to this Society, in 1908, that we would do well to offer a series of prizes to be competed for by the scholars of the public schools of the country. The Society decided to do so, and the subject selected was "The Quebec Tercentenary" which was being celebrated that year. The result was a great interest being

taken in the subject of Canadian history, and many thoughtful, well worded essays were prepared in all sections of the county. In June, 1894, a committee from The Wentworth Historical Society waited upon the County Council and urged that a prize of one hundred dollars be offered for the best essay on the history of Wentworth County. The Council acceded to the request, Mr. Smith entered the competition, and was awarded the prize. His "Historical Sketch of the County of Wentworth" was published in 1897. It is undoubtedly the best history of the County which has as yet appeared; but Mr. Smith was not satisfied with it and planned for an extended and much more complete volume. For this purpose he continued to gather facts, statistics and legends as he journeyed through the country in the performance of his duties. He was prevented from carrying out his design, but there is reason to believe that the great mass of material he accumulated will be utilized. During the years that Mr. Smith filled the President's chair of this Society, his initiative, his vigor and optimism led to the accomplishment of much good historical work.

Stephen Franklin Lazier was born at Picton, Ont., on July 1, 1841, his ancestors being United Empire Loyalists. He was educated in the public schools and in Victoria College, Cobourg. In 1863 he came to Hamilton to practice his profession, and in 1864 was admitted to the bar. He was a life long member of Centenary Methodist Church and was an indefatigable worker as a Sunday School teacher and as a member of the Quarterly and Trust Boards, being the faithful recording steward for many years, his work in that office being only ended by his reath, Oct. 4, 1916. As a citizen he took a particular interest in the subject of education, and in 1886 was elected to the Board of Education as representative of Ward 2, and remained on the Board continuously till 1910, when he was succeeded by his son, Mr. E. F. Lazier. Mr. Lazier took also an interest in the history of the country, was on the executive of the Wentworth Historical Society when it was organized in January, 1889; he was president of the United Empire Loyalists Society and a member of the local Branch of the Quebec Battlefield Association.

Mrs. Clementina Fessenden, a member of the Ladies' Committee of the Wentworth Historical Society, and for many years our Corresponding Secretary, was deeply interested in historical work. She became quite famous as the originator of Empire Day. Another object to which she rendered much help was the Soldiers' Monument at Stoney Creek, on the spot where the British soldiers captured the American battery, on the north side of the road.

Mrs. Geo. H. Mills, another member of the Ladies' Committee, and the widow of our esteemed and much regretted first President, was born in Picton, Ont., April 16, 1834, came to Hamilton as a bride in 1855, and after a long and useful life passed away Feb. 7, 1919.

Adam Rutherford, who died at Grimsby, Ont., July 1, 1917, was associated with the history of Hamilton more than fifty years. In 1866 he was a private in No. 6 company 13th Royal Regiment of Hamilton at the Battle of Limeridge (or Ridgeway as it is commonly called). In 1880 he was a member of the City Council and throughout his life was identified with the business interests of this city.

Augustus Grossman, born in 1842, and a resident of Hamilton from 1852 till his death on Aug. 24, 1917, was always connected with the musical interests of the city, as a member of musical organizations and as a dealer in the instruments and publications required by musicians. He served the country as a volunteer in the 13th Regiment and was a private in No. 6 Company at Ridgeway, June 2, 1866.

James Johnson, generally known as Professor Johnson, was born in Scotland in 1850 and came to Hamilton about 1872. He died suddenly on December 7, 1917. For forty years he was instructor in singing in the public schools, implanting a love of music and laying a good foundation in the study of that art in thousands of the pupils, winning their love and esteem by his kindliness and good humor.

Alfred Ward, a native of Quebec Province, was for more than a quarter of a century a loyal and energetic citizen of Hamilton. Mr. Ward, was an official member and worker in Centenary Methodist Church and was a representative of Ward 3 on the Board of Education of this city for a number of years; his service on that Board being terminated by his death, July 23, 1917. In his youth he was a member of the Montreal Corps of Engineers and served in it at the battle of Pigeon Hill in the Fenian Raid.

Joseph Hobson, who died in this city Dec. 19, 1917, aged 84 years, was Chief Engineer of the Grand Trunk Railway, and made his home in Hamilton the greater part of his life, being one of its distinguished citizens. Among his many engineering achievements was the designing and construction of the Sarnia tunnel, a work which gave him a high reputation in the engineering world.

Ralph Leeming Gunn, was born in this city Dec. 26, 1846, educated in its public schools and spent practically all his life in Hamilton. His father, Daniel C. Gunn, had a locomotive factory in the northeast of the city, which was a forerunner of the great manufactories of iron and machinery now filling that section of Hamilton. R. L. Gunn as an accountant and auditor had much to do with city affairs, and the last eleven years he filled the position of Grand Secretary of the Grand Lodge of Canada, A. F. & A. M. in the Province of Ontario. He was a sergeant in No. 6 Co. 13th Regiment in 1865 and 1866, was with the Service Company of the regiment in Windsor, Ont., from Nov. 20, 1865, till its return April 7, 1866, and was at Ridgeway, June 2, 1866.

Mrs. Mary A. (Birely) Galbreaith, a daughter of the late L. D. Birely and a granddaughter of James Gage, who owned the farm now commonly called the battlefield farm, near Stoney Creek, was born in the township of Saltfleet in the year 1827. In 1846 she married the late D. B. Galbreaith and they made their home at the corner of Main Street and Ferguson Ave. in Hamilton. There they spent the remainder of their lives. Mrs. Galbreaith died Dec. 11, 1917, aged 90 years, her husband predeceased her two years earlier, in his ninety-fifth year.

Mrs. Lorenda Kelly, was the widow of the late Daniel Kelly, who served the city as alderman for many years and who was aver ninety years of age when he died. Mrs. Kelly ws a daughter of Dey Knight and a granddaughter of Richard Springer, one of the early settlers at the Head of the Lake, as Hamilton was then called. She was born Nov. 7, 1820, in a frame house on the lot now occupied by the Stanley Mills Department store. All her life was spent in Hamilton, which in her lifetime grew from a small village, without a church and with one small schoolhouse, to a city of over 110,000, with scores of beautiful churches and many large, handsome schoolhouses, equipped with all the modern appliances and conveniences and crowded with nearly 20,000 children. She died March 14, 1918, in her 98th year.

Mrs. Emily C. Lister, daughter of Rev. Matthew Magill, was born in Connaught, Ireland, in 1827, and came to Hamilton with her parents when a child. In 1846 she married the late Joseph Lister. Mrs. Lister died July 3, 1918, aged 91 years. Nine of her thirteen children survive, four of whom are well-known citizens of Hamilton.

Mrs. John Barr, born in County Antrim, Ireland, Nov. 24, 1824, died in Hamilton, Ont., Oct. 3, 1918, nearly 94 years old, having been a resident of this city more than sixty years. Mrs.

Barr was for many years a teacher in the Sunday School of the Church of the Ascension and was highly esteemed by her scholars, numbers of whom became her steadfast friends. She was the widow of the late John Barr, Esq., barrister, and her son, Mr. John Barr, the druggist, has been a member of the Wentworth Historical Society ever since its organization and is one of its Board of Directors.

John McRobert was born in the township of Saltfleet, but spent most of his life in Hamilton, and for several years was a member of the city council. In 1866 he was a private in No. 4 Company 13th Regiment, and afterward was a color-sergeant in that company and one of the best marksmen of that time. Later he was for a number of years the quartermaster of the 77th Wentworth Regiment. He died in this city Nov. 22, 1918.

Harry Louis Frost, though comparatively a young man, being in his 45th year at the time of his death, March 7th, 1919, had crowded a wonderful amount of usefulness into those years. Not only did he build up a great and prosperous business which gave employment to a large number of people, but his energy and whole-hearted interest in every good work won the esteem and affection of his fellow citizens. He was an active member of the Board of Trade and was its President in 1911-12; also a member of the Board of Education from 1910 till 1919. As chairman of the Trust Board of the Methodist Deaconess Home, he instituted a whirlwind campaign which cleared off the mortgage and left that institution free of debt. His advice and assistance also helped nearly every other benevolent institution in this city. His place will be hard to fill.

ERRATUM.

On page 32, line 27: Read, "Susan—Married John Watterworth," instead of John Wentworth.

PAPERS AND RECORDS

OF THE

Wentworth Historical Society

VOLUME NINE

AUTHORS OF PAPERS ARE ALONE RESPONSIBLE FOR STATEMENTS AND OPINIONS EXPRESSED HEREIN

HAMILTON
The Griffin & Richmond Co. Ltd., Printers
1920

WENTWORTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

Officers

President . . . . . REV. P. L. SPENCER
1st Vice-President . . . . . MRS. M. HENDERSON
2nd Vice-President . . . . . J. A. GRIFFIN
Secretary-Treasurer . . . . . J. H. LAND
Historian . . . . . J. A. GRIFFIN
Librarian . . . . . J. H. LAND
Auditor . . . . . W. A. DAVIDSON

Executive Committee

Richard Butler
J. Gardner
Lt.-Col. J. A. Orr
J. G. Cloke
Kirwan Martin
H. F. Gardiner
F. E. Perney
W. F. Moore
J. A. Barr
J. Plant
Col. W. R. Turnbull

Ladies' Committee

President—Mrs. M. Henderson, 47 Forest Ave.
Secretary—Mrs. J. Gardner, 138 Breadalbane St.

ERRATA

Vol. IX. Wentworth Historical Papers and Records.

Page 31, line 36, read 4th Lincoln instead of 2nd Lincoln.
Page 32, line 22, read 4th Lincoln instead of 2nd Lincoln.
Page 33, line 7, read 4th Lincoln instead of 2nd Lincoln.
line 26, read 1849 instead of 1889.
line 40, read 4th Lincoln instead of 2nd Lincoln.
Page 35, line 11, read 4th Lincoln instead of 2nd Lincoln.
Page 36, line 12, insert "West" before Lincoln Regiment.
Page 38, line 30, read 1827 instead of 1828.
Page 46, line 8, read (7) instead of (8).
Page 48, line 22, read 95th instead of 94th.
Page 51, line 32, read (7) instead of (6).

SYNOPSIS OF PROCEEDINGS

1919 - 1920.

The execrable boat service rendered the usual annual outing and meeting in Wabasso Park abortive, the reports being presented to the Executive at a later meeting. The unsettled state of things generally has militated heavily against the character of our work, public interest being diverted to other and more public lines. The Executive has been able to do some very useful work: Having had the tomb of the late Dr. Case restored and repaired; the union of the two Historical bodies has occupied considerable attention, but so far no definite result has been reached. Several young ladies have been added to the Committees, and with improved domestic conditions, it will no doubt resume its activity.

Messrs. Perney, H. F. Gardner and Col. W. R. Turnbull were elected to the Executive, vice A. C. Beasley, J. W. Jones and J. H. Smith, deceased. At an open meeting and luncheon in the Connaught Hotel, further steps were considered towards marking the landing place of La Salle. An autobiography of our late President, Geo. H. Mills, was presented by Mr. Turnbull and is published in this volume.

Arrangements have been made with the Public Library Board for monthly meetings, at the first of which the history of his family was presented by Mr. Griffin.

J. H. LAND, Secretary.

NOTES FROM THE LIFE OF OUR LATE PRESIDENT

GEORGE H. MILLS.

About 1890 he commenced an autobiography for the information of his family, dealing principally with his public career, and from which the following information is selected.

His grandfather, John Mills, was a Scotch U. E. Loyalist, living at the time of the Revolution on Staten Island, N. Y. In common with other Loyalists he lost all his property.

His son James, our President's father, was born in Newark, N. J., in 1774. Coming to Canada in 1793 he took up Indian trading, disposing of the furs he bought from them in Newark, briging back goods for the Indians and becoming very friendly with them. He settled in Hamilton in 1800 and married Christina Hess in 1803. The Hess family first settled in Pennsylvania, where she was born, coming to Canada with the "Pennsylvania Dutch" immigration about 1800.

In 1816 James Mills bought a farm in the west end, 200 acres, bounded by Locke and Hess streets, the Mountain and the Bay, at $2.00 per acre, keeping 100 acres and selling the other 100 to Peter Hess.

Mr. Geo. H. Mills was born Nov. 20th, 1827, the youngest, but one, of a family of 10. His brothers were Michael, Samuel, John, Nelson and William; his sisters, Ann, Sarah, Catharine, Harriet and Celiste.

The farm was well stocked and cultivated and the family well off and comfortable. After attending several convenient schools he went to that kept by Patrick Thornton, a Scotchman,

whose comment to his pupil on leaving, was, "George, you have considerable ability, but your application is not worth a straw." After a short term at Victoria College, Cobourg, he went to the late Dean Geddes' school for four years, qualifying for his entry into the study of Law. He was articled to the late Hugh B. Wilson, with whom he remained a year. After a short term spent in preparation for the University, which was abandoned owing to a lack of funds, he was articled to the late Judge Burton, passed his final exam., and was called to the Bar in 1851. Taking up practice he took life easily, not being one of the hustlers seeking for business. In 1852 he was invited to Boston, when the Boston and Ogdensburg Railway was opened, meeting many of the most prominent men in the U. S. and Canada, among them Lord Elgin, whose address made a deep and lasting impression. Between 1852 and 55 he was gazetted a Lieutenant in the Militia, rose to the rank of Captain, and organized a company.

On March 13th, 1855, he married Frances Rebecca Duncan.

He was elected Alderman for St. George ward in 1857, and advocated the planting and ornamenting of the "Gore," then a waste and unsightly place, in opposition to those who wanted to build an Arcade there. We seem to have aldermen of the latter calibre with us today.

In 1858 he was elected Mayor by the Council, as the custom was then. That year was one of great commercial depression, many public and civic works had to be abandoned from lack of funds, and the distress in the country was most acute. The Mayor was besieged daily by hundreds asking for work or help, and as many as possible were put to work in relays of three days each, opening and mending roads, etc., thus helping in some small measure to minimize the distress. Of course there were some malingerers who were promptly dealt with. A notable fact is that not one Canadian came begging—they wanted work.

Mr. Mills was instrumental in having the Crystal Palace built and fair grounds provided, where for many years the Hamilton Fair drew crowds of exhibitors and spectators.

The Horticultural Society owes to him, as President, the place it held for many years as among the best, if not the best, in Canada. By his efforts in conjunction with Dr. Cragie, Daniel MacNab and Judge Logie, the wealthy citizens were encouraged to build conservatories. The rivalry between their gardeners became intense, and the result filled the Old Drill Hall with a pro-

fusion of rare and beautiful exotics. He was, in 1873, presented with a silver service and a Life Membership in the Society.

In 1861 the City faced a financial collapse, and Mr. Mills went to Quebec, with others, to seek aid from the Government, and succeeded in getting the financial tangle straightened out, and at the same time a restriction was placed on the City to prevent its running into debt so deeply again. To him, also, with Sir Allan MacNab and Hon. Isaac Buchanan, belongs the credit for the introduction and passing of the Municipal Loan Act of 1873.

In 1869 he was again elected Alderman and worked energetically for the promotion of the Hamilton and Lake Erie Railway—really the completion of the work on the old Hamilton and Port Dover Railway—which had been abandoned, among other works, owing to the panic of 1857, and aided by Hon. James Turner, succeeded in getting up a company and completing the work.

Mr. Mills was elected Alderman for 1870 to 1873 and in 1877, most of the time as the Chairman of the Finance Committee, and was eulogized by the press for the exactitude and lucidity of his reports. His handling of the Great Western Railway stock held by the City resulted in a considerable saving.

In 1872 P. W. Dayfoot suggested the scheme of a railway to the North. Mr. Mills promptly endorsed the idea, laid it before the Council, committees were formed, and finally a company was organized and chartered. The municipalities to be benefitted were asked for a bonus. The Northern Railway Co., in Toronto, set up an opposition to this proposed road, but at a meeting held in Clarksville, Mr. Mills and the Hamilton deputation routed the opposition and the road was built, to be later absorbed by the Northern, through the treachery and bad faith of the majority of the directors. Later this road fell into the hands of the Grand Trunk.

In 1873 he backed up J. M. Williams, M. A., in opposing the transfer of Burlington Beach to one Livingstone. Their efforts resulted in securing this popular resort for the citizens of his native city.

The same year saw him energetically endorsing Mr. B. B. Osler's proposal for a Dummy Railroad to Dundas, and he aided in getting the by-law passed authorizing the road through the City. At the same time he got a petition authorized asking the Dominion Government to abolish the tolls on the Burlington Canal. The petition, backed up by the sitting members, Messrs.

Chisholm and Witton, was granted, and the Canal made free. Another important matter in which he fought successfully for the City's rights was the claim of the Railway Co. to the West waterfront, in effect cutting off all access to the Bay by the streets in the West end. The outcome was the City's consent to the Railways using the streets between them and the water, but getting no title to the water front.

Becoming convinced that the system of ward appropriation allotted on the representations of the Aldermen was unjust, he worked for and succeeded in establishing the present system of a specific amount for each ward based on the Engineer's report of its necessities.

His last public effort for the citizens' benefit was unsuccessful. He proposed to exchange the Crystal Palace property for Dundurn Park, but a by-law authorizing the exchange was defeated by a large majority. Though he does not refer to it, he had a hand, along with F. W. Fearman, some years afterwards, in getting the City to purchase Dundurn and establish the museum and zoo. Such is a brief and imperfect record of the life of one of whom it could truly be said that his native city had a large place in his heart, and his personal affairs only second. If there is one citizen whose memory deserves a more permanent record than this sketch, he is the man. A man who lived up to the motto: "Act well thy part, there all the honor lies."

He died, deeply regretted, Aug. 16th, 1901.

GENEOLOGICAL RECORD OF THE MILLS FAMILY

Extracts from a pamphlet published by Mr. Stanley Mills of this city.

Author's Note—The object of this article is to bring together, in printed form, much information which, if not preserved in this way, might otherwise in time be lost.

The dates given, and other information contained in this record, are authentic and as nearly correct and complete as I could gather them, at the same time it is quite possible there may be errors and omissions which are more or less important and interesting. If any member of the family knows of such, I shall be glad to receive the same.

The record is complete to the present generation, that is, to the generation of James Mills and Christina Hesse. It is left to members of that generation to continue the record of their own branch of the family, and I would certainly advise this being done.

MILLS—Several Origins of the Name.

1st—"Mills" is a local place name, meaning "at the mill," from residence thereby. The final "s" stands for "son of."

2nd—Mills also means "son of Miles," a once popular fontname.

3rd—Mills also means "son of Millicent," from the nickname "Millie" or "Milly." Millicent was a popular girl's name in the 13th century.

The final "s" in Mills is common to all monosyllabic local surnames, such as Brooks, Briggs, Styles, Dykes, Holmes, etc.

The name is now mostly confined to the southern half of England. Its chief homes are in Essex, Kent, Sussex, Hants and Warwickshire. It is rare in the southwest of England, where, especially in Devon and Cornwall, its place is to some extent occupied by Mill.

Previous to the 13th century surnames were practically unknown. When it became the custom, during the 13th and 14th centuries, in England and Scotland, to assume surnames, many people took names from their residence or occupation. In this way those living at the mill or "myln," as it was then spelled, became "Mill." In the same way the miller became "Mylner."

The name "Mill," and eventually "Mills," is found in many parts of Britain, wherever there were mills for grinding grain. The "mylner," or miller, was an important man in those days, second only to the Chief or Baron, or Lord of the Manor—many men were employed in and around the "myln," and "mylns" were numerous. There were wind mills and water power mills. This makes it plain that the name "Mill," and eventually "Mills," should be found in many localities and in large numbers, and this is the case.

In early English church registers the name Mills is frequently found, as also Mill, Mille, Myll, Millman (meaning mill-man), Milward (meaning mill-ward), Millard (which is logical shortening of the previous name), Mylne, Milne, Milner ("mylner" or "miller," as already explained), also Millson (meaning Milly's son), all of which have their origin in the word "myln" or "Mille."

The earliest record of the name is found in the Hundred Rolls, Cambridgeshire, year 1273, where the name "Margery Mylys" appears.

Above information is from "A Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames," by Charles Wareing Bardsley, M. A., published in 1901 by Henry Frowde, Oxford University Press Warehouse, Amen Corner, E. C., London.

JOHN MILLS was a Scotchman residing in Staten Island previous to and during the American Revolution (1776). He was strongly attached to the British crown, a staunch supporter of the loyal cause, a United Empire Loyalist, on account of which he suffered pillory and loss of property.

JAMES MILLS, son of above, born at Newark, N. J., March 10th, 1774; died 2nd July, 1852, at Hamilton, Upper Canada.

James Mills, retaining the loyal convictions of his ancestors, emigrated to Canada in 1793, being then 19 years of age. As the son of a Loyalist he was entitled to a grant of 200 acres of land; this land he, however, never got. On his arrival in the country he commenced trading with the Indians for furs, which he carried back to his native town and exchanged for goods suitable to the requirements of the Indians. He at once became very friendly and popular with several tribes located on the south and west of Lake Ontario, so much so that they conferred upon him a pet Indian name (meaning "The Runner") which assured him kindly treatment wherever he went. He finally determined to settle permanently in Canada. This he did about the year 1800. He engaged in various occupations.

On Oct. 11th, 1803, James Mills married Christina Hesse, who was at that time but 17 years of age, and whose people, also being United Empire Loyalists, had previously removed to Canada from Pennsylvania, and settled in Barton Township.

James Mills was a man possessed of far more than ordinary intelligence and education for the time. He was frequently employed in settling differences between disputing parties, preparing deeds of land and other contracts requiring some knowledge of law. His disposition was most amiable, his conduct straightforward and honorable. He was for many years previous to his death totally blind. He died July 2nd, 1852, at Hamilton, in the Mills homestead.

CHRISTINA HESSE was of German extraction, her ancestors having for centuries resided in the vicinity of the Rhine. Her immediate parents emigrated to America and settled in Northampton County, Upper Mount Bethel Township, Pennsylvania, where, October 17th, 1786, she was born. The following extract from the church book of that place has reference to herself her brothers and sisters:

"All these specified children are born of one bosom, pure marriage bed, from Michael Hesse and his married wife Gertrudt under the hearty congratulations that God the Almighty might bless them, soul and body, here temporal, and there everlasting."

Extract from the memoirs of George Mills follows: "My "mother possessed great energy of character, combined with "amiability of temper; she was ever thoughtful of others, and

"forgetful of herself; she was always influenced and directed "by strong religious convictions, prompt in the thorough per-"formance of every duty. During my childhood she was the "darling of my heart and I still entertain for her memory the "most lively veneration and love. It seems to me she never did "a wrong thing."

Christina Hesse, in common with her father's people, spoke the Dutch language. She had also a good mastery of the English language. She delighted, however, in frequently entertaining her children by singing Dutch songs to them. She was Pennsylvania Dutch, and proud of it.

Mrs. James Mills, nee Christina Hesse, died at Hamilton, in the Homestead, Tuesday, December 3rd, 1867.

The following is the text of a deed of land, dated June 12th, 1816: Margaret Rousseaux, of Ancaster, executrix of the estate of Jean Baptiste Rousseaux, convey to James Mills, tailor, of Ancaster, and Peter Hess, yeoman, of Barton Township, 500 acres of land, described as "lots Nos. 17 and part of 16 in the first concession, and lots Nos. 16 and 17 in the second concession, and lot No. 17 in the third concession in the Township of Barton." The above land was conveyed by the Crown on 15th December, 1796, to one Caleb Reynolds. On February 16th, 1803, Caleb Reynolds conveyed same to J. B. Rousseaux.

Peter Hess was a brother-in-law of James Mills, the latter apparently being a resident of Ancaster in 1816. The lands mentioned above are now a large part of the western section of the present city of Hamilton and extend from Bay street to Locke street, and from the mountain to the bay.

These lands, twelve days later, 24th June, 1816, were divided, James Mills retaining all west of what is known as Queen street, about 240 acres in all.

The consideration mentioned in the deed from Margaret Rousseaux to James Mills and Peter Hess is £750 provincial currency, or about $7.50 per acre.

James Mills, with his family, moved to several localities before finally settling down on the above lands. In 1819 it is on record that the family lived at "The Purchase" near Bronte.

The Mills homestead was a substantial frame house, made afterwards into what is known as a rough cast house, and stood on land at the corner of Queen and King streets. Near by, on

the same location, was afterwards erected the large brick home of the Mills family, and in which both James Mills and his wife Christina afterwards died. This brick house stood on the same spot on which the commodious and handsome residence of Geo. T. Tuckett now stands. One of the sons of James Mills writes as follows: "I well remember the old frame house on King street "in which I first opened my eyes. It was a comfortable mansion, "the largest for miles around. The farm was stocked with horses, "cows and pigs in considerable numbers and fairly well cultivat-"ed. In every respect the family was comfortably off."

The following children were born to James Mills and his wife Christina:

MICHAEL—Born Wednesday, October 17th, 1804. Married Thursday, March 25th, 1830, to Celesta Shearman. Died Tuesday, December 6th, 1847. No issue.

Note—Michael Mills took part in the Wm. Lyon Mackenzie movement of 1837-8, and on this account was compelled to flee the country. He died at Crown Point, Indiana. His widow afterwards married one Mr. Luther.

HON. SAMUEL—Born Monday, December 1st, 1806. Married Monday, October 17th, 1831, to Aurora Holton, daughter of Janna and Brisies Holton, of Bridgewater, Vermont. Died Saturday, Jan. 24th, 1874, at Hamilton. Children—Anna Celesta Cawthra, Minerva Margaretta Dillon, James Holton, Catherine Mary Young (deceased), Samuel (deceased). Francis Hinks (deceased).

Note—Honorable Samuel Mills was appointed to the Legislative Assembly of Upper Canada 29th January, 1849. He served on two important commissions in 1855 and 1856, appointed by Governor Sir Edmund Head. On October 23rd, 1867, he received appointment to the Senate of the Dominion of Canada.

ANN HANNAH—Born Thursday, February 14th, 1809. Unmarried. Died at Hamilton, Thursday, November 28th, 1889.

SARAH HAMELINE—Born Sunday, February 9th, 1812. Married Wm. Smith, Tuesday, August 27th, 1833. Died at Hamilton, Monday, January 11th, 1897. No issue.

JOHN WALTER—Born Sunday, June 19th, 1814. Married Sarah Cory Deacon, Wednesday, September 15th., 1847. Died Tuesday, November 28th, 1865, at Hamilton. Children—Aurora Anne Christina Kennedy and James Charles Deacon.

CATHERINE MARY—Born Tuesday, September 3rd, 1816. Married Thursday, June 21st, 1838, to Dr. John Wilson Hunter. Died Saturday, December 19th, 1840. No issue.

JAMES NELSON—Born Saturday, June 5th, 1819. Married Tuesday, October 27th, 1857, to Cynthia Elizabeth Gage, daughter of Andrew Gage and Martha Willson and grand-daughter of the Hon. John Willson, Speaker of the House of Parliament of Upper Canada. Died Sunday, January 9th, 1876, at Hamilton. Children—Andrew (deceased), Charles, Martha (deceased), Stanley, Robert, Flora Wagner (deceased), and Edwin.

WILLIAM HAMILTON—Born Sunday, August 4th, 1822. Married October 12th, 1848, to Augusta Boardman. Died Wednesday, September 10th, 1890, at Hamilton. Children—George Boardman (deceased), Francis Christina Footner, Ella Simonds, Percy (deceased), Augusta (deceased), May O'Connor (deceased), and William Percy.

HARRIETTE MARGUERITE—Born Thursday, December 16th, 1824. Married Thursday, November 6th, 1851, to James Lorenzo Gage, of Wellington Square. Children—George Andrew, Edwin Lorenzo, Catherine Louise Hamilton Savard, Hattie May Craven, Frank Ernest, and Minnie Edith Kelble, all living. At this time, February, 1910, Harriette Marguerite is the only one of that generation living.

GEORGE HAMILTON—Born Tuesday, November 20th, 1827. Married March 13th, 1855, to Frances Rebecca Deacon. Died Friday, August 16th, 1901, at Hamilton. Children—John Walter (deceased), Henry George Hamilton (deceased), Sydney George, Fannie Deacon Gates, Amanda Marguerite, Kate Cory, Isabel Gordon, Edith Florence (deceased), and Annie Maud (deceased).

Note—George H. Mills was elected Alderman of the city of Hamilton in 1857, and again in 1858, and in the latter year was chosen by his fellow Councillors (the method then in vogue) to the position of Mayor of the city, which office he filled creditably.

CELESTA TIRZE—Born Saturday, April 3rd, 1830. Died Wednesday, October 20th, 1830.

THE GAGE FAMILY.

The history of the Gage family, that Gage family from which the mother of the writer came, may be divided into two periods, viz.: before and after the family came into Canada, which was in the year 1790. Perhaps the most historically interesting period of family history centres in and about the Battle of Stoney Creek, June 6th, 1813.

THE FIRST PERIOD.

Naturally, the earlier period of the family's history is the more difficult to record. We are fortunately, however, much indebted to Mr. John P. Langs, of Niagara Falls, N. Y., for extracts from a well prepared paper by him on "The History of Our Fore Parents to the marriage of Elizabeth Gage and John Westbrook," and read by that gentleman at the Gage-Westbrook Re-Union Picnic held at Stoney Creek Battlefield Park, July 1st, 1909. Mr. Langs was a descendent of Elizabeth Gage and has spent much time and patient research in his endeavor to preserve the family's early history.

It is on record in the Department of Crown Lands at Toronto that on the 6th of May, 1796, a grant of Lots 25 and 26 in the 4th concession of Saltfleet (200 acres) was made to Widow Mary Gage, and on the same date a grant of Lots 34 in the 4th (75 acres) and 33 and 34 in 5th concession (175 acres) was made to James Gage. James Gage was the only son of Widow Mary Gage. The description of these patents does not show the services for which the lands were given, nor the authority under which they were issued.

Mary Jones Gage.—The Widow Mary Gage had two children, viz.: James and Elizabeth. Of the early history of Widow Mary Gage, Mr. John P. Langs writes as follows:

"'However, the Gages were on this place before 1796, for John Westbrook had by that year already wooed and won the daughter of the family. I suspect that in many of our early settlements actual occupation preceded the formal grant. Widow Mary Gage was born Mary Jones. She was at the time of her coming to Canada the widow of a loyalist officer, John Gage, who was killed, by one account at the Massacre of Wyoming, by another, at some unrecorded battle of Greenbush, the confusion may very likely have arisen from the family residing at or near Greenbush, which was a village on the Hudson, opposite Albany.

There were many Gages in that neighborhood in 1790. I am sorry I cannot speak from a surer knowledge of the remoter origin of the family. I think, however, that they were very probably connected with the large New England race of Gages, descended from the immigrant race of John Gage, who came to Salem, Massachusetts, in 1630. The name Gage is said to be of Norman origin and it is borne by several noble British families.

"The widow of John Gage had relatives of her own in Canada at a very early day. Augustus Jones, a surveyor, whose name, I am informed, appears on many of the early Wentworth County deeds, was her brother. He married an Indian lady, Tuhbenehnegnay, the daughter of a Missisagua chief; his son, the Reverend Peter Jones, succeeded to the chieftainship of the tribe and also became well known in this part of the country as an Indian missionary. Another son, John Jones, married among the Brant descendants. For the origin of the Jones' also I have nothing authoritative to say. There was an Augustus Jones in Montgomery, Orange County, New York, at the time of the Revolution, the son, possibly, of Ambrose Jones, who was vestryman of the old Episcopal Church at St. Andrews. The only discoverable Augustus Jones in 1790 was the head of a family in Saybrook, Connecticut. I mention these bits of information as affording a clue, by which some person who has time and opportunity to investigate may be able to connect our ancestral family with the Joneses who in Colonial times inhabited Connecticut and Long Island."

The Reverend Peter Jones, in his autobiography, says: "My father, Mr. Augustus Jones, was of Welsh extraction. His grandfather emigrated to America prior to the American Revolution, and settled on the Hudson River in the State of New York. He was married at the Grand River in 1798."

Mary Jones Gage gathered the few possessions she could save into a canoe and made her way along the old water route to Canada; she therefore traveled up the Mohawk, past Fort Stanwick, across the short portage to Wood Creek, down Oneida Lake and the Oswego River, and thence along the southern shore of Lake Ontario to Niagara at the head of the lake at Stoney Creek. With her were her two children, James, born in 1774, and Elizabeth, born in 1776. Mary Gage is recorded to be a truly heroic woman of the pioneer type, clearing her land and tilling the soil of her farm until her son James was old enough to shoulder the responsibility of the family. She died about 1839 in Hamilton at the house of her son, well on towards a hundred years

old, and was buried in the graveyard of the First Methodist Church. Unfortunately her grave has, in the making of changes about that cemetery, been lost.

THE SECOND PERIOD.

The foregoing, in a somewhat picturesquely vague way, outlines the earlier history, or rather so much as we know of it, of the family down to the arrival of Widow Mary Gage with her two children upon the land in Saltfleet Township, Wentworth County, Upper Canada (now the Province of Ontario).

Her brother, Augustus Jones, the surveyor, was commissioned by the Government of Upper Canada to survey the counties around the Niagara frontier into townships, and was engaged in this work as early as 1789. No doubt Widow Mary Gage was influenced in this way to take up land in this part of Canada. They were United Empire Loyalists, and without doubt, Widow Gage and her son James received their grants of land from the Government of Canada on this account.

School Inspector Smith, in his Historical Sketch of the County of Wentworth, says, "according to the records in the Crown Lands Department for Ontario, the plans of the original survey of the townships of Barton and Saltfleet were registered on the 25th of October, 1791, by Augustus Jones, deputy provincial land surveyor. The names of those who had taken up land at this time were entered on these plans, which gave them an interim title, but it was not until 1796 that the regular patents were issued."

Elizabeth Gage, 1776-1859.—This history chiefly concerns the descendents of James Gage, only son of Widow Mary Gage, at the same time it will be interesting to know that his only sister, Elizabeth Gage, in 1796, married Major John Westbrook, who settled on Fairchild's Creek, Brant County, near his staunch friend Chief Joseph Brant (Thyandanaega). Major Westbrook, like most of the early settlers in this part of Canada in those early times, was a United Empire Loyalist.. At the Re-union of the Gage-Westbrook descendents, held at Stoney Creek Battlefield Park on July 1st, 1909, there were more than 300 present. Elizabeth Gage Westbrook died in 1859.

James Gage, 1774-1854.—James Gage was born June 25th, 1774, at Greenbush, New York. Died February 15th, 1854, at Hamilton, aged 80 years. He was four years old when his father

fell at the battle of Greenbush. At the age of sixteen, in 1790, he emigrated with his mother to Canada. At the age of 22 years, in 1796, he married Mary Davis, who was born in North Carolina, October 22nd, 1777, and who died October 18th, 1853, aged 76 years. Both James Gage and his wife were buried in Hamilton cemetery, a little to the left of the Chapel gate entrance.

The children of James Gage and his wife Mary Davis were:

1. Ashael Gage.
2. Catherine, who married a Freeman.
3. Elizabeth, who married L D. Birely.
4. James P. Gage.
5. Andrew Gage.
6. Mary, married a Newberry.
7. Kezia, married a Triller.
8. Ann Elizabeth, married a Beemer.
9. Joseph Gage.

James Gage, with his wife Mary Davis, settled on the land at Stoney Creek, which was afterwards to become historically famous. He was a man well known in those early times of Upper Canada. His house with its store was at first the only, and later the principal stopping place for travelers by land between Niagara and York (now Toronto). This house was occupied by Mr. and Mrs. Gage and their family up to the time of their removal to Hamilton, about the year 1835.

Mr. Gage was well acquainted with Joseph Brant, in fact, there were few people residing at the Head of the Lake that James Gage or his sons were not acquainted with. James Gage was an exceedingly active and intelligent business man. He made frequent business trips by boat from his home at Stoney Creek to York. His store was in a log building on the opposite side of the travelled road from his home. This store building is now removed but up to a few years ago one could still distinguish the old sign which read "JAMES GAGE'S STORE." An extensive and profitable business was conducted in this store. Mr. Gage was always honorable and gifted with great foresight in business. After his removal to Hamilton he was appointed one of the first directors of the Gore Bank and at the time of his death was comparatively a rich man.

The village formerly called Wellington Square (now Burlington) was first projected by Col. Joseph Brant, who, in 1778,

received from the Crown a grant of the block of land, which still bears his name, and which he received in consideration of his services and loyalty, he being one of the chiefs of the Six Nation Indians who continued true to the British Government during and subsequent to the American Revolution. The first regular survey of the village was made by Mr. James Gage, who, in 1810, purchased from Catherine Brant 338 acres described in Gage's deed as the North East Angle of "Brant's Military Tract." During the Gage regime, Wellington Square rapidly increased its proportions and population and subsequent to the building of a large and handsome steam flouring mill, with an accompanying wharf and warehouse, became a considerable grain market, one of the best in Western Canada. It is related with pride that upwards of two hundred teams in a single day delivered their gold producing cargoes.

The Gages were also heavily engaged in the lumbering business, having numerous saw, shingle, lath and stave mills, as well as several flour and feed mills in the country round about Wellington Square and back into the County of Halton.

The sons of James Gage settled in and near Wellington Square while the father remained a resident on the farm at Stoney Creek.

ANDREW GAGE—MARTHA WILLSON

Andrew Gage, son of James Gage, was born at Stoney Creek, Feb. 9th, 1802. Died June 9th, 1876.

Martha Willson, daughter of the Honorable John Willson, Speaker of the House of Parliament of Upper Canada, was born Feb. 6th, 1806. Died Oct. 28, 1875.

Andrew Gage and Martha Willson were married by Rev. Ralph Leeming, April 21, 1824.

Issue—

WILLIAM CASE—Born May 12, 1825. Died May 14, 1845.

JAMES LORENZO—Born Aug. 5, 1827. Died April 15, 1897.

CYNTHIA ELIZABETH—Born Oct. 25, 1832. Died Jan. 22, 1916.

JOHN WILLSON HUNTER—Born May 22, 1841. Died Jan. 21, 1851.

JAMES NELSON MILLS Married October 27th, 1857, to CYNTHIA ELIZABETH GAGE.

Issue—

MARTHA—Born 1858. Died 1859.

CHARLES—Born June 1st, 1860. Married Sept 18th, 1882, to Cynthia Margaret Allen.

Issue—

NELSON EDWARD—Born July 31st, 1883. Married May 24th, 1910, to Florence Neita Young.

Issue—

Stuart Allen—Born Sept. 6th, 1911.
John Edward—Born Oct. 22nd, 1918.
Mary Anna—Born Oct. 22nd, 1918.

JEAN LOUISE—Born Sept. 13th, 1884.

LYMAN DWIGHT MOODY—Born Aug. 9th, 1885. Died Oct. 31st, 1885.

OLIVE ELIZABETH—Born Dec. 25th, 1886. Died Feb. 5th, 1913.

RUBY ROSELAND—Born Jan. 23rd, 1888.

MONA VICTORIA—Born Nov. 14th, 1889. Married Oct. 18th, 1913, to William Harold Cathcart Hall.

Issue—

Mary Margaret—Born Oct. 14th, 1916.

FLORA MARJORIE—Born Dec. 23rd, 1892.

FREDERICK JAMES—Born Jan. 6th, 1894.
Lieut. Frederick J. Mills enlisted for active service overseas on Nov. 1st, 1915. Served in Canadian Field Artillery; awarded Military Cross June 3rd, 1918. Wounded at Arras, July 19th, 1918. Three years and two months' service in the army.

WINONA GEORGINA—Born Oct. 31st, 1895.

WILFRED LAURIER—Born Nov. 10th, 1896.
Lieut. Wilfrid L. Mills, Sotto Tenente (2nd Lieutenant) Italian Army, 1st British Ambulance Unit to Italy. Italian front from Oct. 10th, 1917, to Jan. 6th, 1919. Italian retreat from Isonzo Valley, Oct. 25th, 1917; Piave Battle, June 23rd, 1918; Monte Corno, Trentino front, Aug., 1918; Italian advance to Trieste, Oct. 28th, 1918. Decorations—"Croce al merito di Guerra" for

saving wounded under machine gun and rifle fire, Piave Battle. Also, Italian Silver Service Medal.

ANDREW—Born 1862. Died 1865.

STANLEY—Born July 19th, 1863. Married Oct. 11th, 1888, to Helen Victoria Dodge, who died May 27th, 1914. Adopted Flora Mills Wagner, born March, 1889; died June, 1903. Again married Feb. 2nd, 1916, to Helen A. J. Davis. Adopted Ashael Grant Davis, born Sept. 14th, 1902.

ROBERT—Born May 1st, 1865. Married Oct. 4th, 1887, to Annie Rachael Davies, who died Sept. 30th, 1908.

Issue—

HERBERT STANLEY—Born Sept, 9th, 1888. Married Oct. 16th, 1912, to Eva Hercock.

Issue—

Robert Colin—Born April 22nd, 1917.

HULDA ALBERTA—Born Sept. 23rd, 1892. Married Aug. 16, 1916, to Dr. Robert H. Clark.

Robert married again Oct. 5th, 1909, to Gertrude Agnes McCrank.

Issue—

FLORA ELIZABETH—Born April 9th, 1914.

FLORA—Born March, 1867. Married 1888 to David Peter Wagner. Died March, 1889.

Issue—

FLORA MILLS—Born March, 1889. Died June, 1903.

EDWIN—Born Sept. 3, 1871. Married Feb. 3rd, 1898, to Mary Britton Woods.

Issue—

EDWIN WOODS—Born Jan. 18th, 1899.

Lieut. Edwin Woods Mills, R. M. C., Kingston, Ont., Aug. 16th, 1916. Granted a commission Aug. 22nd, 1917, in the Imperial Army. On active service in the Royal Flying Corps in Egypt and France, Aug. 12th, 1917, to April 13th, 1919, 209th Squadron.

MARION LAVENIA—Born June 4th, 1901.

LILIAN CYNTHIA—Born Dec. 9th, 1908.

A PIONEER FAMILY

ANCESTORS AND DESCENDANTS OF RICHARD GRIFFIN, OF SMITHVILLE, LINCOLN CO., ONT.

By Justus A. Griffin.

Explanatory Notes.—It is more than 30 years since the compiler of these annals commenced to gather material for a family history, and the accumulated information, including copies of wills and official documents, would fill a very large volume. The selection and condensing of this material to proportions suitable for the present purpose has been no easy task; there was so much that called for insertion that had to be of necessity left out. He is indebted for much of the material to Messrs. Robert B. Miller, of New York; Mr. A. W. Griffen, of Omaha, an official of the United States Postal Service, and Z. T. Griffen, of Chicago. These gentlemen had exceptional opportunities to search old records and documents in the great libraries and official archives in the leading cities of the United States, and spent much time in doing so. They furnished this writer with copies of documents and detailed accounts of the results of their work. These gentlemen satisfied themselves independently—they never met—that Edward Griffin, of Flushing, was the Edward Griffin, or Griffith, who came with Capt. Clayborne's party in 1635, and that decision has been accepted in these annals.

The compiler has been made more cautious in forming decided conclusions with regard to persons and events narrated by an experience in the early days of his genealogical studies. Family records in direct line, of a reliable character, of Edward, of Nine Partners, Duchess Co., New York, to the day of his birth in 1710, were available. But back of that was uncertainty; a family tradition said that his father was also an Edward of Long Island, and that he came from Wales. It now appears that it was his grandfather Edward who came from Wales. In or about 1889 certain papers prepared by one of the family were received from one of his heirs. He had read a book called "Griffin's Journal," written by a descendant of Jasper Griffin, of Southold, Long Island, who settled there in 1675. In it was the statement that Jasper had a son Edward, of whom nothing further was known. Our friend linked up this Edward with our genealogy and made him the father of Edward of Duchess Co. The present compiler, in the ignorance and simplicity of a beginner, adopted this without investigation, and on the suggestion of the late Colonel George Butler Griffin, of Los Angeles, California, sent the so-constructed genealogy to the Genealogical Register of New York. Shortly afterward facts were discovered which proved that statement to be incorrect. Much correspondence of an explanatory character has been a consequence of that error.

In the following record the figures in parentheses after the names designate the generation of the family in America, commencing with the immigrant Edward (1). The figures preceding the names are consecutive

numbers used for convenience in reference. Unfortunately, through an error of the transcriber, the names of the twelve children of Edward (3) were omitted until nearly all the article was in type, when the error was discovered. Therefore those twelve names appear as 32a, 32b, etc., etc.

Probably there are errors in this compilation notwithstanding all the care taken in its preparation, but we hope that it will be of interest and of historic use. It ceases with the eighth generation, though much information is available regarding the ninth and tenth generations in some branches.

The accomplishment of difficult undertakings, the surmounting of great obstacles and the endurance of hardship is the delight of numbers of the human race. Even those who have not the courage nor the will for such exploits love to hear or read of the deeds of those more courageous or more enterprising than themselves.

It is true the mists of time and distance lend an air of romance to things which appeared matter-of-fact and commonplace in their time and locality. But the settlement of America by the white race in the sixteenth, seventeenth and eighteenth centuries was full of adventure and exploits which must have excited the admiration and awakened the ambition of the contemporary hearers of those deeds.

In that time of strenuous effort and wild adventure commences the American history of the family of which I propose to give a brief account. There have been comparatively few records preserved by the family and my information is drawn principally from official documents, etc., preserved in town, county and state archieves, or gathered by libraries and historical societies. I have copies of many of these but will only make use of some of the facts contained in them without lengthy quotations.

On the 24th of October, 1635, there sailed from London, England, two ships, viz., The "Constance," Clement Champion, Master, and The "Abraham," John Barker, Master, bound for Virginia. These ships carried 132 young men and four women, all in the service of Captain William Clayborne and his partners, William Clobery and David Moorehead, merchants, of London.

This company of merchants had secured from King Charles such privileges as European monarchs then assumed to give their friends. The territory assigned to these men is now included in the States of Virginia and Maryland. Lord Baltimore laid claim

to a part of the same land. These disputed claims led to conflicts somewhat similar to those between the Hudson Bay Company and the Northwest Fur Company more than 150 years later.

Among the passengers on the ship "Abraham" was Edward Griffith, or Griffin, and on the "Constance" was John Griffin. There are reasons for supposing these to have been brothers.

Settlement was made on what they called Kent Island, which is on the easterly shore of Chesapeake Bay, and Palmer's Island (now Watson's Island) at the mouth of the Susquehanna River. Their trading posts were probably similar to those of the Hudson's Bay Co., in the northwest, built of logs with a palisade enclosing their grounds.

In the party located on Palmer's Island was Edward Griffin, and here they carried on trade with the Indians and prepared staves from the timber for shipment to England. Here they were located for nearly three years, and here probably Edward acquired the knowledge of the Indian language, which enabled him in later years to act as interpreter.

On the 30th of June, 1638, the armed emissaries of Lord Baltimore attacked this post, killed three of the defenders, captured Edward Griffin and three others, whom they took to Maryland, where they were detained for some time. Lord Baltimore was severely censured by King Charles for his violent acts against these people.

Extract from letter of King Charles I. to Lord Baltimore, dated July 14, 1638. After reminding Baltimore that in former letters he signified his good will toward Clobery and his partners and that they should be encouraged in their good work, he says: "We do now understand that though your agents there had notice of our said Pleasure signified by our said Letters, yet contrary thereto they have slain three of our subjects there and by force possessed themselves by might of that Island and seized and carried away both the persons and Estate of said Planters," etc., etc.

Edward Griffin escaped to the Dutch colony at New Amsterdam, where he was brought before the authorities, August 27, 1640 on the application of Leonard Calvert, Governor of Maryland, to have him returned there. But proving himself to have been a prisoner there he was released and remained at New Amsterdam.

Feb. 28, 1653, Edward Griffin acquired, from Gerritt Bycken, at Flatbush, L. I., land which he sold July 27, 1653. In 1656 he resided and had land at Gravesend, L. I., in the colony of Lady Deborah Moody. During ensuing years there are many records of his purchases and sales of land. He finally located at Flushing, where he was one of the earliest settlers. With other inhabitants of Flushing, on Dec. 27, 1657, he protested against the persecution of the Quakers, to Governor Petrus Stuyvesant. Sept. 23, 1661, he acted as interpreter between John Richbell and the Indians for the purchase of land at Mamaroneck, Westchester County. Aug. 12, 1667, with other residents of Flushing, he offered his services to the King. Dec. 14, 1678, he sailed on ship "Blossom" for England, but returned subsequently. April 9, 1680, he was an "overseer" at Flushing. In the estimates of Flushing in 1683, he had "20 acres of uplands, 10 acres of meadow, 1 horse, 2 oxen, 5 cowes, 3 swine and 18 sheep"; his sons are also credited with land and live stock. In 1686 he made application to Governor Thomas Dongan for common lands at Flushing for his son John Griffin. In the census of August, 1698, Edward Griffin, sr., wife Mary and daughter Deborah are mentioned in the enumeration of families of Flushing as were also Edward, jr., John and Richard, with their wives and children.

2nd GENERATION.

The children of Edward and Mary Griffin were:

1—Edward, date of birth not known, m. Deborah Barnes.

2—John, m. Elizabeth ———

3—Richard, m. Susanna Haight.

4—Deborah.

3rd GENERATION.

1

Edward Griffin, (2) married Jan. 4, 1678, Deborah Barnes. They had three children.

5—Edward, no particulars known.

6—Mary, date of birth not known, married a Disbrow.

7— ———, m. Elisha Barton.

2

John Griffin (2), son of Edward (1) and Mary, of Flushing, Long Island, N. Y., married Elizabeth——— Will dated April 9, 1740. He died Jan. 30, 1742. His children were:

8—John, b. previous to 1698, d. 1759, at Mamaroneck.

9—Benjamin, b. previous to 1698, m. Mary Disbrow, dau. of Henry Disbrow.

10—Isaac, b. previous to 1698.

11—Joseph, b. previous to 1698.

12—Elizabeth, b. previous to 1698, m. a Gale.

13—Mary.

14—Caleb.

15—Jacob, b. about 1703; d. 1784.

16—Adam, had land at Rye in 1727.

17—Ezekiel, m. Ann ———, (will dated Dec. 10, 1769; d. 1782.

18—William, d. 1798.

There is reason to believe that several of the descendants of the above settled in Nova Scotia, and possibly some in Upper Canada (now Ontario). In the possession of the compiler are the names of 260 known descendents of John Griffin (2), but the scope of this compilation is confined more particularly to another branch of the family, and selection is made accordingly. However, it may be worth while to mention that one Caleb Griffin, from New York colony, settled in Nova Scotia, and a descendant of his named Caleb came to Ontario nearly one hundred years ago. Descendants of this branch reside in the cities of London and St. Thomas and in the counties of Halton, Wellington and Wentworth. There was a Caleb among the grandsons of John Griffin, but no record is preserved as to what became of him, or his uncle above mentioned; one of them may have been progenitor of this Canadian family.

3

Richard Griffin (2), son of Edward (1), married Susanna Haight, daughter of Nicholas Haight, of Concord, Conn. A descendant of one of her brothers was a loyalist and settled east of Toronto; there are descendents now living in Toronto. Richard appears to have spent his life at Flushing, L. I., and accumulated considerable property, as well as a family of fourteen children. He died in 1722 or 1723. In his will, which is dated Oct. 27, 1722, and was probated Feb. 5, 1723, he mentions his wife Susanna and thirteen children, but as he does not name Richard, his third child, it is supposed that he had died. With the exception of two bequests viz., First to "eldest son Samuel thirty pounds to be paid him next third month" (March), and to "son Joshua twenty pounds when he comes out of his apprentice-

ship," he bequeaths: "To my dear and loving wife Susanna all my lands, housings, orchards and meadows with all the rest of my estate, real and personal, whatsoever, wholly to dispose of and use as she shall think best for the bringing up of my children" . . . . . "and if she die my widow she shall have full power to distribute whatever of my estate may be remaining, but if she chance to marry again then she shall have one-third of all when the land and housing is sold and all in a condition to be divided." Then follow directions for the dividing of the remaining two-thirds. Their children were:

19—Samuel, b. previous to 1698.

20—Sarah, b. previous to 1698.

21—Richard, b previous to 1698, d. before 1722.

22—Mary.

23—Deborah.

24—Joshua, an apprentice in 1722, settler in Duchess Co., 1740. His descendents had mills at Fishkill, N. Y.

25—Jonathan, b. May 31, 1708, d. April 26, 1786.

26—Edward, b. in 1710, d. 1787 or 1788.

27—Obadiah, d. at Nine Partners, Duchess Co., 1785.

28—James, was an officer in British army and commanded a garrison in Pennsylvania; d. in Boston; had no children.

29—Gilbert.

30—Joseph, died at Nine Partners, N. Y., at advanced age.

31—Isaiah.

32—Miriam.

Nearly all this family, like their father and grandfather, were members of the Society of Friends, or Quakers. They became pioneers in the then newly settled parts of New York. Of Samuel little is known; his eldest son is mentioned in will of Jonathan; nothing further has been learned of him. Jonathan settled in White Plains and Scarsdale, became wealthy, was a captain and a Presbyterian elder, as we learn from his tombstone still remaining in the churchyard at Scarsdale. He had no children. By his will he left £100 to the Presbyterian Church at White Plains, and made bequests to a number of his nephews.

The other sons of Richard (2) all settled in Duchess Co., four of them at Nine Partners (now called Washington Precinct).

A manuscript geneology of the descendants of Joshua is in possession of the writer, and he regrets that the scope of this paper prevents the use of it and the geneologies of several other

branches of the family in his possession. Descendants of Isaiah, and perhaps of Obadiah and Gilbert, emigrated to Canada during and after the revolutionary war, some locating in Eastern Ontario and others in Nova Scotia. One named Samuel was a pioneer near Brockville. As Western New York was opened to settlement, children and grandchildren of these Duchess County Griffins migrated there. Obadiah and Robert Griffin, the founders of the town of Griffin's Mills near Buffalo, were of this connection.

4th GENERATION.

The fourth generation lived in strenuous and exciting times. The war of the American revolution was fought during that period, and though they had no direct part in it, the French revolution influenced and seriously affected even America. In fact, it is probable that it was in a large measure the cause of the war of 1812-14 on this continent.

26

Edward Griffin (3), son of Richard and Susanna (Haight) Griffin, married Millicent Bishop. After living near his brother Jonathan, White Plains, N. Y., he migrated northward and settled at Nine Partners, Duchess Co., where he raised his family; was a prominent member of the Society of Friends in that place and died there in 1787. His children were:

32a—Richard, b. June 22, 1732; d. in 1794.
32b—Bridget, b. March 24, 1734.
32c—Susanna, b. July 24, 1736.
32d—Isaiah, b. July 30, 1738.
32e—Thomas, b. Feb. 6, 1741.
32f—Obadiah, b. March 9, 1743.
32g—Amy, b. March 24, 1746.
32h—Sarah, b. Jan. 30, 1748.
32i—Miriam, b. May 3, 1749.
32j—Elizabeth, b. Dec. 25, 1752.
32k—Gershom, b. April 1, 1755.
32l—Jonathan, b. May 11, 1759.

In the war of the American revolution three of the seven sons of Edward (3) were loyalists, viz., Richard, Thomas and Obadiah. The latter two took an active part in the British service, and two of the sons of Richard are said to have served in loyal colonial regiments. The remainder of Edward's family ap-

parently were non-partisan, being Quakers. Thomas, a lieutenant in a loyal colonial regiment, was captured with a number of other loyalists, among them his brother Obadiah and a cousin named Joseph Griffin. They were imprisoned in Albany jail. Thomas was tried by the so-called Committee of Safety and sentenced to be hanged for the crime of having accepted a commission in the British service. His was not a solitary case of that kind, other instances being recorded* and probably many unrecorded. When the jailer announced to him that he was to be hanged next day he said, "The man who will hang me is not born;" with his handcuffs he knocked down the jailer, took his keys and liberated himself and his fellow loyalists. Joseph Griffin escaped to Canada and years later gave evidence at the sittings of the court appointed to adjust loyalist claims. Thomas and Obadiah made their way to Nova Scotia. They received grants of farm land, also lots in the new city of St. John. Thus they became pioneers in another new province, that part of Nova Scotia becoming the Province of New Brunswick. Thomas married there and had thirteen children, of whom little is known, though a grandson named Thomas H. Griffin was President of an Electric Light Co. in the city of Amherst, Nova Scotia, in 1891.

About 1814 Obadiah migrated with his family to Upper Canada and remained a year with his relatives at Smithville. Of Obadiah's family we have record of only one son, Obadiah; he had ten children, of whom one, Jacob, was born at Smithville, Lincoln Co., Nov. 5, 1815. He became a Baptist preacher, and his eldest son, Rev. Zebina Flavius Griffin, b. Nov. 14, 1844, spent many years as a missionary in India. On his return, in 1893, he wrote a book entitled "Daily Life in Bengal," which is very interesting and marvellously concise. It was highly commended by the press for its accuracy and inclusiveness.

5th GENERATION.

32a

Richard Griffin (4), eldest son of Edward (3), born June 22, 1732, was a school teacher, farmer and miller. He married Miss Mary Smith, daughter of Judge Abraham Smith, New York. They had twelve children, seven sons and five daughters, all of whom, except the eldest daughter, came to Canada in 1786. Early in that year Richard and his second son, Edward, then 22 years of age, came over and selected as their future home the site of

*See preface to Schoolcraft's "Personal Memoirs of Thirty Years' Residence with the Indian Tribes."

the present village of Smithville, South Grimsby, Lincoln Co., where the family was allotted 1200 acres of land. The father then returned to Duchess County for the rest of the family, leaving Edward alone in the vast wilderness, which he lived to see become a well populated and prosperous settlement. The arrangements for moving and the wearisome journey through a wild country occupied six months. Part of the family came by barges up lake Ontario from Rochester to Niagara, bringing their mill machinery, and the others followed the Indian trail, bringing their live stock through the forest, western New York not being then settled. Rochester consisted of little more than a blacksmith shop and a tavern. The settlement of this family in South Grimsby became known as the Griffin Settlement, and is sometimes yet called Griffinville, though they themselves called it Smithville, in honor of their mother. Great was the rejoicing of Edward on the arrival of his relatives, for a lonely time had been his lot, though he had kept himself busy building a log house and manufacturing rude furniture to make it as civilized as possible. Richard lived long enough to see his family well established in this pioneer home and several of them married. He died in 1794, aged 62 years. Most of his children lived to very advanced age. Edward, the pioneer of pioneers, died Aug. 13, 1862, aged 98 years, as his tombstone in the Methodist churchyard states.

The children of Richard and Mary Griffin were:

33—Amelia, b. 1758, m. Richard Sloter.

34—Abraham, b. April 16, 1760; d. May 14, 1818.

35—Beth'ah, b. 1762.

36—Edward, b. 1764; d. Aug. 13, 1862.

37—Nathaniel, b. 1766.

38—Miriam, b. 1768; m. a Meredith.

39—Isaiah, b. April 24, 1771; d. April 12, 1865.

40—Smith, b. Aug. 9, 1772; d. Sept. 28, 1849.

41—Jonathan, b. 1774; d. 1814, while in military service.

42—Elizabeth, b. 1776; m. a Lindebury.

43—Mary, b. 1778; d. in 1874.

44—Richard, b. 1780; d. in 1807.

6th GENERATION.

34

Abraham Griffin (5), son of Richard and Mary (Smith) Griffin, was born at Nine Partners, Duchess Co., N. Y., April 16,

1760. He came to Canada in 1786, with his parents and other members of the family. It is believed that he served in a loyal colonial regiment during the revolutionary war. He married Miss Mary Roy, Jan. 9, 1794; she was born Feb. 27, 1772. They settled in Grimsby township. Abraham served in the militia during the war of 1812-14. He died May 14, 1818. His children were:

45—Abraham, b. May 26, 1798; d. Oct. 29, 1842.

46—Edward, b. Jan. 12, 1801.

47—Jem'ma, b. March 9, 1803; d. May 30, 1827.

48—Stephen, b. Feb. 4, 1806.

49—Mary, b. Feb. 19, 1808; m. Isaac Dennis; was living at Campden, Ont., in 1890.

50—Richard, b. Nov. 22, 1809.

51—Catherine, b. Aug. 10, 1812.

52—Roy, b. Aug. 23, 1815; d. in 1890; never married.

35

Bethiah Griffin (5), second daughter of Richard and Mary (Smith) Griffin, was born in 1762. She married (first) Solomon Hill, a son of Capt. Hill. Their children were:

53—Nathaniel.

54—Solomon.

55—Cornelius.

56—Jonathan.

57—Abraham.

58—William.

59—Smith, died in infancy.

60—Smith, died in infancy.

61—Smith, died when eleven years old.

She married (second) Dr. Myers, a physician.

36

Edward Griffin (5), second son of Richard and Mary (Smith) Griffin, born at Nine Partners, Duchess Co., N. Y., in 1764, and died at Smithville, Ont., Aug. 13, 1862. He married (first) Miss Debbie Wardell. He was a very religious man, a Methodist, liberal both to the poor and to the church; very even tempered and of a kindly disposition; was a Lieutenant in the ~~2nd~~ 1st Lincoln regiment of militia and served with that corps in the war of 1812. A short time before his death he was visited by Rev. W. S. Griffin, his grand-nephew, who found him sitting on his verandah

and asked after his health; his reply was, "Not an ache nor a pain, just waiting for the Lord." By his first wife he had eight children, viz.,

62—Joseph.

63—Smith, settled in Township of Erin.

64—Isaac, m. Miss Disher.

65—William, a physician, died in 1837 or 1838, his death resulting from injuries caused by being thrown from a horse.

66—Daniel, a mason by trade, Methodist in religion.

67—Edward.

68—Richard, died young.

69—Catherine, m. Thos. Wingrove.

Edward (5), married (second) Miss Mary Lounsbury, who died Sept. 10, 1868. Their children were:

70—Jacob, b. 1816, d. Sept. 3, 1861.

71—Parmela, m. Dr. Abraham Kelley.

72—Jonathan Wesley, b. Aug. 8, 1821; d. March 11, 1888.

73—Morrell, b. April 4, 1823; was living 1890.

37

Nathaniel Griffin (5), third son of Richard and Mary (Smith) Griffin, b. 1766; married Miss Elizabeth Beam. He served in the 2nd Lincoln Militia regiment in war of 1812. His children were:

74—Jacob.

75—Richard.

76—Nathaniel.

77—Mary, m. Rev. William Ryerson, son of Colonel Ryerson, and brother of Rev. Egerton Ryerson, D.D.

78—Christina, m. Dr. Pettit.

79—John.

38

Marian Griffin (5), third daughter of Richard and Mary (Smith) Griffin, was born in 1768; m. Abraham Meredith. Their children were:

80—John.

81—Richard.

82—Mary, m. John Smith.

83—Annie, m. William Headley.

84—William.

85—Elizabeth, m. Mr. Durkee.

39

Isaiah Griffin (5), fourth son of Richard and Mary (Smith) Griffin, was born April 24, 1771, and died at Waterdown, Ont., April 12, 1865. He married Miss Susannah Culp, who was born at Lancaster, Pennsylvania, in 1777, and died in Waterdown, Ont., July 29, 1865. He took an active part in the war of 1812, serving in ~~2nd~~ Lincoln regiment. His home was in Smithville, Ont., where all his children were born. After the war he removed to Nelson township, Halton County, near Hannahville. Isaiah and Susannah Griffin had eleven children. They were:

86—Mary, b. March 19, 1795.

87—David, b. May 7, 1797; d. at Vienna, Ont., Dec. 6, 1886.

88—Nathaniel.

89—Fanny.

90—Isaac.

91—Solomon, b. June 30, 1805; d. Aug. 30, 1896.

92—Susannah.

93—Sarah.

94—Robert Allen, b. Aug. 5, 1811.

95—Smith Culp, b. Mary 25, 1814; d. 1894.

96—William Henry, b. Feb. 17, 1817; d. May 11, 1887.

40

Smith Griffin (5), fifth son of Richard and Mary (Smith) Griffin, was born Aug. 9, 1772, at Nine Partners, N. Y.; came to Canada with his father in 1786, and died in Brantford township, Ont., Sept. 28, 1889. He related that when coming through New York State to Canada they crossed the Genessee River by ferry at Rochester, then scarcely a village. There they embarked the women and children in boats, with enough men to care for them, floated down the river to Lake Ontario and coasted along to Niagara. The rest of the men followed the trail through the woods with the horses and cattle. Smith Griffin made his home in Smithville, Ont., during the active years of his life. He became in a sense the leader of the clan, took the management of the milling business, built and operated a carding mill, an ashery and a general store, built a road to "the Twenty," as Jordan village was formerly called, and whence he exported the produce of the mills, etc. In the course of years he established several branch establishments at Hamilton, Grimsby, Port Burwell and other places. He was a capta'n in the 2nd Lincoln regiment and fought in the hotly contested battle of Lundy's Lane, as well as in many other engagements. At one time the General in command

gave him a special furlough to enable him to go to Montreal and secure goods which were much needed in the country. One of his sons, the Hon. Henry Griffin, of Grand Haven, Mich., said to the writer: "I remember seeing a company of American soldiers sleeping on the floor of my father's kitchen one week and next week it was occupied by a company of Canadian militia. Sometimes our meadows were filled with herds of cattle gathered to supply food for the soldiers." After the war he settled down again to peaceful pursuits, extending his already large business.

Smith Griffin was a devoted Methodist, and though he never entered the itineracy he was a regularly ordained minister of the Methodist Church, preaching on Sunday and carrying on business through the balance of the week. One account, in the genealogy of the Douglas family, calls him Captain and Reverend Smith Griffin. After the Welland Canal was built he was one of three commissioners appointed by the government to adjust claims in connection with overflowed lands near the canal. The other two commissioners were Messrs. Thorburn and Street.

Smith Griffin was twice married; his first wife was Miss Eleanor Collver (or Culver, the name being differently spelled by different branches of the family). She was a daughter of Ebenezer Collver and grand-daughter of Rev. Jabez Collver, a Presbyterian minister, who was one of the pioneers of Norfolk County. The children of Smith and Eleanor were:

97—Ebenezer Culver b. Feb. 16, 1800; d. Sept. 28, 1847.

98—Elizabeth, b. Nov. 20, 1801; d. Aug. 25, 1889.

99—Mary, b. Oct. 15, 1803; d. Jan. 29, 1889; never married.

100—Absalom, b. Dec. 7, 1805; d. April, 1863.

101—Henry, b. Dec. 30, 1807; d. July 16, 1891.

Eleanor (Culver) Griffin died in 1812, and on June 6, 1814, Smith Griffin married Miss Harriet Douglas, a most excellent woman, who was loved and respected by her step-children and their children, who "rose up and called her blessed." She died Oct., 1847.

The children of Smith and Harriet (Douglas) Griffin were:

102—Douglas, b. March 24, 1815; d. in 1879.

103—Minerva, b. June 4, 1817; d. same year.

104—Alanson, b. Oct. 15, 1819; d. April, 1893.

105—Sutherland, b. July 9, 1822; in 1891 was living in Minnesota.

106—Cyrus R., b. May 11, 1824; d. Nov. 30, 1902.

107—Martha Ann, b. June 19, 1826; d. Dec., 1834.

108—Samuel Stewart, b. March 2, 1829; d. Nov. 6, 1919.

109—Content, b. March 4, 1831; d. Oct., 1831.

110—Alvin Torry, b. Dec. 7, 1832; d. June, 1849.

111—Harriet Victoria, b. July, 1837; d. in 1869.

Smith Griffin, died at Brantford, Ont., Sept. 28, 1849.

41

Jonathan Griffin (5), sixth son of Richard and Mary (Smith) Griffin, was born in 1774, married Sarah Culp. He died while serving as a soldier in the 2nd Lincoln Militia in 1814. His children were:

112—Abraham Culp, b. June 13, 1797; d. June 29, 1836.

113—Laney, married Dav'd Reeves of Waterdown.

114—Frances, b. June 9, 1803; d. April 12, 1874.

115—Mary, b. 1805; m. John Culp.

116—Margaret, b. 1807; m. a Smith.

117—David, b. 1809; d. in Illinois.

118—George, b. 1812; d. in 1841.

42

Elizabeth Griffin (5), fourth daughter of Richard and Mary (Smith) Griffin, born 1776; married a Mr. Lindebury. Their children are said to have been:

119—Joseph.

120—Millie.

43

Mary Griffin (5), fifth daughter of Richard and Mary (Smith) Griffin, born March 5, 1778; died in 1873, aged 95 years. She married Isaac Wardell. Quite a romantic story of their first meeting, while making their way in opposite directions along the banks of the Jordan River, which flows through Smithville, is told in the Wardell family history. Their children were:

121—Deborah (Debbie).

122—Solomon.

123—Isaiah.

124—Marian.

125—Joseph.

126—Mary.

127—Jacob.

128—Nathaniel.

129—Abraham.

130—Harriet, b. 1818, was still living in 1910.

44

Richard Griffin (5), seventh son and youngest child of Richard (4) and Mary (Smith) Griffin, born in 1780, and died at Smithville, Ont., in 1807. He married Miss Annie Collver (or Culver), daughter of Ebenezer Collver. He was a farmer by occupation and his descendants still occupy the same farm at Smithville. In the Militia List for 1804 he appears as ensign in 2nd Lincoln Regiment. His children were:

131—James, born 1803; died in infancy.

132—Richard, born 1805; died Nov. 16, 1886.

7th GENERATION.

45

Abraham Griffin (6), son of Abraham and Mary (Roy) Griffin, was born May 26th, 1798; died Oct. 28, 1842. He married Miss Hannah Stocking, July 4, 1822. Their children were:

133—Eliza Jane, b. Dec., 1824; died since 1900.

134—Abraham, b. July 29, 1826; d. Feb., 1888.

135—Timothy, b. 1829; d. 1870.

136—Orrin, b. 1831 d. 1885.

46

Edward Griffin (6), son of Abraham and Mary (Roy) Griffin, born Jan. 12, 1801; married Aug. 20, 1829, to Miss Sarah Thomas. They had several children, but we have record of only two, the eldest and youngest:

137—Abraham, b. 1830.

138—John Wesley, b. Aug. 12, 1849; m. Oct. 7, 1880, Lydia Roderick. She was born Oct. 7, 1862.

70

Jacob Griffin (6), son of Edward and Mary (Lounsbury) Griffin, born in 1816; died Sept. 3, 1861; was a Methodist in religion, a farmer by occupation. He married twice, his first wife being Miss Catharine Adams. They had one daughter.

139—Juliet, b. 1842; m. Isaac Swayzie.

His second wife was Mrs. Annie Tecter. They had one daughter.

140—Harriet, who m. John Coon.

72

Jonathan Wesley Griffin (6), son of Edward and Mary (Lounsbury) Griffin, was born Aug. 8, 1821; died at Dunnville, Ont., March 11, 1888. He was a licensed local preacher of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Married Mary Elizabeth Hurst, Jan. 14, 1846. They had two sons:

141—Wesley, b. Oct. 11, 1847; d. Dec. 6, 1847.

142—W. Nelson, b. Nov. 7, 1849, at Canboro, Monck Co.

73

Morrel Griffin (6), son of Edward and Mary (Lounsbury) Griffin, was born at Smithville, April 4, 1823; married Miss Margaret Hurst, at Grimsby, Ont., Dec. 2, 1840. Settled later in Dunnville. Two children:

143—Mary Catharine, b. at Grimsby, Nov. 27, 1841; m. Simcoe Swayzie.

144—James Edward, b. at Smithville, June 30, 1850; was carrying on business as a blacksmith in Dunnville in 1890.

87

David Griffin (6), son of Isaiah and Susannah (Culp) Griffin, was born at Smithville, May 7, 1797. He became a minister of the Methodist Episcopal Church and itinerated for many years; at the time of his death he was the oldest minister in the Methodist Conference. He died at Vienna, Ont., Dec. 6, 1886, in his ninetieth year. Was twice married, first to Miss Catharine Cline. They had one daughter:

145—Catharine, who married a Mr. Pettit.

The second wife was Miss Katie ———. Their children were:

146—Susan, married Rev. Wm. Yokom.

147—Mary.

148—Harriet.

149—Matilda.

150—Elida.

151—John Wesley.

152—Jonas.

153—Jacob.

154—Elgin.

88

Nathaniel Griffin (6), son of Isaiah and Susannah (Culp) Griffin, was born at Smithville, Ont., June 26, 1799, and died Dec. 13, 1853. He married Miss Sarah Adams, March 24, 1818, at Grimsby, where were born their six children.

155—Maria A.

156—William Ryerson, b. March 30, 1827.

157—Thomas L., b. July 16, 1829.

158—Phœbe Jane, b. June 29, 1834; m. 1852, Levi Claus.

159—Lorenzo, b. Jan. 16, 1836; d. in 1841.

160—Robert A., b. June 22, 1837; m. in 1870, Miss Mary Stearns; d. in 1885.

Nathaniel died as the result of an accident.

90

Isaac Griffin (6), son of Isaiah and Susannah (Culp) Griffin, born at Smithville, Ont., June 19, 1803; died at Stanwood, Mich., Dec. 24, 1887. He married Miss Bianca ———. No positive record available regarding his children; a sister-in-law and a niece believe the following to be a correct list, the two last being twins:

161—Allen.

162—Martha.

163—David.

164—James.

165—Sarah.

166—William.

167—Mary.

91

Solomon Griffin (6), son of Isaiah and Susannah (Culp) Griffin, was born at Smithville, June 30, 1805; died at Waterdown, Ont., Aug. 30, 1896, in his 91st year. In 1828 he married Miss Mary Teeple and settled on a farm in Nelson Township, Co. Halton. Shortly afterward he removed to Waterdown and assisted his cousins, Ebenezer and Absalom in their milling business and other ventures. Mrs. Mary (Teeple) Griffin died in Nov., 1890, at the age of 78 years and 9 months. From that time till his death Solomon lived with a grandson. His children were:

168—Burwell, d. in 1886.

169—Sarah, m. Rev. Robt. C. Parsons.

170—Catharine, m. Abram Ryckman.

171—Bridget Ann, resides Toronto; m. Wm. Teetzel.

172—David, died young.

173—James, died in infancy.

174—Ebenezer Franklin, b 1849; died in 1857.

92

Susannah Griffin (6), daughter of Isaiah and Susannah (Culp) Griffin, was born Oct. 17, 1807; married Daniel Springer. Their children are said to have been:

175—Cordelia.

176—Eunice.

177—Margaret.

178—Isaac.

179—Richard.

180—Adaline.

93

Sarah Griffin (6), daughter of Isaiah and Susannah (Culp) Griffin, born at Smithville, Nov. 16, 1909; married Solomon Taylor. They are said to have had three daughters, as follows:

181—Almira.

182—Susan.

183—Margaret.

94

Robert Allen Griffin (6), son of Isaiah and Susannah (Culp) Griffin, born at Smithville, Ont., Aug. 5, 1811; married Margaret Johnson. Following were their children:

184—Isabel, m. Mr. Craus.

185—Solomon.

186—James.

187—George, killed by accident.

188—Peter Johnson, m. Miss Tapley.

189—Sophronia, m. a Mr. Johnson.

190—Mary, m. a Mr. Johnson.

191—Elizabeth.

192—Enos.

95

Smith Culp Griffin (6), son of Isaiah and Susannah (Culp) Griffin; b. May 25, 1814, at Smithville; died at Kilbride, Ont., in 1894. Married Miss Eliza Jane Eaton. Their children were:

193—Cyrus Smith, b. Sept. 16, 1849; m. Miss Galloway. They had one son.

194—Emma Ann, b. Nov. 24, 1851; m. John Moore.

195—Sarah Catharine, b. Dec. 7, 1853; m. Mr. Bates.

196—Charlotte Jane, b. Feb. 4, 1856; m. Edward Tansley.

197—Jackson Columbus, b. April 21, 1858.

198—William Oscar, b. April 23, 1861.

96

William Henry (6), youngest son of Isaiah and Susannah (Culp) Griffin, born Feb. 17, 1817. Married Miss Mary Sykes, of Leeds, England. He was a school teacher. Died at Brantford, Ont., May 11, 1887. His children were:

199—Caroline Amelia, b. Feb. 22, 1843.

200—Serina Matilda, b. Feb. 23, 1845; d. June, 1914.

201—Augusta, b. Nov. 27, 1847; m. Chas. F. Gordon, of Montreal.

202—Columbus, b. Feb. 10, 1849; d. at Waterdown, Aug. 17, 1849.

203—Eleanor Catharine, m. Lindsay Crawford, of Hamilton, Feb., 1853.

204—Ada Byron, b. July 18, 1854; m. W. T. James of Brantford, March, 1878.

205—Alvaretta Pauline, b. July 4, 1857; m. Geo. Lee, Toronto, April, 1888.

206—Minnie Brant, b. July 27, 1859; m. W. J. Nichol, Toronto.

207—Melbourne Scott, b. Dec. 29, 1861; m. Margarite ———

208—Robert Edmund Lee, b. Jan. 4, 1866.

209—Josephine Brock, b. Jan. 8, 1870; school teacher in Toronto.

97

Ebenezer Culver Griffin (6), eldest son of Smith and Eleanor (Culver) Griffin, was born at Smithville, Feb. 16, 1800. He married Miss Eliza Kent, daughter of Capt. William Kent, of Stoney Creek, Township of Saltfleet, in 1821. In 1823 Ebenezer C. Griffin bought from Col. Alexander Brown 360 acres of land where the village of Waterdown now stands and about 200 acres adjoining on the south from Wm. Applegarth. There were several mill sites on Limestone Creek, which runs through these 540 acres, and he built first a sawmill at the falls, just below the present Mill street crossing on the creek. Later he built a flour

mill a little farther down stream, just above the greater falls. This was completed in 1827 or 1828, and his eldest son, a little boy of four or five, turned on the water, an act of which he delighted to tell in his old age. E. C. Griffin sold to his brother Absalom 150 acres north of Dundas street. He built and operated a mill for the manufacture of cloth, carpets, etc. He and his brother Absalom also carried on a mercantile business. Another of his enterprises was to survey a village site and induce other manufacturers and business men to settle there, thus a thriving village was formed. He was during many years the only magistrate in that vicinity, and according to the story of a gentleman who was for many years township clerk of East Flamboro, he was disposed to be lenient as well as just in his decisions, and flavored his judgments with humor. He held a commission in the 8th Regiment of Gore Militia at the time of the rebellion of 1837-38. He was a Methodist and took his religion seriously, giving a working as well as a financial support to its undertakings. It is recorded that he was superintendent of the Sunday School in Smithville, in 1820. (See Hamilton Times of Feb. 15, 1903.) He died Oct. 17, 1847, and his wife died three months afterward, Jan. 17, 1848. Their children were:

210—James Kent, b. Feb. 16, 1823; d. Sept. 21, 1910.

211—George Douglas, b. Aug. 12, 1824; d. March 14, 1911.

212—William Smith, b. Oct. 10, 1826; d. Oct. 17, 1917.

213—Egerton Ryerson, b. March 17, 1829; d. Aug. 6, 1897.

214—Eleanor Rebecca, b. June 1, 1831; still living.

215—Franklin Metcalf, b. June 10, 1833; d. June 4, 1877.

216—Watson Ebenezer, b. 1835; d. Aug. 4, 1914.

217—Caroline, b. 1837; d. in 1841.

218—Charles Wesley, b. 1839; d. in 1841.

219—Eliza Augusta, b. June 1, 1842; still living.

220—Henry Augustus, b. April 10, 1844; d. July 17, 1904.

98

Elizabeth Griffin (6), eldest daughter of Smith and Eleanor (Culver) Griffin, b. Nov. 20, 1801, at Smithville, Ont. She married, July, 1818, Rev. Elijah Warren. They removed to Michigan in 1847 and settled on a farm in Whiteford township, Munro Co., where she died Aug. 25, 1889. They had five children, of whom the name of one only has reached the compiler of these records, viz.,

221—Elizabeth.

100

Absalom Griffin (6), second son of Smith and Eleanor (Culver) Griffin, born Dec. 7, 1805, at Smithville, Ont.; married Miss Harriet Smith, a niece of his step-mother. He settled in Waterdown, and entered into partnership with his brother Ebenezer n some of his enterprises. After the dissolution of the partnership he continued in the milling business till his death in 1863. An officer in the militia, he contracted a severe cold in 1837, when warning his men for duty, and his constitution was so weakened that he never regained robust health. He was a sincere and devout Christian, of a very genial and kindly character, a lover of children, who were very fond of him. The present writer remembers him well. His children were:

222—Charlotte, b. 1829; d. in 1853 or 1854.

223—Ransom C., b. March 22, 1831; drowned in Hamilton Bay, 1850.

224—Martha Ann, b. 1833; d. Nov. 30, 1900.

225—Eliza, b. 1835; d. 1858.

101

Henry Griffin (6), son of Smith and Eleanor (Culver) Griffin, born at Smithville, Ont.; died at Grand Haven, Mich., U. S., July 16, 1891. At 21 years of age he became a partner of his father in the business carried on at Grimsby, where he met and married Miss Rachael Eastman, daughter of Rev. Daniel Ward Eastman, popularly known as Father Eastman, a Presbyterian minister, who is said to have married more couples than any other clergyman in Canada. At that time no one could perform a legal marriage ceremony except the clergy of the established churches of England and Scotland, or in certain circumstances a magistrate. Henry Griffin and Rachael Eastman were married May 30, 1830. In or about 1827 or 1828, he established a branch store in Hamilton at the north-east corner of King and John streets, in a frame building, beside which he erected the first brick business building in Hamilton; one of these buildings was used as a tailor shop. He later sold this property—a quarter acre of land and the buildings to Thomas and Ebenezer Stinson. In 1837, owing to the business depression and the unsettled condition caused by the rebellion at that time, his business became financially involved and he removed to Michigan and settled at Grand Haven, where he conducted a drug business and resided the remainder of his life. He served a term as State Senator and was also at one time sheriff of the county. His children were:

226—Hannibal Rathbun, b. March 15, 1831; died young.

227—Elizabeth Olivia, b. Dec., 1835, at Grimsby; still living.

228—Maria Lousa, b. July 2, 1837; d. Aug. 15, 1839.

229—Rachael Eleanor, b. Sept. 8, 1850; married De Forest McNett, of Sodus Point, N. Y., Feb., 1892. Previous to her marriage she had some very romantic and interesting experiences. After completing her education at Vassar College, where she was a classmate of the lady who became the wife of Mark Twain, she taught a government Indian school in Arizona, and had a narrow escape when the Apache Indians went on the war path. The commandant of the post sent a cavalry detachment to escort her to a place of safety in a more civilized part of the country.

104

Alanson Griffin (6), son of Smith and Harriet (Douglas) Griffin, was born Oct. 15, 1819. He was for many years Superintendent of the Government School and Farm for the instruction of the Indians on the Grand River, near Brantford, Ont. He married Miss Julia Ellice, March 8, 1843. Their children were:

230—Charles, b. Dec., 1843; d. May 17, 1862.

231—Maria, b. 1847; m. Robert M. Wilson.

Alanson Griffin died at Brantford, April, 1893.

105

Sutherland Griffin (6), son of Smith and Harriet (Douglas) Griffin, born July 9, 1822, at Smithville, Ont.; m. in 1848, Miss Martha Leonard. In 1891 he was living in Minnesota, U. S. A. His children were:

232—Arthur, b. 1849; d. young.

233—Harriet S., b. May 19, 1850; m. George B. Salter, 1875; d. 1898.

234—Walter H., b. Oct. 31, 1852.

245—Francis L., b. Feb. 28, 1854.

236—Robt. W., b. March 31, 1856.

237—Elizabeth M. W., b. Nov. 6, 1863.

Two of the sons, possessed of wanderlust, went to New Zealand; but after a short stay returned to America by way of South Africa. They arrived at Cape Town just when the Zulu war broke out and they enlisted as gentleman volunteers in a British regiment for the war. The regiment saw very hard service and lost a large proportion of their men. But these Canadians came through uninjured. After the war they came home. Afterwards settled in Minnesota.

106

Cyrus Ryerson Griffin (6), son of Smith and Harriet (Douglas) Griffin, born at Smithville, Ont., May 12, 1824; removed to Brantford with his father in 1838; was a farmer by occupation, Methodist in religion. Married Miss Mary M. Nellis, March 13, 1849. Their children:

238—Colborne Nellis, b. Jan. 9, 1850; still living.

239—Jane E., b. Nov. 8, 1851; d. Dec. 5, 1861.

240—Mary A., b. May 25, 1853; d. Dec. 5, 1861.

241—Harriet A., b. Aug. 26, 1858; m. J. H. Simmons; d. Oct. 17, 1884.

242—Clara B., b. Sept. 6, 1860; d. March, 1862.

243—Ariel F., b. June 18, 1863; m. Geo. Elliott, 29th June, 1887; d. Aug., 1887.

244—Helen A., b. July 18, 1865; d. Dec. 19, 1865.

245—Wesley E., b. Nov. 27, 1867; d. Dec. 12, 1867.

Cyrus R. Griffin died Nov. 30, 1903, and Mrs. Griffin died in 1904.

108

Samuel Stewart Griffin (6), son of Smith and Harriet (Douglas) Griffin, was born March 2, 1829. He ran away to sea when a boy and after several years of seafaring life settled in Australia, about 1850, and ran a line of stages from the market town to the country districts. These lines (coach lines, they called them) lost their reason of being when railroads were introduced. He then removed to New Zealand and engaged in the same line of business until the iron horse again superceded the coaches. He died at Christchurch, New Zealand, Nov. 6, 1919, in his 91st year. On Sept. 20, 1855, at Melbourne, Australia, he married Miss Catharine Finegin. Children were:

246—Marian, b. at Melbourne, Sept. 11, 1856.

247—Edmund Alvin, b. at Castlemaine, Sept. 27, 1860.

248—Harriet Adeline, b. at Castlemaine, Nov. 3, 1862, d. Jan. 13, 1864.

249—Harriet Annie, b. at Timaru, New Zealand, Jan. 22, 1815.

250—William Watson, b. at Timaru, N. Z., Oct. 7, 1869.

William Watson is now a physician in Brighton, England.

111

Harriet Victoria Griffin (6), daughter of Smith and Harriet (Douglas) Griffin, born July 27, 1837; married Dec. 27, 1854, Orren H. Lawrence; died in 1869. Children were:

251—Mary E., b. May 30, 1856.

252—Julia H., b. May 23, 1858.

253—Charles O., b. March 25, 1860.

254—Cyrus E., b. April 4, 1862.

255—Clara M., b. April 4, 1864.

256—Jane V., b. Dec. 7, 1866.

112

Abraham Culp Griffin (6), son of Jonathan and Sarah (Culp) Griffin, born at Smithville, Ont., June 13, 1797; married Miss Charity Smuck, of Waterdown. She was born Sept. 24, 1907. He died July 29, 1836. Their children were:

257—Jacob Anson, b. March 17, 1828.

258—James Nelson, b. Oct. 20, 1830.

259—George Erastus, b. Feb. 15, 1833.

260—Mary Eleanor, b. May 27, 1835.

132

Richard Griffin (6), son of Richard and Annie (Collver) Griffin, born 1805; married in 1834 to Miss Mehitable Ackard, of Duchess Co., N. Y. His parents died when he was very young and he was brought up by his grandfather, Ebenezer Collver, Esq. In 1827 he took possession of the farm of 140 acres at Smithville, left him by his father, and remained there till his death, Nov. 16, 1886. It is still occupied by his family. The children were:

261—Priscilla, b. July 31, 1836; never married.

262—Jane, b. July 7, 1840; m. Richard Cobb, Jan. 1, 1856.

263—James Harvey, b. Sept. 5, 1842.

264—Anne Elizabeth, b. Nov. 21, 1847; m. James Alford Patterson, Nov. 26, 1879.

133

Eliza Jane Griffin (7), daughter of Abraham and Hannah (Stocking) Griffin; born in 1824; married Rev. Joseph Hilts. They both died in Dundas a few years ago. When they were married Joseph Hilts had not entered the ministry, and they settled in the wilds of the then unsettled northern part of Halton Co.,

and had many of the adventures and all the hard work common to pioneers in the forest. In one of the books written by Mr. Hilts, called "Among the Forest Trees," he tells of many of the difficulties and dangers. Several children were born to Mr. and Mrs. Hilts, but the present writer has no particulars about them.

8th GENERATION.

156

William Ryerson Griffin (8), son of Nathaniel and Sarah (Adams) Griffin, born March 30, 1827; married Sept. 27, 1851, to Miss Almira Smith, and settled in Staffordville, Ont., where he was living in 1890. His children:

265—Alonzo Franklin, b. March 25, 1852; d. Sept. 22, 1864.

266—Louisa, b. April 2, 1854; m. Levi Hatch, Nov. 23, 1871.

267—Matilda H., b. Feb. 4, 1857.

268—William H., b. July 14, 1859; m. Miss Maggie Carno, Nov. 10, 1883.

157

Thomas I. Griffin (7), son of Nathaniel and Sarah (Adams) Griffin, born July 16, 1829; married March 6, 1854, Miss Alice Atkinson, who was born March 22, 1833, and died Dec. 19, 1888. Their children:

269—Ransom L., b. Jan. 6, 1855; m. Minnie K. Brooks, Sept. 28, 1882.

270—Sardina E., b. Sept. 20, 1856; m. Geo. T. Bartlett, June 11, 1879.

271—Lorenzo D., b. May 13, 1858.

272—John A., b. Feb. 9, 1860; d. May 12, 1862.

273—Stella L., b. May 24, 1872.

Thomas I. Griffin married (second) Mrs. Jane B. Ross, March 10, 1890, and at that time was living in Port Hope, Huron Co., Mich.

210

James Kent Griffin (7), eldest son of Ebenezer and Eliza (Kent) Griffin, born at Waterdown, Ont., Feb. 16, 1823; married Miss Almira Dyke, of Hamilton, Ont., in July, 1845. He was educated for the ministry, but devoted his life to industrial pursuits, though he always took an active part in religious and temperance work. For many years he carried on business as a con-

tractor, building roads, houses, etc. One macadamized road he built from Waterdown through the forest to Hamilton, in 1854 and 1855, and northward to Carlisle at a later date, is, and has been for many years, the principal thoroughfare between the three places. It is frequently called the Griffin Road. Being of an inventive mind he spent much of his time devising and improving various machines. The most successful of his inventions is the Griffin Mill for grinding soft ore, which is extensively used throughout the United States and elsewhere. He died in Seattle, Washington, U. S. A., Sept. 21, 1910. His wife died at Galt, Ont., January, 1898. Their children were:

274—Caroline Augusta, b. May 30, 1846; d. March 10, 1908.
275—Edwin Culver, b. Jan. 29, 1848; d. Dec., 1911.
276—Josephine Maria, b. Oct. 19, 1849; d. Dec. 24, 1875.
277—Wilhelmina Ellis, b. Oct. 8, 1851.
278—Frederick Thomas, b. Oct. 25, 1853.
279—Albert Dyke, b. Dec. 14, 1855.
280—Arthur Kent, b. Nov. 11, 1858.
281—Alice Eleanor, b. Dec. 23, 1860.
282—Edith Adelaide, b. Sept. 20, 1863.
283—James Percival, b. Jan., 1867.
284—Helen Mabel, b. June 9, 1871; d. July 7, 1899.

211

George Douglas Griffin (7), son of Ebenezer and Eliza (Kent) Griffin, born at Waterdown, Aug. 12, 1824; married May 29, 1845, Miss Cynthia Anne Williams, daughter of Justus Wright Williams, J. P., of Oakville, Ont., and grand-daughter of Capt. John Aikman, of Hamilton, Ont., U. E. L. George D. Griffin served an apprenticeship to the woollen cloth manufacture in the factory of his father at Waterdown, Ont., and on attaining his majority, in 1845, became a partner and the manager. In 1850 the factory was burned and he became interested in other lines of business and travelled extensively in all the old provinces of Canada, having visited nearly every town and village in the Provinces of Ontario, Quebec, Nova Scotia, New Brunswick and Prince Edward Island, and from frequent visits to them was like a gazeteer for knowledge of them, perhaps better. He was Secretary of the Mechanics' Institute of Waterdown in the years 1845, 1846, 1855 and 1856. The minute book of the Institute for years 1843 to 1870 is in the possession of the Wentworth Historical Society, and the minutes by Mr. Griffin are all very clear and neat. The Hon.

Adam Ferguson was President during part of the time when Mr. Griffin was Secretary. Being of a literary turn, Mr. Griffin contributed many articles for the press and was publisher of several periodicals, among these was probably the first illustrated temperance paper, called "The Herald of Truth," which, though well edited and well printed, like most temperance and many other papers had a very short existence; it was published in 1860. He also published a magazine called "The Canadian Quarterly Review," partly literary and partly devoted to national politics; it was fairly successful and continued for several years, but the last number was printed in 1866. Having an intimate acquaintance with the resources and the industrial affairs of Canada, he was an ardent advocate of protection for home manufactures and industries. In some sections he was long known as the "father of protection." He continued till the end of his life to contribute to the press articles on this subject. Possessing strong religious convictions, he was always active in church, Sunday-school and temperance work. He died in Parkdale, Toronto, Ont., March 14, 1911, and the daily papers of Hamilton and Toronto, in their editorial columns, spoke very highly of him. Mrs. Griffin survives him and is now (1920) active and in the enjoyment of all her faculties in her 94th year. Children:

285—Justus Alonzo Griffin, b. June 6, 1846.

286—Anne Eliza, b. May 24, 1848; died in infancy.

287—Horatio Milford, b. April 10, 1849.

288—Emma Aletta, b. June 12, 1853; d. Dec. 12, 1900.

289—Charles Henry, b. Jan. 24, 1856; d. Jan. 31, 1889.

290—Ida Emily, b. Sept. 22, 1858.

291—Watson, b. Nov. 4, 1860.

292—George Alexander, b. June 1, 1863.

293—John William, b. Oct. 8, 1865; d. May 22, 1885.

294—Chester Ernest, b. July 20, 1868; d. March 10, 1872.

295—Alvin Douglas, b. Sept. 18, 1871.

212

William Smith Griffin, D.D. (7), son of Ebenezer and Eliza (Kent) Griffin, was born at Waterdown, Ont., Oct. 10, 1826, and died in Toronto, Ont., Oct. 17, 1917. He married (first) Margaret Spohn, daughter of Philip Spohn, Esq., of Ancaster, June 28, 1853. Their children were:

296—Herbert S., b. July 11, 1854.

297—William, b. Nov. 19, 1855; drowned in Toronto Bay, 1878.

Mrs. Margaret Griffin died Nov. 16, 1856. W. S. Griffin married (second) Miss Hannah Bigger. Children:

298—A daughter who died in infancy.

299—Margaret, b. June 12, 1860.

William Smith Griffin was a clergyman of the Methodist Church, and for 70 years was active in its service, having been stationed in many of the large towns and cities, including Hamilton and Toronto. He was twice President of Conference and several times Secretary. In their annual gatherings he was always a prominent figure, and by his good judgment and genial wit wielded a great influence. For many years he was Treasurer of the Superannuation Fund of the Church, an office he held till his death in his 91st year.

213

Egerton Ryerson Griffin, M.D. (7), son of Ebenezer and Eliza (Kent) Griffin, was born in Waterdown, Ont., March 17, 1829; died Aug. 9, 1897. He studied medicine at Victoria College Medical School, and after a term in New York hospitals settled in Brantford, Ont., and remained there in the practice of his profession. He married Miss Georgina Smith, daughter of A. K. Smith, Esq. They had one child:

300—Mary. She married (first) Dr. Harris, a grandson of Col. John Butler, of Butler's Rangers. Dr. Harris was surgeon of the 38th Dufferin Rifles. He died Aug. 29, 1896. She married (second) Major Harry Leonard, of the 2nd Dragoons. No children.

214

Eleanor Rebecca (7), eldest daughter of Ebenezer and Eliza (Kent) Griffin, b. June 1, 1831, at Waterdown. Married John Nellis, of Burford. After residing in several places in Canada they removed to Michigan and settled at Mount Clemens, where Mr. Nellis and his son carried on a newspaper. He was also customs collector at that port for many years. He died in Feb., 1904. Mrs. Eleanor R. Nellis is still living in Mount Clemens. Children:

301—Georgina, b. 1855; m. March 12, 1880, Henry Stalker, of Detroit.

302—Frank.

303—Jessie.

304—Nellie.

305—Grace.

215

Franklin Metcalf (7), son of Ebenezer and Eliza (Kent) Griffin, born in Waterdown, Jne 10, 1833. When a very young man he acted as purser on a steamer on Lake Michigan and as clerk in a lumber camp. On his return he was in mercantile business in Waterdown, then studied law, and on being called to the bar practiced his profession in Brantford, where he died June 4, 1877. He married Miss Margaret Davidson. Their only child:

306—Zaidee, now (1920) residing in New York.

216

Watson Ebenezer (7), son of Ebenezer and Eliza (Kent) Griffin, born at Waterdown in 1835; died in New York about five years ago. After some experience in business in Waterdown he went to California in 1859, and had there a varied experience as trader and as farmer; among other things he lost all he had in one of the Sacramento Valley floods. He finally settled in Eureka, Nevada, where he carried on a banking business. In 1857 he married Malvina Dudley, of Simcoe. They had one child:

307—Nellie; twice married.

219

Eliza Augusta (7), daughter of Ebenezer and Eliza (Kent) Griffin, born June 1, 1842; married Wesley Spohn, of Ancaster, in Sept., 1865. They resided on their farm in Ancaster Township till 1913, when they retired from active work and moved to Hamilton. Their children:

308—Harry, b. Sept. 19, 1867; m. Jan. 1, 1895, Miss Millie Shaw.

309—Nellie, b. Nov. 30, 1870; m. May 7, 1896, W. M. McClemont, barrister, Hamilton, Ont.

220

Henry Augustus (7), youngest son of Ebenezer and Eliza (Kent) Griffin, was born in Waterdown, Ont., April 10, 1844. He died in Cleveland, Ohio, July 17, 1904. Was educated in the public and grammar schools of Waterdown and Hamilton. In 1864 he served four months in a volunteer militia battalion on the Niagara frontier. In 1865 he removed to Wyandotte, Mich., where he was employed for a time in a mercantile business; afterwards carried on a weekly paper in that town. He later

was department editor on a Detroit paper, and still later edited the "Cleveland Leader" several years. He left that position to accept an important civic position. At the time of his death he was president of a bank. He married, May 24, 1867, Miss Mary Imogene DeKalb. Their children:

310—Mary Agnes, b. Jan. 11, 1870.

311—A son who died young.

238

Colborne Nellis (7), son of Cyrus R. and Mary (Nellis) Griffin, born at Brantford, Jan. 9, 1850; married Dec. 26, 1887, to Mary Margaret Burt, a grand-daughter of a distinguished American chemist of Sackett's Harbor, N. Y. They are now living on their farm at Brantford. Their children, all born in Chicago, are:

312—Georgia Burt, b Sept. 25, 1891.

313—Edna Alice, b. May 17, 1894.

314—Cyrus Stanley, b. Feb. 19, 1896.

241

Harriet A. (7), daughter of Cyrus R. and Mary (Nellis) Griffin, born at Brantford, Ont., Aug. 26, 1858; married Nov., 1883, J. H. Simmons. One daughter:

315—Ariel, b. Oct., 1884.

Harriet A. (Griffin) Simmons died Oct. 17, 1884.

246

Marian Griffin (7), daughter of Samuel S. and Catharine (Finegin) Griffin, born Sept. 11, 1856, at Melbourne, Australia; married Charles Hastings-Bridge, C E., of Christchurch, New Zealand, on April 14, 1880. Their children:

316—Arthur, b. at Leestore, Canterbury, N. Z., Aug. 21, 1881.

317—Isabel Frances, b. Oct. 12, 1886.

319—Margaret, b. 1891.

247

Edmund Alvin (6), son of Samuel S. and Catharine (Finegin) Griffin, born at Castlemaine, Victoria, Australia, Sept. 27, 1860; married Miss Jessie Tapp, Aug. 10, 1881. Their children:

320—Ruby Catharine, b at Timaru, N. Z., May 21, 1882.

321—Harold Alvin, b. at Timaru, N. Z., March 7, 1884; d. March 8, 1884.

322—Esther Maude, b. at Timaru, N. Z., June 21, 1885.

323—Ethel Rualine, b. at Christchurch, N. Z., Sept. 12, 1887.

324—Royden Trevor Whitney, b. April 20, 1889.

257

Jacob Anson Griffin (7), eldest son of Abraham Culp and Charity (Smuck) Griffin, born March 17, 1828, near Waterdown; died March 15, 1885. He married (first) Miss Marilla Ann Dalton, of Smithville, Ont., March 10, 1857; no children. She died April 8, 1860. He married (second) Mary Ann Walker, who was born in 1830; they were married Oct. 20, 1860. She died July 4, 1871. They had one son:

325—Ira Stuart, b. in 1863, at Smithville.

258

James Nelson Griffin (7), second son of Abraham C. and Charity (Smuck) Griffin, b. Oct. 20, 1830; married (first) Miss Susan Matilda Gould, Feb. 7, 1855. Their children were:

326—Curtis James, b. at Smithville, Jan. 11, 1856; d. June 28, 1857.

327—Ransom Merritt, b. Aug. 29, 1859.

Mrs. Susan M. Griffin died Feb. 11, 1872. James N. Griffin married (second) Miss Eleanor Jane Roszel, daughter of Charles Roszel, of Grimsby, Ont. She was born Dec. 12, 1849; married Dec. 25, 1872. Their children, all born at Smithville, Ont, were:

328—Mary Margarita, b. Jan. 4, 1874; m. Mr. Smuck, of Waterdown.

329—Orley Burgess, b. March 3, 1875; m. Miss Mabel Griffin.

330—Aletta Victoria, b. April 3, 1877.

331—James Morey, b. Aug. 8, 1879; d. March 11, 1886.

332—Bertha May, b. March 13, 1881.

333—Alethea Eleanor, b. May 4, 1883.

334—Ethel Cora, b. March 1, 1887.

335—Charles Ernest, b. June 2, 1888.

259

George Erastus Griffin (7), son of Abraham C. and Charity (Smuck) Griffin, born Feb. 15, 1833; married Miss Lucinda Maria Davis, who was born June 10, 1838. Their children, all born at Smithville, are:

336—George Lee, b. March 17, 1858.

337—William S., b. Jan. 27, 1860.

338—Charles Adelbert, b. April 24, 1862.

339—Arthur Egerton, b. Feb. 11, 1867.

340—David Harley, b. Aug. 25, 1871.

341—Maria Eleanor, b. Feb. 11, 1881.

260

Mary Eleanor (7), daughter of Abraham C. and Charity (Smuck) Griffin, born May 27, 1835, at Smithville; married Milton James Morse, son of Abisha A. Morse, Esq., of Smithville, Ont. They removed to Kansas. Children were:

342—Enea Sarah, b. in Smithville.

343—James Harley, b. in Smithville.

168

Burwell Griffin (7), son of Solomon and Mary (Teeple) Griffin, born May 10, 1828; married Miss Delilah Binkley. He was a farmer, a Methodist and a good citizen. He died on the farm where he spent most of his life. He had fifteen children. Their names were:

344—Abram B., b. April 8, 1854; m. Ada Davidson.

345—W. S., b. March 23, 1856; m. Kate Newel.

346—Florence E., b. April 30, 1858; m. John W. Rymal.

347—Wm. O., died in infancy.

348—Peter F., b. April 8, 1862; m. Clara Dawes.

349—Arthur C., b. March 16, 1864; m. Brittania Featherston.

350—John, b. April 22, 1866; m. Annie Buttrum.

351—Burwell, b. April 22, 1869; m. Allie Robertson.

352—George, died in infancy.

353—Robert C., b. Feb. 9, 1873; m. Aggie Colyer.

354—Mary, b. Feb. 9, 1873; died in infancy.

355—Fred, died in infancy.

356—Mabel E. Griffin, b. July 18, 1877; m. Orley B. Griffin.

357—Delilah, b. July 4, 1880; m. Thos. Ballentine.

358—Alma, b. Jan. 30, 1884; m. Ernest VanDusen.

169

Sarah Griffin (7), daughter of Solomon and Mary (Teeple) Griffin, married Rev. Robert C. Parsons, Methodist clergyman. They both lived to advanced age and died in St. Thomas, Ont. Their Children:

359—Mary, m. Wilbur Smith; removed to California.

360—Catharine, m. Rev. Robert L. Warner, D. D., Principal of Alma College, St. Thomas, Ont.

170

Catharine Griffin (7), daughter of Solomon and Mary (Teeple) Griffin; married Abram Ryckman. Their children:

361—Solomon.

362—John.

363—Mary A.

364—Burwell.

365—Martha.

171

Ann Griffin (7), daughter of Solomon and Mary (Teeple) Griffin; married William Teetzel. Their children:

366—Burwell.

367—E. Frank.

368—Mary.

369—Charles.

370—Ida.

199

Caroline Amelia (7), eldest daughter of William Henry and Mary (Sykes) Griffin, b. Feb. 22, 1843; married Reid Weaver, of Ancaster, Feb. 28. Now living in Hamilton. Children are:

371—Alberta, b. Aug. 13, 1863.

372—Zenas, b. March 14, 1865; d. 1867.

373—Nina Ada, b. July, 1867; d. 1867.

374—Harry Griffin, b. Feb. 18, 1868; d. in 1868.

375—Orton, b. May 25, 1869; d. July, 1890.

376—Charles Lindsay, b. Jan. 18, 1872; d. Oct., 1875.

377—Zoe, b. March 9, 1874; d. Oct., 1875.

377—Linwood Crawford, b. Aug. 18, 1876.

378—Norma Elizabeth, b. May 22, 1879; d. 1890.

379—Zaida Claire, b. Nov. 9, 1882; m. 1907, a physician, of Cleveland, Ohio.

200

Serina Matilda Griffin (7), daughter of William Henry and Mary (Sykes) Griffin, b. Feb. 23, 1845; married Sept., 1875, Geo. Darrow, of Tilsonburg. He died Feb., 1897, and she died June, 1914. They had one son:

380—William Arthur, b. Dec. 4, 1872.

206

Minnie Brant Griffin (7), daughter of William Henry and Mary (Sykes) Griffin, born July 27, 1859; married William Nichol, of Toronto. Their children:

381—Frederick, b. April, 1880.

382—Sidney, b. Jan., 1886.

193

Cyrus Smith Griffin (7) son of Smith C. and Eliza (Eaton) Griffin, b. Sept. 16, 1849; married Miss Galloway. They had one son:

383—Albert, b. in 1881.

231

Maria Griffin (7), daughter of Alanson and Julia (Ellice) Griffin, born in 1847; married Robert M. Wilson, June 7, 1873. Children:

384—Irvine H. C., b. Oct. 18, 1874.

385—Robert C. H., b. Jan. 26, 1877; died in infancy.

386—Amy.

In examining the records which furnished the material from which the present paper is condensed and extracted, it is interesting to note that few members of the very large families died young—and most of those few being in the past two generations—and what a large proportion of them have been octogenarians and nonogenarians. Consider that doctors were few and trained nurses unknown, medical science and sanitation crude. Evidently modern invention and luxury are not indispensible for longevity.

This family has not, perhaps, produced celebrities, but its members have been characterized generally as God fearing, hard working, clean living and useful men and women in their day and generation. Although so many of them were Quakers and nearly all of peace loving disposition and character, every generation has found some ready and willing to fight the enemies of their country, whether foreign or domestic. In the great war just ended a number of them served in the Canadian army, some were wounded and some lost their lives.

Among those of some prominence in recent years, two may be mentioned: Frederick T Griffin, son of James K. and grandson of Ebenezer C. Griffin, of Waterdown, was born in that village. He became Superintendent of the Canadian Pacific Railway Lands Department, which position he held for many years, and is now

living in Winnipeg, retired on a pension from the Company. And Watson Griffin, son of George D. Griffin, of Waterdown, was born in Hamilton, became a journalist; was for fourteen years managing editor of the Montreal Star and Family Herald, and for some time was chief editorial writer on the Daily Star. He is now head of the Intelligence Section of the Dept. of Trade and Commerce, Ottawa. He spent nearly a year in the British West Indies, and is author of a book published by the Dept., entitled "Canada and the British West Indies," also of "Canada, the Land of the Twentieth Century," and a novel called "Twok." There are also numerous magazine articles and pamphlets from his pen, among these are "The States and the Provinces," which outlines the difference in the systems of government of these two contiguous countries; "An Irish Revolution," and "An Imperial Alliance," which appeared in the Empire Review some ten or eleven years ago, and outlined a scheme practically the same as is now being worked out.

In 1856 there was an anniversary entertainment given by the Methodist Sunday-School in Waterdown, when six boys from ten to twelve years of age recited patriotic verses written by the Superintendent of the School, George Douglas Griffin, and with your permission one of those boys will now read those verses:

In all Britannia's wide domains,
  In all the lands beneath the sun,
Where is the land that can compare
  With that Canadians love and own?

It stretches from Atlantic's coasts
  To old Pacific's sullen roar,
From slavery's land that freedom boasts
  to Arctic ocean's icebound shore.

'Tis rich in store of mineral wealth,
  In flocks and herds on grassy plain,
In garden soil and orchard land,
  In waving fields of golden grain.

In forests vast and mountains high,
  Where game is bred, where health is found,
Its rivers grand and inland seas
  Its products bear, in fish abound.

'Midst earth's brave sons and daughters fair
  Her sons and daughters still excel;
Heirs of freedom, to freedom true
  From age to age shall safely dwell.

For her our fathers fought and bled,
  And where they firmly made their stand
Their heirs will ever ready be
  To hold their own, their fatherland.

PAPERS AND RECORDS

OF THE

Wentworth Historical Society

VOLUME TEN

AUTHORS OF PAPERS ARE ALONE RESPONSIBLE FOR STATEMENTS AND OPINIONS EXPRESSED HEREIN

HAMILTON
The Griffin & Richmond Co. Ltd., Printers
1922

WENTWORTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

Officers

President ..... REV. P. L. SPENCER
1st Vice-President ..... MRS. M. HENDERSON
2nd Vice-President ..... J. A. GRIFFIN
Secretary-Treasurer ..... J. H. LAND
Historian ..... J. A. GRIFFIN
Librarian ..... J. H. LAND
Auditor ..... W. A. DAVIDSON

Executive Committee

Richard Butler
J. Gardner
Lt.-Col. J. A. Orr
Kirwan Martin
H. F. Gardiner
F. E. Perney
W. F. Moore
J. A. Barr
J. Plant
Col. W. R. Turnbull

Ladies' Committee

President—Mrs. M. Henderson, 47 Forest Ave.
Secretary—Miss C. Land, 170 Aberdeen Ave.
Treasurer—Mrs. D. B. Knight.

A REVIEW

OF THE SOCIETY'S WORK

1920-21.

The Executive Council were fortunate in securing a number of copies of the collection of articles on Wentworth history known as "Wentworth Landmarks," and have distributed many copies among the members, and propose to add to the list County schools and residents.

The only public meeting held during the year was well attended. The beautiful pictures of Westminster Abbey, as well as the eloquent and instructive lecture by our President, were much appreciated.

The President, with H. F. Gardiner and J. A. Griffin, were appointed our delegates to the Ontario Historical Society Meeting at Niagara-on-the-Lake.

Our Thirty-second Annual Meeting was held at Stoney Creek, on the historic battlefield, when the Secretary-Treasurer's Report and the President's Address exhibited the Society as slowly gaining ground; seven members had been admitted. Attention was called to the defacement, by vandals, of the memorial stones put up on Burlington Heights, and the attention of the Parks Board was called to the fact. A proposal for the union of the Saltfleet Historical Society and this Society was referred to the several bodies for discussion and decision. Timely addresses were given by Dr. Green and H. F. Gardiner.

The Treasurer's report showed receipts of $230.75, and expenditure of $253.27, with a balance in the bank of $442.94, including balance forward.

The La Salle Memorial in Wabasso Park has not yet materialized. The treatment accorded the memorial stones already placed by this Society is not such as to encourage the project. The shameful way in which these monuments have been defaced by irresponsible vandals is a disgrace to our boasted civilization.

1921-1922.

The current year of the Society has not so far been an idle one. An Executive meeting held Sept. 12, 1921, discussed the question of union with the Saltfleet Historical Society, which had been suggested at the Annual Meeting held at Stoney Creek, and it was decided that the union would be wise and should be effected as soon as possible. It was also resolved to hold monthly meetings during the coming season.

On December 12, after routine business was disposed of, there was some discussion as to use of museum fund at Dundurn.

At the meeting on Monday evening, January 9, 1922, after brief attention to routine business, the Society's Historian read an account of the Waterdown Mechanic's Institute, compiled from the minute book of the Institute for the year 1843 to 1894, and giving the names of the sixty original members. This paper will be found at the end of this volume, where it appears as an addendum to

the History of Wentworth, prepared and published by our former President, Joseph H. Smith. This paper furnished a subject for conversation and comment by the audience.

On Monday, February 13, after routine business, the Secretary read an interesting sketch of the early history of Waterdown, prepared by the late Mr. Sparks, of that village.

The meeting on the evening of March 13 was favored with a very informative, as well as deeply interesting, address by Prof. Young, of Toronto University. His subject was "Governor John Graves Simcoe," whom he presented in a different light from that shed by the ordinary histories of General Simcoe and his times. He presented vividly the difficulties of and misunderstandings by the first Lieutenant-Governor of this province. Prof. Young pointed out also that many of our counties, townships and towns were named by Simcoe after the counties and places with which he was familiar in England.

In moving a vote of thanks to the speaker of the evening, Mr. H. F. Gardiner mentioned a number of other English place names perpetuated in the nomenclature of our townships, particularizing this county, all the townships of which bear names given by Simcoe in memory of his home land.

JOHN H. LAND, Secretary.

J. H. SMITH.

HISTORICAL SKETCH

OF THE

COUNTY OF WENTWORTH

AND

THE HEAD OF THE LAKE

BY

J. H. SMITH

PUBLIC SCHOOL INSPECTOR, WENTWORTH COUNTY

HAMILTON

PRINTED BY ORDER OF THE COUNTY COUNCIL

1897

SPECTATOR
PRINTING
COMPANY

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

PREFACE.

In 1894, at the June session of the Wentworth County Council, a memorial was presented by the members of "The Wentworth Historical Society," recommending that a prize be offered for a history of the County of Wentworth. In response to this request the sum of one hundred dollars was granted for the best historical essay, and a committee consisting of W. H. Ballard, Esq., M. A., Public School Inspector for the City of Hamilton, Thomas Stock, Esq., Collector of Customs, Dundas, and A. F. Pirie, Esq., Editor of the Dundas True Banner, was appointed to award the prize.

At the solicitation of many of his friends and acquaintances, the writer prepared a paper on this subject and submitted it to this committee for examination. They awarded him the prize, and the essay remained in the possession of the County Council until June, 1896, when it was placed in the hands of the Education Committee to consider the advisability of having it printed. This committee met, and after carefully considering the subject matter of this historical sketch, consulted the writer and requested him to enlarge the scope of the essay by adding some additional matter

bearing upon historical events that had occurred within the limits of the County, but which had not been referred to in the original paper. This he consented to do, and the committee reported in favor of having it published. This report was adopted by the Council, and the essay was accordingly placed in the hands of the Printing Committee for publication. Such in brief is the history of the origin of the present work.

The author is not oblivious to the fact that his work is but imperfectly done. The pressure of his official duties frequently prevented him from devoting the time necessary to make his work as complete as he could wish. He is also aware that many important facts have been omitted, and that much remains to be done before a complete history of this County can be given to the public. However, should time and opportunity permit, he hopes at some future time to revise and enlarge the present work. What has thus far been done is now submitted to the discriminating judgment of the public with the hope that they will be lenient in their criticisms, accept what is worthy of acceptance and lightly scan its shortcomings and defects.

The object which the author has kept constantly in view was to sketch in brief outline the history of the County of Wentworth from its earliest settlement to the present time, and to describe the conditions under which it has developed into one of the most enlightened and progressive counties in Ontario. At this late date considerable difficulty has been

encountered in obtaining accurate and trustworthy information concerning many points of interest associated with these early times, since those who were the principal actors therein, and who laid broad and deep the foundations of its future prosperity have passed to—

> "The undiscovered country from whose bourn
> No traveller returns."

Nor can the somewhat unpleasant feeling be avoided that certain statements may be made that will not be in harmony with what has been accepted by many as truth. Doubtless errors have crept in, but in all sincerity and honesty of purpose a conscientious effort has been made to weigh impartially the evidence for and against each statement, and only what was firmly believed to be true has been recorded.

In presenting this historical narrative it will be expedient to give a brief outline of the early history of Upper Canada. The necessity for this will be apparent when it is borne in mind that the first settlers in this section of country were among the earliest in the Province. Their interests were so closely allied to, and so intimately interwoven with those of the Province at large, that the history of the one is practically the history of the other. When, however, the tide of immigration set in, and the population increased to such an extent that new districts were opened for settlement, the line of cleavage between provincial and local affairs began to show itself quite distinctly. It shall therefore be my aim to follow this line as closely as possible, and consider only

such phases of provincial history as have directly affected the interests of this County.

The author is greatly indebted to the kindness of his friends who have aided him in the collection of material for the preparation of this sketch. The researches of Messrs. B. E. Charlton, of Hamilton, E. B. Biggar, of Toronto, and J. P. Merritt, of St. Catharines, have thrown great light upon many of the important events that occurred during these early times. The writer desires to place on record his grateful appreciation of the services rendered by them in placing these valuable papers at his disposal. Furthermore he returns his warmest acknowledgements to the officials of the Crown Lands Department of Ontario for their uniform courtesy while examining the public records, and to the Spectator Printing Company, of Hamilton, for the use of illustrations and publications under their control.

HAMILTON, February, 1897.

HISTORICAL SKETCH

OF THE

COUNTY OF WENTWORTH.

CHAPTER I.

Jacques Cartier's First Voyage — Second Voyage — Champlain — Joins Hurons Against Iroquois — His Character — LaSalle — Sails for Canada — Estate at LaChine — An Explorer — Joins Dollier and Galinee — Visits Lake Ontario — An Indian Village — Receiving Guests — Torturing a Captive — Visits Niagara — Burlington Bay — Oaklands — Rattlesnakes — Visits Tinatona — Meets Joliet — Separates from Priests — His Life, Work, and Sad Death.

JACQUES CARTIER enjoys the distinguished honor of being the real discoverer of Canada. On the 20th of April, 1534, the first expedition, under his command, sailed from the port of St. Malo, in France. After a long and tedious voyage, extending into July, he landed on the shores of the Peninsula of Gaspé, and took possession of the country in the name of Francis I, King of France. Here he met with many of the natives, and by his generous conduct and fair treatment, won their confidence. They informed him of the existence of a great river leading far into the interior, which no man had traced to its source. He therefore sailed up the Gulf of St. Lawrence until he could see land on either side, but as winter was rapidly approaching he postponed further explorations until another year, and returned to France.

He embarked on his second voyage under more favorable auspices. His vessels were better equipped, and his men more enthusiastic. The avowed purpose of this expedition was to

open up traffic with the natives, and to form settlements. About the middle of July, his little fleet reached the mouth of the gulf, and on the anniversary of the festival of St. Lawrence, he entered a small bay, to which he gave the name of this saint, a name which has since been applied to both the river and the gulf. In September he reached the Indian village of Stadacona, situated on the shores of the river below the present fortress of Quebec. After a brief sojourn at this point, Cartier, and a portion of his crew, pursued their journey up the river until they arrived at a large island, on which they found the Indian town of Hochelaga. Here they were treated with the greatest kindness, and were most hospitably entertained by the natives. They ascended the beautifully wooded mountain situated a little distance from the town in the rear, and obtained a magnificent view of the surrounding country. To this mountain they gave the name of Mount Royal. At the completion of this short visit they returned to Stadacona, where they remained until spring. During the winter the crew suffered severely from a virulent form of scurvy, the bad effects of which were mitigated by freely using an infusion of spruce boughs. Roberval, a wealthy nobleman of Picardy, made another attempt at colonization, but all these early expeditions proved disastrous failures. For fully fifty years after this last attempt, very little was done in the way of colonizing Canada.

Early in the seventeenth century, Samuel de Champlain was commissioned to join a wealthy merchant of St. Malo, Pontgravé by name, in an attempt to extend the commerce of France, and to establish the Roman Catholic religion among the native tribes. Champlain was a man of superior mental ability, courageous, fond of adventure, and an enthusiast in religion. Of him it might be truly said, "that the zeal of the missionary tempered the fire of the soldier." Many times during his administration he had occasion to visit France in the interests of the colonists.

On his return from one of these periodical visits, he learned that a band of the Huron and Algonquin chiefs had decided to

make war upon the Iroquois. Believing that he could do the colony good service, and strengthen the friendly feeling that existed between the Indian tribes and the French, he, with a few companions, joined the warlike expedition. They first visited the Hurons in their chief towns on the Georgian Bay. After the usual feasting and dancing which the Indians indulged in on such occasions, they started on their expedition, following the natural waterways through central Ontario until they reach the Bay of Quinte. Here they crossed Lake Ontario, and soon found themselves face to face with their inveterate enemies. This expedition proved disastrous to the Hurons and Algonquins, and Champlain earned for himself and his fellow colonists the lasting enmity of the Iroquois.

Champlain's name is enrolled high among the heroes of Canada, for his achievements had given additional lustre to the fair fame of his adopted country. In 1608, he founded the City of Quebec. He afterwards discovered Lakes Huron, Simcoe and Ontario, and was the first white man to sail on that beautiful sheet of water which now bears his honored name. As a man, he was greatly esteemed for the justice of his dealings, for his devotion to his country, and for his jealous interest in the diffusion of Christianity among the native tribes.

LaSalle is a name that is quite familiar to every student of Canadian history. His parents were wealthy, and lived on an estate near the City of Rouen, in France. Here he was born in 1643. It was a custom among the wealthy French people of that time to attach the name of their estate to the various members of their families. Hence we find that his name in full was Rènè-Robert Cavelier, Sieur de LaSalle, LaSalle being the name of their estate. In his youth he received such an education as naturally befitted his position in society. Nature had endowed him with fine mental powers, and these were developed by judicious study. The bent of his mind was towards mathematics, in which he became quite proficient.

It is said, and it is probably true, that in his early life he was connected with the Jesuits. Be this as it may, it is quite evident that his natural temperament would not suffer him to

become a mere passive instrument in the hands of others and submit his will to theirs. On the contrary, his strong individuality, his self-control, and his self-reliance, as well as his natural pride, fitted him to lead and command rather than to follow and obey. His busy mind demanded action, and his ambition urged him forward. His attention was directed to Canada, where he had an elder brother, a priest in the Seminary of St. Sulpice. This doubtless influenced him in deciding to try his fortunes in the new world. His father having died about this time, he received from his estate a yearly allowance, which he capitalized, and in the spring of 1666 bade farewell to France and sailed for Canada.

Shortly after his arrival in Canada, he obtained from the Seminary of St. Sulpice, a large tract of land situated some eight or nine miles from Montreal, at a place afterwards called LaChine. He induced a number of people to settle here, and began to improve his estate by laying out and building a palisaded town. The situation was a desirable one when viewed in connection with the development of the fur trade, but had the serious drawback of being very much exposed to the frequent attacks of marauding bands of Indians. His intercourse with these native tribes soon convinced him that a knowledge of their language was a necessity. Hence he began to study it. In less than two years he had become quite proficient in some seven or eight of their dialects. While thus engaged he obtained a vast fund of useful information concerning the interior of the continent. This awakened in him a new ambition, and he determined to visit these far away lands.

To accomplish the purpose on which he had set his heart, he proceeded to Quebec and obtained an audience with the Governor, DeCourcelle, and with the intendant, Talon. They readily acceded to his request, and gave him authority to proceed immediately with his explorations. He at once sold his possessions, and with the proceeds fitted out an expedition. In the meantime the authorities of the Seminary of St. Sulpice had decided to send some of their priests on a mission to the populous tribes of the Northwest. Dollier de Casson, one of

their number, was put in charge of this expedition. In his youth he had been trained as a soldier, under Marshal Turenne, and therefore was well qualified to take command. He possessed great physical strength, had a commanding presence, and was a man of undaunted courage. With him was associated another priest, Galinee by name, who was a skilful surveyor, and an astronomer of no little repute. On the advice of the Governor, these two expeditions were merged into one, with LaSalle in command.

This joint expedition, consisting of twenty-four men in seven canoes, accompanied by a party of Senecas in two canoes, who acted as guides, left LaChine on the 6th of July, 1669, and proceeded on a long and uneventful journey up the St. Lawrence. On the 2nd of August they reached Lake Ontario, which seemed to them like a great sea. Eight days later they entered a bay on the south side of the lake, and landed in the country controlled by the Iroquois. The description of the remainder of their journey is given in the language of Galinee, the historian of the expedition.

EXTRACT FROM THE JOURNAL OF GALINEE.*

"After 35 days of very difficult navigation we arrived at a small river called by the Indians Karontagonat (the Iroquois name for Irondequoit Bay), which is the nearest point on the lake to Sonantouan, and about one hundred leagues southwest of Montreal. I took the latitude of this place on the 26th of August, 1669, with my jacobstaff. As I had a very fine horizon on the north, no land but the open lakes being visible in that direction, I took the altitude on that side as being the least liable to error.

"We had no sooner arrived at this place than we were visited by a number of Indians, who came to make us small presents of Indian corn, pumpkins, blackberries and whortleberries, fruits of which they had abundance. We made presents in return of knives, awls, needles, glass beads, and other

* Quoted from a paper prepared by B. E. Charlton, Esq., of Hamilton.

articles which they prize, and with which we were well provided.

"Our guides urged us to remain in this place till the next day, as the chief would not fail to come in the evening with provisions to escort us to the village. In fact, night had no sooner come than a large troop of Indians, with a number of women loaded with provisions, arrived and encamped near by, and made for us bread of Indian corn and fruit. They did not desire to speak to us in regular council, but told us that we were expected in the village, to every cabin of which word had been sent, to gather all the old men at the council, which would be held for the purpose of ascertaining the object of our visit.

"M. Dollier de Casson, M. de LaSalle and myself, consulted together in order to determine in what manner we should act, what we should offer for presents, and how we should give them. It was agreed that I should go to the village with M. de LaSalle, for the purpose of obtaining a captive taken from the nation which we desired to visit who could conduct us thither, and that we should take with us eight of our Frenchmen, the rest to remain with M. Dollier de Casson in charge of the canoes. This plan was carried out, and the next day, August 12, had no sooner dawned, than we were notified by the Indians that it was time to set out. We started with ten Frenchmen and forty or fifty Indians, who compelled us to rest every league, fearing we should be too much fatigued. About half way we found another company of Indians who had come to meet us. They made us presents of provisions and accompanied us to the village. When we were within about a league of the latter the halts were more frequent, and our company increased more and more, until we finally came in sight of the great village, which is in a large plain, about two leagues in circumference. In order to reach it we had to ascend a small hill (now Broughton Hill) on the edge of which the village is situated.

"As soon as we had mounted the hill we saw a large company of old men seated on the grass, waiting for us. They

had left a convenient place in front, in which they invited us to sit down.

"This we did, and at the same time an old man, nearly blind, and so infirm that he could hardly support himself, arose, and in a very animated tone, delivered a speech, in which he declared his joy at our arrival; that we must consider them as our brothers; that they would regard us as theirs; and in that relation they invited us to enter their village, where they had prepared a cabin for us until we were ready to disclose our purpose.

"We thanked them for their civilities, and told them through our interpreter that we would on the next day declare to them the object of our expedition. This done, an Indian, who officiated as master of ceremonies, came to conduct us to our lodgings.

"We followed him and he led us to the largest cabin in the village, which they had prepared for our residence, giving orders to the women belonging to it not to let us want for anything. In truth they were at all times very faithful during our sojourn, in preparing our food and in bringing the wood necessary to afford us light over night.

"This village, like those of the Indians, is nothing but a collection of cabins, surrounded with palisades 12 or 13 feet high, bound together at the top and supported at the base, behind the palisade, by large masses of wood at the height of a man. The curtains are not otherwise flanked, but form a simple enclosure, perfectly square, so that these forts are not any protection. Besides this, the precaution is seldom taken to place them on the bank of a stream, or near a spring, but on some hill, where ordinarily they are quite distant from water.

"On the evening of the 12th we saw all the other chiefs arrive so as to be in readiness for the council which was to be held next day."

Here follows an interesting account of the council meeting, and of their stay of ten days in the village.

Continuing the narrative he says: "During this interval the Indians obtained some brandy from the Dutch at New

Holland, and many times the relatives of the person who had been killed at Montreal a few days before we left there, threatened in their intoxication to despatch us with their knives. In the meantime we kept so well on our guard that we escaped all injury.

"During this interval I saw the saddest spectacle I had ever witnessed. I was informed that evening that some warriors had arrived with a prisoner, and had placed him in a cabin near our own. I went to see him and found him seated with three women who vied with each other in bewailing the death of a relation who had been killed in the skirmish in which the prisoner had been captured. He was a young man 18 or 20 years old, very well formed, whom they had clothed from head to foot since his arrival.

"I thought, therefore, that I would have an opportunity to demand him for our guide, as they said he was one of the Tongenhas (probably from Ohio). I then went to M. de LaSalle for that purpose, who told me that these Indians were men of their word, that since they had promised us a captive they would give us one, that it mattered little whether it was this one or another, and it was useless to press them. I therefore gave myself no further trouble about it. Night came on and we retired.

"The next day no sooner dawned than a large company entered our cabin to tell us that the captive was about to be burned, and that he asked to see the Frenchman.

"I ran to the public place to see him, and found he was already on the scaffold, where they had bound him hand and foot to a stake. I was surprised to hear him utter some Algonquin words which I knew, although from the manner in which he pronounced them they were hardly recognizable. He made me comprehend at last that he desired his execution should be postponed until the next day. I conversed with the Iroquois through our interpreter, who told me that the captive had been given to an old woman in the place of her son who had been killed, that she could not bear to see him alive, and all the family took such a deep interest in his suffering that

they would not postpone his forture. The irons were already in the fire to torment the poor wretch.

"On my part I told the interpreter to demand him in place of the captive they had promised, and I would make a present to the old woman to whom he belonged, but he was not at any time willing to make the proposition, alleging that such was not their custom, and the affair was of too serious a nature.

"I even used threats to induce him to say what I desired, but in vain, for he was as obstinate as a Dutchman and ran away to avoid me.

"I then remained alone near the poor sufferer who saw before him the instruments of his torture. I endeavored to make him understand that he could have no recourse but to God, and that he should pray to him thus: 'Thou, who hast made all things, have pity on me. I am sorry not to have obeyed Thee, but if I should live, I will obey Thee in all things.'

"He understood me better than I expected. In the meantime I saw the principal relatives of the deceased approach him with a gun barrel, half of which was heated red hot. This obliged me to withdraw. I retired, therefore, with sorrow, and had scarcely turned away when the barbarous Iroquois applied the red hot gun barrel to the top of his feet, which caused the poor wretch to utter a loud cry. This turned me about and I saw the Iroquois, with a grave and sober countenance, apply the iron slowly along his feet and legs, and some old men were smoking around the scaffold, and all the young people leaped with joy to witness the contortions which the severity of the heat caused the poor sufferer.

"While these events were transpiring, I retired to the cabin where we lodged, full of sorrow at not being able to save the poor captive, and it was then that I realized, more than ever, the importance of not venturing too far among the people of this country, without knowing their language, or being certain of obtaining an interpreter.

"As I was in my cabin, praying to God, and very sad, M. de LaSalle came and told me he was apprehensive that, in the excitement he saw prevailing in the village, they would in-

sult us—that many would become intoxicated that day, and he had finally resolved to return to the place where we had left the canoes, and the rest of our people.

"We told the seven or eight of our people who were there with us, to withdraw for the day to a small village, half a league from the large one where we were, for fear of some insult, and M. de LaSalle and myself went to find M. Dollier de Casson, six leagues from the village. There were some of our people barbarous enough to be willing to witness, from beginning to end, the torture of the poor prisoner, and who reported to us the next day, that his entire body had been burned with red hot irons for the space of six hours; that there was not the least spot left that had not been roasted. After that they had required him to run six courses past the place where the Iroquois were waiting for him, armed with burning clubs, with which they goaded and beat him to the ground when he attempted to join them.

"Many took kettles full of coals and hot ashes, with which they covered him, as soon as, by reason of fatigue and debility, he wished to take a moment's repose. At length, after two hours of this barbarous diversion, they knocked him down with a stone, and throwing themselves upon him, cut his body in pieces. One carried off his head, another his arm, a third some other member, which they put in the pot for a feast.

"Many offered some to the Frenchmen, telling them there was nothing in the world better to eat, but no one desired to try the experiment.

"During our stay at that villiage we inquired particularly about the road we must take in order to reach the Ohio river, and they all told us to go in search of it from Sonnontaoun. That it required six days' journey by land.[1]

"This induced us to believe that we could not possibly reach it in that way, as we would hardly be able to carry, for so long a journey, our necessary provisions, much less our baggage. But they told us at the same time, that in going to find

(1) The route they proposed to take was probably up the Genessee river to one of its sources crossing from thence to the head waters of the Alleghany river.

it by way of Lake Erie in canoes, we would have only a three days' portage before arriving at that river.

"We were relieved from our difficulties in regard to a guide, by the arrival from the Dutch of an Indian who lodged in our cabin. He belonged to a village of one of the five Iroquois nations, which is situated at the end of Lake Ontario, for the convenience of hunting the deer and the bear, which are abundant in that vicinity. This Indian assured us that we would have no trouble in finding a guide—that a number of captives of the nations we desired to visit were there, and he would very cheerfully conduct us thither.

"After departing we found a river[1] one eighth of a league broad and extremely rapid, forming the outlet or communication from Lake Erie to Lake Ontario. The depth of the river (for it is properly the St. Lawrence), is at this place extraordinary, for on sounding close by the shore we found fifteen or sixteen fathoms of water. This outlet is forty leagues long, and has, for ten or twelve leagues above its embouchure into Lake Ontario, one of the finest cataracts or falls of water in the world, for all the Indians of whom I have enquired about it, say that the river falls at that place from a rock higher than the tallest pines, that is about two hundred feet. In fact we heard it from the place where we were, although from ten to twelve leagues distant, but the fall gives such a momentum to the water, that its velocity prevented our ascending the current by rowing, except with great difficulty.[2] At a quarter of a league from the outlet where we were, it grows narrower, and its channel is confined between two very high, steep, rocky banks, inducing the belief that the navigation would be very difficul up to the cataract. As to the river above the falls, the current very often sucks into this gulf, from a great distance,

(1) Niagara. This is said to be the only word in our language derived from the Neuters.

(2) Galinee's description of the falls is probably the earliest on record. His account, which is wholly derived from the Indians, is remarkably correct. If they had been visited by the Jesuits, prior to the time of this expedition, they have failed to relate the fact, or to describe them in their journals. The Niagara river is alluded to under the name of Ongniaehra, as the celebrated river of the Neuter nation, but no mention is made of the cataract.

deer and stags, elk and roebucks, that suffered themselves to be drawn from such a point in crossing the river, that they are compelled to descend the falls, and to be overwhelmed in its frightful abyss.

"Our desire to reach the village called Otinaoutawa prevented our going to view that wonder, which I consider is so much the greater in proportion, as the river St. Lawrence is one of the largest in the world. I will leave you to judge if that is not a fine cataract into which all the water in that river having its mouth three leagues broad,[1] falls from a height of 200 feet, with a noise that is heard not only at the place where we were, 10 or 12 leagues distant, but also from the other side of Lake Ontario, opposite its mouth, where M. Trouve told me he had heard it.

"We passed the river, and finally, at the end of five days' travel, arrived at the extremity of Lake Ontario, where there is a fine large sandy bar,[2] at the end of which is an outlet of another small lake, which is there discharged.

"Into this our guide conducted us about half a league, to a point nearest the village, but distant from it some five or six leagues, and where we unloaded our canoes.[3]

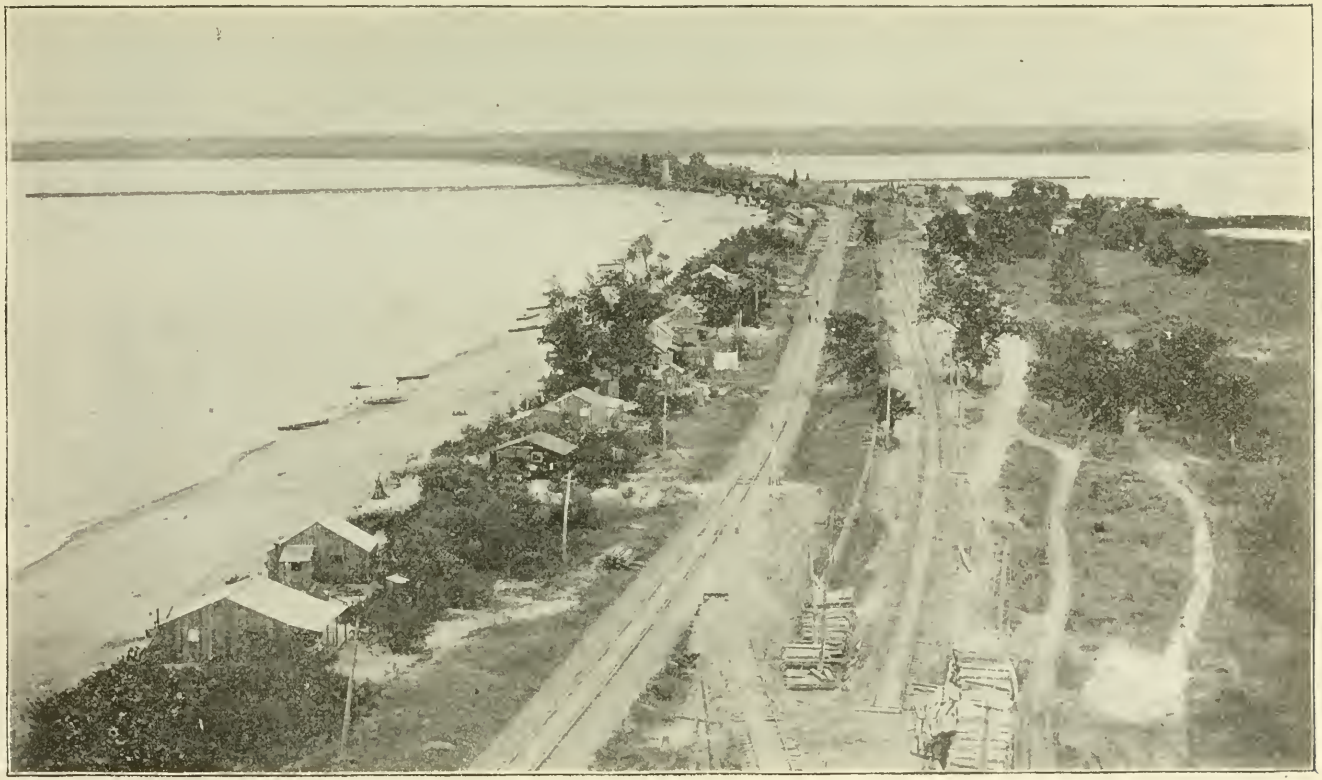
"We waited there until the chief of the village came to meet us with some men to carry our effects. M. de LaSalle was seized, while hunting, with a severe fever, which in a few days reduced him very low.

"Some said it was caused by the sight of three large rattlesnakes which he had encountered on his way while ascending a rocky eminence. At any rate it is certain that it is a very ugly spectacle, for those animals are not timid like other serpents, but firmly wait for a person, quickly assuming an offensive attitude, coiling half the body from the tail to the middle as if it were a large cord, keeping the remainder entirely straight, and darting forward, sometimes three to four paces, all the time making a loud noise with the rattle which it

(1) At the Gulf of St. Lawrence.

(2) The Indian name for Burlington Beach is "Deonasadeo," and means "Where the sand forms a bar."

(3) Oaklands.



View of Burlington Beach ("Head of the Lake"), taken from the Chimney of the Power House of the Hamilton Radial Electric Railway.

carries at the end of its tail. There are many in this place as large as the arm, six or seven feet long, and entirely black. It vibrates its tail very rapidly, making a sound like a quantity of melon or gourd seeds shaken in a box."

[When the early settlers first came here, rattlesnakes were very plentiful, especially along the escarpment that forms the northern boundary of the Dundas valley and extends northward through Halton. So numerous were they that it became necessary each returning spring to organize hunting parties to destroy these dangerous neighbors. When the warm spring sun began to awaken slumbering nature, these snakes, aroused from their winter sleep, issued forth from the crevices in the rocks. On the projecting ledges on sunny days they might be seen gathered together in heaps varying in height from one to two feet, and here they lay basking in the sunshine. It was at these times that the hunting parties visited the mountain side, and with muskets loaded with slugs or coarse shot, fired into these piles and destroyed them by hundreds. Some of the more venturesome hunters, armed with clubs, descended to the ledges, and as the snakes retreated to their dens grasped them by their tails, dragged them from the crevice, and with a quick blow killed them instantly. Sometimes, however, these snakes were not drawn forth by the first effort. Then it was wise to let them go as they would immediately turn and strike. It was in this manner that large numbers of these venomous reptiles were destroyed.]

"At length after waiting three days, the chiefs and some fifty Indians and squaws came to see us.

"We gave presents to obtain two captive slaves, and a third for carrying our effects into the village. The savages made us two presents. The first of fourteen or fifteen deerskins, to assure us they were going to conduct us to their village, the second of about 5,000 shell beads, and afterwards, two captives for guides. One of them belonged to the Codonas (Shawnees), and the other to the Nez Perces. They were both excellent hunters, and seemed to be well disposed. Con-

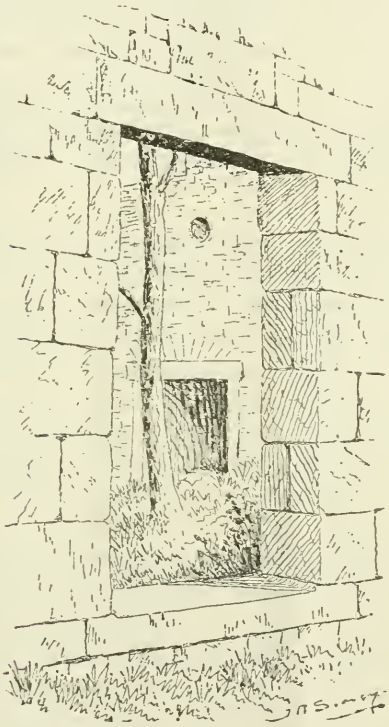
ducted by the Indians we proceeded to the village of Otinaoutawa, arriving there on the 24th Sept., 1669."

LaSalle and his companions left this village about the 1st of October, and pursued their journey across what are now the townships of East and West Flamboro', to the Indian town of Tinatona, near the eastern boundary of Beverly. Here they met Joliet who had been sent to explore the copper mines of Lake Superior, and who was now on his return journey. To avoid hostile tribes he followed the Indian trails from Detroit by way of the Grand River to Burlington Bay. From Joliet the priests Dollier and Galinee obtained much valuable information about the tribes on the upper lakes. This caused them to change their plans. They determined to visit these tribes, and, with this object in view, followed the Grand River to Lake Erie, proceeded along the northern shore of this lake to the site of the present town of Port Dover. Here they spent the winter. In the spring they visited these Northwest tribes and returned to Montreal in the autumn.

The plans of LaSalle differed from those of the priests, and the two parties separated. He desired to reach the Ohio; they, the tribes of the Northwest. Tradition says that one of the men accompanying this expedition fell in love with the daughter of an Indian chief, and cast in his lot with the tribe to which she belonged. She, it seems, had an Indian lover who became madly jealous of his white rival. This brave disappeared for several months still nursing his passion. On his return, he sought for—and found—his white rival, whom he ruthlessly shot while in company with his dusky sweetheart. This incident is said to have occurred in the immediate vicinity of Webster's Falls, in West Flamboro'.

What course the intrepid LaSalle pursued immediately after this separation is veiled in obscurity. He continued his explorations over the continent, assisted in building the Griffin, the first vessel to sail on Lake Erie, established a fort at the mouth of the Niagara, and claims to have discovered the Ohio. Being of a haughty and overbearing disposition, he soon earned

the hearty dislike of his subordinates. This increased until it developed into a bitter hatred. A conspiracy was formed, and in the prime of his manhood—at the early age of forty-three—he was foully murdered. Thus closed the career of one of the greatest explorers that ever visited this continent.



CHAPTER II.

The Indians — Their Towns — Their Houses — Their Food — Cannibals — Art of Carving — Art of Pottery — Use of Metals — Copper Tools — Manner of Warfare — Fortified Towns — One in Beverly Scene of a Great Tribal Battle — Another in East Flamboro' — Indian Town of Tinatona — Town near Troy — Town in Ancaster — Camping Grounds — Game — Indian Town near Lake Medad — Why called Lake Medad — Ossuaries — Relics — Axes — Feasts of the Dead as Described by a Jesuit Missionary — The Mourners — The Funeral Rites — The Hurons — The Iroquois — The Neuters — Character of the Iroquois — Six Nation Indians — Private Collections of Indian Antiquities.

When America was first discovered by Europeans the inhabitants along the coast were called Indians, from the supposition that Columbus had reached India. This name was ever after applied to all the aborigines found scattered over the continent. These people were nomadic in their habits and very naturally formed themselves into tribes or nations. These tribes varied in size from 200 to 500 persons, and lived in villages or towns. Sometimes a number of these tribes were formed into a confederacy as in the case of the Hurons, Algonquins and Iroquois. The tribes forming a confederacy were grouped into adjacent villages, and spoke a common language. In these villages the houses were built sufficiently near to each other to enable the inhabitants to be called together quickly in cases of emergency. These houses, usually called wigwams, were constructed of bark, the skins of animals, or were rudely thatched with reeds and grass. In every village there was a council chamber or place of assemblage, which was a larger and more pretentious building than any of the others.

The common belief that the Indians obtained their food supply almost exclusively from the chase is true only to a limited

extent. Agriculture in a crude form was practiced by them, and they depended fully as much upon this source as they did upon fishing and hunting. In this section of country corn was evidently cultivated, as may be seen from the charred remains of this grain found in considerable quantities in the ashes of their camp fires. An abundance of sugar was obtained from the maple, sunflowers were cultivated for their seed, and every variety of edible wild fruit was used. The Indian's bill of fare was by no means a meagre one. Some of the tribes knew of many ways of preparing grain for food. Such names as hominy, samp, pone, and succotash are all derived from the language of the eastern tribes. Moreover many stones[1] are found that have evidently been used for grinding corn.

Cannibals[2] in the proper sense of that word are not found among the tribes north of Mexico. It is true that they occasionally ate human flesh, but it was more as an act of savage vengeance, or from a desire to acquire the qualities of the dead person, than it was as a result of a custom among them.

We have but little positive knowledge of the early development of art among these uncivilized tribes. It is certain, however, that in later times they showed no small amount of skill in carving and in the manufacture of pottery. The antiquarian who has searched the sites of their ancient towns and villages is freqently rewarded by finding some very interesting relics. These consist largely of arrow heads, spear points, skinning tools, scrapers for preparing the skins of animals for use, grooved

(1) A number of these stones have been found in Beverly and a few in Binbrook. They are sometimes spoken of as "Hominy Mills." The stones from which they are made are hollowed out so as to form a shallow cavity, in which the corn is placed. A stone pestle is used to pulverize the grains of corn.

(2) On lot 7 in the 13th concession of East Flamboro,' now owned by Mr. John Revell, a large camping ground was recently discovered, in which there was a bed of ashes fully five feet in depth. This camping ground was covered with heavy timber and must therefore have been a very old resort, which doubtless belonged to the Neuter nation. When this bed of ashes was carefully examined it was found to contain many valuable relics. Near the top were glass beads, brass kettles and other evidences of contact with Europeans. Farther down the relics were of bone and stone or pottery, while at the bottom human bones were found. As the Indians were very careful of the remains of their own dead, it is only fair to infer that these bones were the remains of their enemies who had been captured and eaten. This corroborates the statements made about cannibal Indians in this part of the Province.

axes, gouges, as well as a great variety of ornaments for the person, pipes, totems, and gaming and ceremonial stones. Many of them show considerable skill in carving.

Nor yet was the art of the potter unknown to them. In the earlier stages of its development their attempts were limited to the manufacture of pipes and pots. These were made from the native clays, which were sometimes tempered with broken quartz, shells, and other materials, and were baked in the open fire or in rudely constructed furnaces. With the advance of culture there came also an advance in this art and more ambitious pieces devoted to sacred and ceremonial uses were attempted. Special attention was given to the decoration of these, and on some are found symbols and representations of the deities to which they were dedicated. So far no specimens have been found which clearly prove that they possessed any knowledge of glazing, although they gave a very fine polish to many of their better works of art.

The North American Indians were slowly emerging from the age of stone when the European explorers first came in contact with them. They had therefore but little knowledge of the value and uses of metals. Still there were very few tribes that did not possess some implements and ornaments of metal, which were made either from copper or gold. What little knowledge they had was obtained largely by contact with the more civilized tribes inhabiting Mexico and Central America. Along the shores of Lake Superior there are still to be seen numerous mining pits from which copper ore had been taken. In removing the accumulated debris from these pits great numbers of heavy stone sledges were discovered. Evidently these had been used to break the ore into pieces of convenient size for transportation. Their manner of reducing these ores was either by hammering or swaging, for there is no evidence that they had any knowledge of smelting. A variety of ornaments, as well as such useful articles as knives, chisels, axes, needles and arrowheads, were made from these ores. Occasionally some of these copper implements are found. A copper chisel, which experts say was tempered hard like steel,

was found on a farm belonging to Mr. A. Humphrey, who lives a short distance north of the Village of Troy in Beverly. This chisel is now in the museum of the Canadian Institute, Toronto.

The higher art of war as practised by civilized nations is very different from that practised by the Indians. The plan of grouping men together in companies and regiments, drilling them in all the tactics and manœuvres of the battlefield, and acting in concert under the command of one man, was unknown to them. They fought singly and made use of trees and other obstacles as places of concealment from their enemies. Formal declarations of war were seldom made. When any tribe had decided to attack another tribe a band of warriors was despatched on their murderous errand. Under cover of darkness they approached their victims with stealthy tread, or in canoes propelled by silent paddles, and ruthlessly destroyed them. Usually all those who failed to make good their escape were put to death, but sometimes the captives taken were reserved for torture. Their weapons of offence consisted of plain clubs, clubs with conical shaped stones attached as heads, battle axes, a kind of club in which sharp chips of some very hard stone were inserted, spears, which were hurled with terrible effect from throwing sticks, bows and arrows, slung shots and scalping knives. To protect themselves from the missiles hurled by their foes, shields made of heavy skins were used, and in some cases coats of armor.

Many of their villages were protected by palisades, a rude fortification consisting of one or more rows of strong stakes or posts lashed together and set firmly in the ground perpendicularly or obliquely for the greater security of the position.

The sites of two of these fortified villages have been found in Wentworth, one in Beverly and one in East Flamboro'. Mr. Wallace McDonald informed the writer that in 1838 when he and his brother began clearing the northern part of lot 26 in the 8th concession of Beverly, they discovered the site of an old Indian village that had evidently been protected by palisades. While clearing up some new ground as they aptly called it,

they observed here and there the ends of some small logs projecting out of the ground. This naturally arrested their attention and upon making a more thorough survey they were able to trace quite clearly the outlines of this fortified village. It was roughly estimated to contain between five and six acres, and was in the form of an irregular circle. The location was a very desirable one, for it was situated on a rising piece of ground adjacent to a beautiful stream of water, which is still noted as one of the famous trout streams of that township. About a mile or so distant there was one of the largest beaver meadows known in this section of country.

The village was evidently a stronghold of considerable importance to the native tribes. Besides numerous relics, such as pipes, beads, wampum, totems and other mementos of Indian life, upwards of 300 iron tomahawks have been found. From this it would appear to be within the limits of probability that in this place one of the great tribal battles had been fought. There is a tradition prevalent that such a battle was fought somewhere in the neighborhood of Westover, but the exact location is largely a matter of conjecture. As far as can be ascertained at the present time, no graves or burial places have been discovered in the immediate vicinity. Great beds of ashes three and four feet in depth have been found in different parts of this village. A large number of bones partly burned, as well as a considerable quantity of the charred remains of corn and corncobs have been found in these ash pits.

Another fortified village was located on lot 12 in the 10th concession of East Flamboro', and now owned by Mr. John Hood. When this farm was cleared the remains of the posts and timbers forming the barricade were still to be seen. Near by were some burial pits from which were taken French axes, iron tomahawks, brass kettles, brass arrow tips, and these in larger quantities than from any other camping ground in this township. This site is situated about five miles east of the Indian village near Valen's, in Beverly.

About a mile east of Westover, in the 6th concession of Beverly, is the site of one of the most important of these Indian

towns. No traces, however, of the remains of any palisade have been found, from which fact we would infer that it had not been fortified. On an adjoining hill a number of burial pits have been discovered. These have been very thoroughly searched, and many valuable relics obtained. General John S. Clarke, of Auburn, N. Y., a distinguished student of Indian history, identifies this place as the Indian town of Tinatona, celebrated as the meeting place of LaSalle and Joliet in 1669.

On the banks of Fairchild's Creek, a short distance west of the village of Troy is apparantly the site of another of these villages. Here many valuable relics have been found, one of which is a highly polished stone pipe, perfect in form, with a number of tally marks cut on the stem. It is supposed that these marks are a record of the number of scalps taken by the owner of this pipe, who was doubtless a chief of one of the principal tribes. It is now in the possession of Dr. J. O. McGregor, of Waterdown.

In 1829, when Mr. F. G. Snider was clearing lot 34 in the 4th concession of Ancaster, he discovered the site of one of these Indian towns. Near by on a ridge, a little to the northwest, a large ossuary was found from which many valuable relics were obtained. These were given to the Rev. Dr. McMurray, Rector of Ancaster and Dundas, who afterwards presented them to the museum in the old town of Niagara.

In the district surrounding the head of Lake Ontario, fully fifty camping grounds have been located. The existence of these is an evidence that this section of country was a favorite resort for these nomadic tribes. Doubtless they were attracted here by the great abundance of game. If we are to give credence to the stories told by the early settlers, herds of deer, containing from 50 to 100 head, roamed at will, and could be seen feeding together, while waterfowl of all kinds almost literally covered that marshy lake lying west of Burlington Heights. The streams abounded with speckled trout, and the lake furnished salmon and whitefish in the greatest profusion. In short this whole region might well be called a terrestial paradise.[1]

(1) See Wm. Bates' letter in last chapter.

The following graphic description of one of these Indian villages is from the pen of Mr. B. E. Charlton, of Hamilton, who is a diligent student of the manners and customs of these interesting people:

"This Indian village, (Otinaoutawa) appears to have been situated on the borders of a small lake in the township of Nelson, about ten miles from Hamilton, known as Lake Medad,[1] not far beyond Waterdown. Some seven years ago, the writer having learned that an ancient Indian ossuary or bone pit had been discovered at this point, through the burrowing of a small animal called a wood-chuck, had the curiosity to visit the place, and found it a most interesting one. The lake itself, a pretty sheet of water of some eight acres in extent, is fed by abundant natural springs. On one side, beneath an abrupt, rocky bank, and from a rocky basin which may have been widened and cleared of loose stones ages ago, bursts out a noble spring of clear, cold water, sufficient in capacity to supply the wants of a small city. A steep pathway cut deeply into the rock and earthy embankment by the feet of both wild animals and Indians in prehistoric times, leads from the spring up to a sloping plain of considerable extent, on which as yet but little modern civilization has been accomplished.

"You can see scattered over this slope curious rounded heaps of about forty to one hundred feet long and ten wide. A spade at once reveals that they are heaps of ashes, containing many fragments of Indian pottery, bones of animals, and broken weapons. On a portion of the plain Indian corn had probably been cultivated. Here at some distant period had evidently been situated an important Indian town of the Neuter nation. This tribe, as before mentioned, occupied the country between the Niagara and the Detroit rivers. In their wars with the Indians of Michigan they acted with more ferocious cruelty than even the Hurons or Iroquois, roasting and eating their prisoners of war of both sexes. The men going without clothing of any kind in summer. Their time of destruction,

(1) Medad Parsons was the owner of the farm on which this lake is situated. It was formerly called Medad's Lake, which has been changed to Lake Medad.

however, followed quickly upon that of the Hurons, for after the slaughter of the latter, the Iroquois turned all their fury upon the Neuters and left no survivors whatever.

"Proceeding to the highest point of the plain quite at one side of the clusters of ash heaps, were discovered the ossuaries. They consisted of three pits. One measuring forty feet long by seventeen wide, and five in depth, and the two others circular about twelve feet in diameter and seven feet in depth. Upon the former were two large pine stumps, the rings of growths of the larger numbering 125. All these pits were situated within a few yards of each other. In them were found partially decayed bones of several hundreds of persons of all ages, together with many curious articles, such as some thirty copper and brass kettles, varying in size from three to twenty-six inches in diameter, containing in one case two skeletons; in another a small bronze spoon, in several others the dust of a wooden spoon, and traces of food. Also eight or ten large tropical shells, brought probably from the coast of Florida, and evidently used in the manufacture of antique shell beads or wampum.

"Many hundreds of these shell beads were also obtained, together with beads made from porcelain, glass, stone, baked clay, obsidian, shale, etc., some round, others square, others oblong, and several inches in length, of all sizes imaginable. With these were found antique pipes of stone and clay, many of them bearing extraordinary devices, figures of animals, and of human heads wearing the conical cap, noticed on similar relics found in Mexico and Peru.

"There were also found the remainder of several axes of the old French pattern; specimens of Indian pottery in the shape of vases or pots, made of coarse sand and clay, well baked and constructed evidently with the view of being suspended over a fire. Two very handsome ones were obtained entire. In portions of the pits, skeletons were found entire or nearly so, and placed somewhat regularly, not only side by side but in layers upon each other; but in other parts all the small bones

appeared to be wanting, and skulls and large bones mingled in the greatest possible confusion.

"It seems quite clear that these pits were places of ancient Indian sepulture, and that on this spot were celebrated one or more of these ceremonies called 'Feasts of the Dead,' which the Huron and other Indian tribes were in the habit of performing once in ten or twelve years. One of these feasts was witnessed by Father Brebeuff, a Jesuit missionary, in the year 1636 at the Indian town of Ossossane, a little east of Collingwood. He describes it in the following language: 'At each village the corpses were lowered from their scaffolds and raised from their graves. Their coverings were removed and the hideous relics arranged in a row surrounded by the weeping, shrieking, howling concourse. Thus were gathered all the village dead for the last ten or twelve years. Each family reclaimed its own, and immediately addressed itself to removing what remained of flesh from the bones. These were wrapped in skins, and, together with the recent corpses—which were allowed to remain entire, but which were also wrapped in furs—were now carried to one of the largest cabins and hung to the numerous cross poles which, like rafters, support the roof.

"'Here the concourse of mourners seated themselves at a funeral feast, and as the squaws distributed food, a chief harangued the assembly, lamenting the loss of the deceased and extolling their virtues. This solemnity over, the mourners began their march for Ossossane, uttering at intervals in unison a dreary wailing cry; and as they stopped to rest at night at some village on the way, the inhabitants came forth to meet them with a mournful hospitality. From every town processions like these were converging towards Ossossane, and thither, on the urgent invitation of the chiefs, we repaired. The capacious bark houses were filled to overflowing, and the surrounding woods gleamed with camp fires. Funeral games were in progress, the young men and women practicing archery, and other exercises for prizes offered by the mourners in the name of their dead relatives. Some of the chiefs conducted us to the place prepared for the ceremony—a cleared area in the forest

many acres in extent. In the midst was a pit about ten feet deep and thirty wide. Around it was reared a high and strong scaffolding, and on this were placed several poles, with cross poles extended between, for hanging the funeral gifts and the remains of the dead.

"'We were lodged in a large bark house where more than a hundred of these bundles of mortality were hanging from the rafters. Amidst the throng of the living and the dead we spent a night which the imagination and the senses conspired to render almost unsupportable. At length the officiating chiefs gave the signal to prepare for the ceremony. The relics were taken down, opened for the last time, and the bones caressed and fondled by the women amid paroxysms of lamentations. Then all the processions were formed anew and, each bearing its dead, moved toward the area prepared for the last solemn rites. As they reached the ground they defiled in order, each to a spot assigned to it. Here the bearers of the dead laid their bundles on the ground. Fires were now lighted, kettles slung, and around the entire circle of the clearing the scene was like a fair or caravansary. This continued till three in the afternoon, when the gifts and bones were re-packed. Suddenly at a signal from the chiefs, the crowd ran forward from every side towards the scaffold, scaled it by rude ladders, and hung their relics and gifts to the forests of poles which surrounded it. Then the ladders were removed, and a number of chiefs standing on the scaffold harangued the crowd below, while other functionaries were lining the grave throughout with rich robes of beaver skin. Three large copper kettles were next placed in the middle and then ensued a scene of hideous confusion. The bodies which were left entire were brought to the edge of the grave, flung in and arranged in order at the bottom by ten or twelve Indians stationed there for that purpose, amid the wildest excitement and uproar of many hundred mingled voices. When this part of the work was done night was fast closing in. The concourse bivouacked around the clearing and lighted their camp fires under the brows of the forest which hedged in the scene. We withdrew to the village, when an hour before dawn we were

aroused by a terrible clamor. One of the bundles of bones, tied to a pole on the scaffold, had chanced to fall into the grave. This accident precipitated the closing act and perhaps increased its frenzy. Guided by the unearthly din, and the broad glare of the flames, fed with heaps of fat pine log, we soon reached the spot and saw what seemed to us an image of pandemonium. All around blazed countless fires, and the air resounded with discordant outcries.

"'The naked multitude, on, under and around the scaffold were flinging the remains of their dead pell mell into the pit, where we discovered men who, as the ghastly shower fell around them, arranged the bones in their places with long poles. All was soon over; earth, logs and stones were cast upon the grave, and the clamor subsided in a funeral chant, dreary and lugubrious.'

"Such was the origin of those numerous and strange sepulchres which have been the wonder and perplexity of the early settlers of the County of Simcoe, similar in every respect to the one at Lake Medad where stood the Iroquois village visited by La Salle as before mentioned in the year 1669."

The chief as well as the best known Indian nations inhabiting what is now the Province of Ontario and the adjoining states of New York and Pennsylvania are the Hurons, the Iroquois and Neuters. The Hurons, consisting of some five tribes, occupied the district extending from the shores of Lake Huron on the west, to the Ottawa river on the east. They traded with the French at Montreal and Quebec and brought their merchandise, which consisted chiefly of furs, to these places by way of the Ottawa and St. Lawrence rivers. The Iroquois, or Five Nation Indians, were scattered over a large area of territory lying east of the Niagara river, and south of Lake Ontario and the St. Lawrence and also extending westward along the southern shores of Lake Erie. These tribes traded with the Dutch at New Holland (Albany) and Manhattan (New York) by way of the Hudson river. The Neuter nation occupied the southern portion of Ontario embracing the Niagara Peninsula and extending westward as far

CANAL AT BURLINGTON BEACH.

as the river Detroit. They obtained their name from the neutral stand they took in the wars between the Iroquois and Hurons. They were a comparatively strong and powerful nation, for it was estimated by the early explorers that about the beginning of the seventeenth century they had fully 4000 warriors armed and equipped for war.

The Iroquois possessed some excellent traits of character, for they honored a pledge when once given; they respected a treaty when ratified; they had proper regard for their own laws and customs and they possessed strong social and domestic feelings. Notwithstanding all these good qualities, their history is a continuous story of rapine and bloodshed. The avowed purpose of the chiefs who entered into a league and formed the confederacy of the Five Nations, was to cultivate the arts of peace and abolish war. In this they were unsuccessful. One of the first known acts of the league after its formation was to drive the Huron tribes from their homes in the valley of the St. Lawrence. This they did, and the remnant of this once powerful nation found a place of refuge along the southern shores of the Georgian Bay. Here they lived in peace for some time, but the Iroquois having regained something of their normal strength waged war against them, captured one town after another, until in 1649 a general massacre took place, which ended in the destruction of the whole nation. Two small bands escaped, one of which now occupies the Indian village of Lorette, near Quebec, the other went westward and were soon absorbed by the stronger tribes in that locality. They then turned their attention to the Neuters, as they were called by the French, and waged an incessant war against them, which ended in 1651 in the utter dispersion of this nation.

The Tuscaroras, a tribe belonging to the southern part of the United States, were admitted into the Iroquoian confederacy in 1722, when the name was changed to that of the Six Nation Indians. Captain Joseph Brant was one of their most distinguished chiefs. Nearly all the tribes belonging to this league took sides with the British during the Revolutionary War. For the services thus rendered they secured from the Crown a

grant of land extending six miles on each side of the Grand River from its source to its mouth. On a portion of this reserve a remnant of these tribes still reside and successfully follow agricultural pursuits.

Within the last few years a greatly increased attention has been given to the thorough examination of the ossuaries and camping grounds in this section of country. Many valuable relics have been found, and much light has been thrown upon the manners and customs of these ancient people. The private collections of Indian antiquities of Dr. J. O. McGregor, of Waterdown, Mr. George Allison, of the same place, and the Messrs. Mullock, in the near vicinity, are well worthy the attention of students of Indian character. These collections are carefully classified and arranged, and contain, both as to quality and quantity, as large an assortment of relics as are found in similar collections in our public museums.

THE GAGE HOMESTEAD.

CHAPTER III.

Upper Canada an Unknown Wilderness — The Fur Trade — Trading Posts — Fort Frontenac — Niagara a French Fort on British Territory — Besieged by the British Colonists — United Empire Loyalists — British Parliament Grants Substantial Aid — The Niagara Peninsula.

At the commencement of the Revolutionary war, the western portion of Quebec, afterwards called Upper Canada, was practically an unknown wilderness, and is said to have contained less than two thousand of a white population. In the latter part of the seventeenth century, the fur trade with the Indians began to increase rapidly and soon became a matter of great commercial importance to both English and French colonists. To increase the facilities for prosecuting this trade, and to guard the interests of those engaged in it, trading posts were established at various points in this western district. These posts were protected by rude fortifications, and the white population very naturally settled in close proximity to them, so as to have easy access to a place of refuge from the attacks of the Indians.

In selecting sites for these trading posts, the early French explorers chose situations that were important from a military point of view. To guard the outlet of the great lakes, a fort was established at Cataraqui, near the site of the present city of Kingston.

On the 12th of July, 1673, Governor Frontenac and a party of some four hundred men, with one hundred and twenty canoes, and two large flat boats on which cannons were mounted, landed at this point. Arrangements were soon made with the Iroquois chiefs for holding a grand council. The next day the members of this council assembled with great pomp and

imposing ceremony. Frontenac made a speech in which he assured the Indians of the kindness and good will of the French, and of their desire to avoid war. While this first meeting was in session, Raudin, the engineer of the expedition, marked out the plan of the fort. Men were at once set to work clearing away the timber, cutting and hewing the palisades, and digging the necessary trenches. The fort and barracks were soon complete, and on the 1st of August the Governor reached Montreal on his return journey.

Well protected from winds, secure in its anchorage, and easy of access, the mouth of the Niagara river possessed many natural advantages as a harbor. It is not surprising therefore that the intrepid LaSalle with his keen foresight should select this spot as a site for a fort and trading post. Here, then, in 1678, on the east side of the river, the first fort was built. This position was an advantageous one, for it commanded the entrance to the interior and afforded safe and easy communication with the colonial headquarters at Montreal. A third fort was built at Detroit to control the passage from Lake Erie north.

The original fort built at Niagara by LaSalle was destroyed by fire a few years after it was completed. In 1687, the Marquis de Denonville, then Governor-General of Canada, rebuilt it in a more permanent form. He described the locality as "the most beautiful, the most pleasing, and the most advantageous site on the lake." Jealous and indignant at the establishment of a French fortress on the British side of the Niagara river, the British colonists in the Province of New York remonstrated strongly against this action on the part of the Canadian authorities. For some reason this fort was abandoned in 1688, and remained without a garrison until 1725, when Baron de Longueuil took possession of it, and laid the foundation of a stone fortification on the spot where the original fort had been built. This was completed the following year, and from time to time enlarged and strengthened until it became one of the strongest fortresses in Canada.

In 1759, while the seven years' war engrossed the attention

of the European nations, and the Indian and colonial wars struck terror into the hearts and desolated the homes of the frontier settlers, this fort was held for the French king by a garrison of some 500 men under the command of M. Pouchot. Being a position of great military value to the British colonists, it was regularly besieged by Brigadier General Prideaux with an army of 8,200 men and 600 Indians. During the progress of the siege, General Prideaux was accidently killed by the premature bursting of a small mortar, and the command of the army then devolved upon Sir Wm. Johnston, of Mohawk celebrity. To relieve the garrison and raise the siege, a large force of French and Indians was sent from the Lake Erie district. Intelligence of the advance of this army having been received, Captain de Lancey was ordered to prepare an ambuscade near where Lewiston now stands to intercept the enemy's progress. Not anticipating this movement on the part of the British, the French were surprised and defeated. When the commander of Fort Niagara learned that the army sent to relieve him had been thoroughly routed, he at once accepted the honorable terms offered him by the commander of the British forces, Sir Wm. Johnston. Fort Niagara thus fell into the hands of the British a short time before Wolfe won his memorable battle on the Plains of Abraham, and Canada became a British colony. It remained in the hands of the British until, by the Treaty of Paris, it was surrendered to the Americans, who, however, did not get actual possession of it until 1796, when under Jay's Treaty it was practically abandoned.

One effect that followed the close of the Revolutionary war was the sifting out of the tried and true subjects of Great Britain. While this internecine struggle was going on, right nobly did they uphold the cause of the mother country and battle for her supremacy. When their efforts were thwarted by the establishment of the American Republic they forsook their comfortable homes, and migrated to the northern shores of the St. Lawrence and the great lakes. In that broad domain, amidst untold hardships and struggles, they began life anew and laid the foundations of a youthful nation that has

ever proved loyal to the throne and sceptre of Great Britain, and that has sworn fealty to her laws and institutions. For their efforts to maintain the unity of the British Empire, and for their devotion to the cause of the mother country, they were called United Empire Loyalists, a name that should ever be honored by all true Canadians. It is difficult for us, surrounded as we are with the modern conveniences of life, to fully appreciate the sacrifices made and the hardships endured by these loyal people. Many of them were men of wealth, ability and professional skill. Their families occupied comfortable homes, and were prominent in society. These they saw subjected to social ostracism, and exposed to open insult, and sometimes to wanton outrage and spoliation.

The leaders of both political parties in the British parliament warmly espoused their cause, and spoke in the highest terms of the devotion and loyalty of these patriotic people. The home government voted £3,300,000 sterling to indemnify them for their losses, and to aid them in building up new homes in Canada. For this purpose settlements were opened up and surveys made along the upper portion of the St. Lawrence, around the beautiful Bay of Quinte, on the northern shores of Lake Ontario, and in the Niagara peninsula. A free grant of 200 acres of land was given to each U. E. Loyalist, and each child, on coming of age, received a similar grant. Assistance was freely given in the shape of food, clothing and implements. Each head of a family received an axe, a hoe, and a spade. To each group of two families a cow and a plow was allotted. Cross-cut saws, whip saws, and portable mills were furnished for each settlement. Liberal grants of land were made to immigrants from Great Britain. Many disbanded soldiers, half-pay officers, and members of the militia force availed themselves of these liberal terms, took up land, and became permanent residents. Rations of food, and in many cases necessary articles of clothing were given by the government to such people as were in need. This liberal treatment extended over a period of three years, and in this way these pioneer families were enabled to tide over the period of greatest

hardship, and get a portion of their lands cleared and under cultivation.

It is estimated that fully 10,000 of these patriots settled in Canada within a year after the war had closed, the great majority of whom came from the New England colonies and the adjacent province of New York. This immigration continued steadily until not less than 25,000 people had settled in the British colonies. The Niagara peninsula offered an attractive asylum for these loyal people. Not only was it convenient of access, but it possessed a fertile soil and a salubrious climate. These U. E. Loyalists were not slow to perceive the many desirable features of this district, and soon numerous settlements were formed along the southern shore of Lake Ontario and on the banks of the river which separated it from the young republic. As these advantages became more widely known, the influx of population rapidly increased. Some of the more adventurous spirits were not content to remain in that locality, but turning their face westward sought homes around the "Head of the Lake," as it was then called. To reach this point it was necessary to follow the Indian trail below the mountain or coast along the shore in open boats.

CHAPTER IV.

The First Settlers — Charles Depew — George Stewart — Richard Beasley — Robert Land — His Narrow Escape from Death — Destruction of His Home — Settles near Niagara — Mrs. Land goes to New Brunswick — Their Long Separation and a Happy Reunion — Abraham and Isaac Horning — Emigrate from Pennsylvania — Peter Horning and His Two Sisters Follow — Meet Their Brothers — Their Toilsome Journey.

To whom shall we ascribe the honor of being the first settler at the head of Lake Ontario? This is a question that has been frequently asked, but so far the writer is unable to furnish any information more definite than that which is written here. The persons named may justly lay claim to this honor, but it is impossible at this late date to decide upon the particular person.

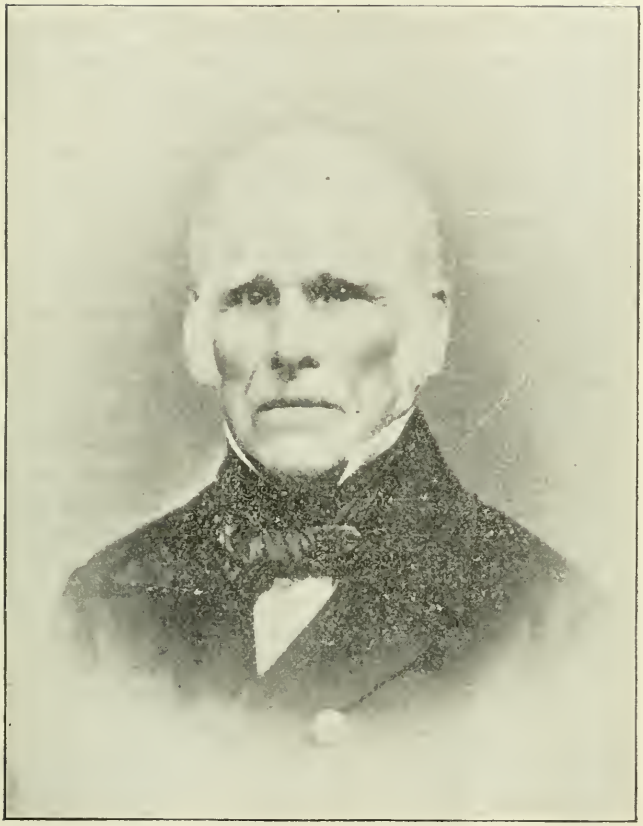
According to the records in the Crown Lands Department for Ontario, the plans of the original survey of the townships of Barton and Saltfleet were registered on the 25th of October, 1791, by Augustus Jones, deputy provincial land surveyor. The names of those who had taken up land at this time were entered on these plans, which gave them an interim title, but it was not until 1796 that regular patents were issued. Reference to this list will show the year in which the patents were granted, but it does not decide the question, "who was the first settler?" for quite a number of people had settled here prior to any survey.

Among the earliest of these patriots who visited this section of the province with the view of making it their home, were Charles Depew, and his brother-in-law, George Stewart. These men coasted along the southern shore of the lake as far as Burlington Beach, near the mouth of the big creek at the southeast corner of the bay. At this place they dragged their

canoe across the beach, pursued their course along the south shore, and landed on what is known as the Depew farm, now occupied by Mr. S. P. Stipe. As no surveys had been made, the manner of locating claims consisted in writing the name of the claimant on a flattened stake, driving it into the ground, and taking formal possession. This they did. Mr. Depew selected the farm, which has since that time borne his name. Mr. Stewart went farther west, and chose what in recent years is known as the Grant farm. From the most trustworthy information obtainable, the autumn of 1785 appears to be the time in which this journey was made. The following year they moved their effects to this place and became permanent settlers.

About the same time Mr. Richard Beasley, who carried on quite an extensive trade with the Indians, laid claim to the land where Dundurn Park is now situated. He also pre-empted the adjoining property, known as Beasley's Hollow, and afterwards erected a mill on the stream flowing into Coote's Paradise. On his monument in the churchyard of Christ Church Cathedral, Hamilton, the following inscription is found: "In memory of Richard Beasley, Esquire, who departed this life on the 16th day of February, 1842, aged 80 years and 7 months, —the first settler at the Head of the Lake."

Mr. Robert Land was certainly among the very earliest settlers at the "Head of the Lake," if not actually the first. A very interesting and romantic incident is related in connection with his experience in Canadian pioneer life. His early home was on the banks of the Delaware river, when the thirteen colonies cast off their allegiance to the British crown, and erected themselves into the Republic of the United States. Cherishing the name of Briton as an honorable birthright, and being loyal to king and country, he cast in his lot with the British. Naturally of a courageous disposition, and filled with a spirit of daring, he was frequently selected as the bearer of important despatches. One night while engaged in this dangerous duty he was fired at by the enemy. A partially spent musket ball struck him. The wound thus inflicted pre-



COL. ROBERT LAND.

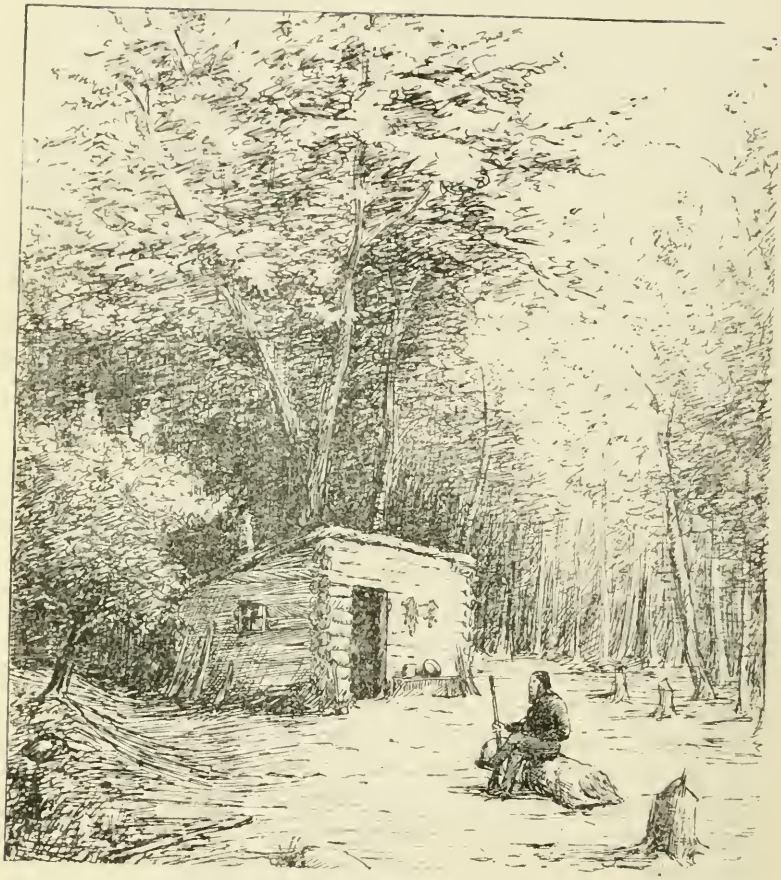
vented him from reaching his home. He was forced to conceal himself in a thicket of underbrush, where he remained all night. As soon as he had regained sufficient strength, he resumed his journey and reached his home. Here he found nothing left but the ashes of his cabin. His wife and children had gone he knew not whither. Sorrowfully he turned from this sad scene, and set his face for Canada. Of that perilous journey, its hardships, its dangers, and its privations, we shall say nothing further than that he reached Niagara in safety, and found himself once more on British soil. For some time he remained in this place, but not being satisfied with his surroundings he determined to go still farther west. We next find him settled in a lonely log cabin in a small clearing on the southern shore of a beautiful body of water, called by the Indians, Macassa, where we shall leave him while we trace briefly the history of his wife and children during the long period of their separation.

Mrs. Land supposing that her husband had been killed, followed the British army into New Brunswick. By dint of hard labor and careful management, she contrived to bring up her family until they could do something towards supporting themselves. Her prospects in that colony not being satisfactory she determined to go to Canada. She reached Niagara in safety, and learned that a man bearing the name of Robert Land had settled somewhere near the Head of the Lake. This unexpected news awakened within her the hope that this man might be her long lost husband, for she had cherished in her heart the hope that they might meet again. She at once decided to go to the Head of the Lake. To the great joy of all the long separated family were united. For many years they lived together in their peaceful and happy home, enjoying the respect and esteem of all with whom they came in contact.

The history of the early settlement of this part of the province would be incomplete without some reference to the hardships endured and the difficulties surmounted by the Horning family in their long and tedious journey from their quiet home on the Susquehanna river in Pennsylvania to the

unbroken forests surrounding the head of Lake Ontario. Mr. Robert Horning, a great grandson of Mr. Ludwig, or Lewis Horning, the founder of the family, has furnished the writer with the following description of that memorable voyage: He says, "My great grandfather, Mr. Ludwig Horning, emigrated from Holland in 1770, and settled in Montgomery county, Pennsylvania, on the banks of the Susquehanna river. Here his family grew up and remained with him until 1787, when his two sons, Abraham and Isaac, emigrated to Canada. They settled where East Hamilton now stands, and built a log shanty to the south of the residence of the late Dr. Lewis Springer. When leaving home, their mother, thoughtful woman that she was, gave them a supply of garden seeds. Among them were some of her favorite flowers, which in due time were planted around their lonely cabin in the forest. Through the winter they toiled late and early adding to their small clearing. Spring came and with it the opening leaves and flowers. To their great joy they saw these garden favorites blooming gaily, and recalling thoughts of home and friends far away.

"In 1788 their brother, Peter Horning, with his family and two sisters started for Canada. Before leaving home they built a boat of sufficient size to carry their household effects. Following the Susquehanna they reached a tributary that led to the first of a chain of lakes that crosses the State of New York. Up this stream they pursued their toilsome journey and crossed the first lake. Here they made their first portage and reached the second lake. After crossing this they made a second portage, and reached the shores of the third lake. Following the river that flows from this lake they found themselves on the southern shore of Lake Ontario, where Oswego now stands. Resting here for a short time, they pursued their journey westward, coasting along the shore. Before reaching Niagara, however, they encountered a very severe storm. Their boat was driven ashore and broken in pieces, but they managed to save a portion of its cargo. Peter Horning then started to walk to Niagara, while the remainder of the party



ROBERT LAND'S CABIN.

camped on the shore until help should arrive. When he reached Niagara he at once informed the authorities of his mishap, and they promptly sent a Mr. St. John with a boat and crew to bring the family and what remained of their household effects. The family remained here a short time while Peter Horning and his two sisters followed the Indian trail to the Head of the Lake. Arriving here one day they discovered a log cabin in a small clearing. The cabin was open but no person was near. One of the sisters saw the flowers and at once said, "We are at the end of our journey; I know it by these flowers. Mother gave the seed to Abraham. They cannot be far away." Noticing a path leading in a northerly direction, they followed it, and soon found themselves on the shores of a beautiful body of water, now known as Burlington Bay, whither the two young men had gone to fish. Great was the rejoicing when the brothers recognized their friends from Pennsylvania. In the course of a few days the remainder of the party arrived, and landed on the farm then occupied by Mr. Depew. Soon they were quietly settled in their log cabin, where they remained for many years.

"In 1828, Peter Horning purchased 2,500 acres of land in Simcoe County, which is still known as Horning's Mills. Here he remained until 1838, when he returned to his old home in Hamilton. While living at Horning's Mills two children were stolen by the Indians, and no trace of them, nor yet any information as to their fate, has ever been received by any of the family."

This toilsome journey of the Horning family covered a period of eight weeks. From this brief but imperfect description we can form some conception of the privations, discouragements, and hardships endured by these pioneer families in their efforts to provide themselves with comfortable homes in the forests of Canada. Nor is this all. It brings out in bold relief the courage, the perseverance, and the indomitable energy of these truly noble men and women.

CHAPTER V.

General Carlton — Upper Canada Divided in to Four Districts — Lunenburg — Mecklenburg — Nassau — Hesse — Why so Called — The Township the unit of our Municipal System — Local Government by Town Meetings and Quarter Sessions — District Councils — Municipal Act of 1849 — Surveying Townships — Land Boards — Augustus Jones, Deputy Surveyor — Indian Reserve — Indian Line — Purchase Line.

In 1786, General Carlton, under the title of Lord Dorchester, returned to Canada as Governor General. His attention was directed to the necessities of the western portion of the province, which at that time was receiving a large accession to its population by the influx of U. E. Loyalists. To secure better government and to give every facility for settlement, he issued a proclamation on the 24th July, 1788, dividing what is now the Province of Ontario into four districts. Their names and boundaries were fixed as follows:

1. The district of Lunenburg, bounded on the east by the easterly limit of a tract called Lancaster, and extending westward to a line running north and south to the limits of the province, and intersecting the mouth of the river Gananoque above the rifts of the St. Lawrence.

2. The district of Mecklenburg, bounded on the east by the westerly limit of Lunenburg, and extending westward to a line running north and south to the limits of the province, and intersecting the mouth of the river Trent, where it discharges itself into the bay of Quinte.

3. The district of Nassau, bounded on the east by the westerly boundary of Mecklenburg, and extending to a line running north and south to the limits of the province, and intersecting the eastern projection of Long Point into Lake Erie on the northern side of the said Lake Erie.

4. The district of Hesse, which is to comprehend the residue of the said province in the western or inland parts thereof.

These names were doubtless selected because they represented royalist and protestant ideas. The grand ducal family of Brunswick, *Lunenburg*, was a sovereign branch of the house of Hanover. Queen Charlotte had been the princess of *Mecklenburg*-Strelitz. William III was the head of the illustrious house of Orange-*Nassau*, and the princes of *Hesse* sent auxiliary forces to combat American rebels.

In Canada the township is the unit of our municipal system and the original basis of local self government. Cities, towns and incorporated villages are considered as units, similar to townships, since the powers and functions vested in the local representatives are based upon the same general principles. Townships, towns and villages are grouped together to form counties for municipal purposes. Counties were originally formed for military purposes and for the election of representatives to the Legislative Assembly. They had no place in our system of local self government until county councils were established by the municipal act of 1849. Similarly they are grouped to form electoral divisions. The boundaries of these divisions may be coterminous with the municipal boundaries, or they may very from them to suit the exigencies of parliamentary representation. So far as the writer has been informed, the unity of the township, town or village has never been violated. These municipalities play a very important part in our system of local self government. The representatives elected by the people form a corporation, and are vested with power and authority to levy and collect taxes directly from the people, a power that is not given to any other body.

The Legislature of Upper Canada in 1793 passed an act to provide for the nomination and appointment of parish and town officers, and introduced the system of local self government by town meetings and quarter sessions. This system remained in force until 1841, when an act was passed to provide

for the better internal government of this province by the establishment of local municipal bodies elected by the people, and called district councils. The administrative functions exercised by the magistrates in quarter sessions, and certain other powers specifically named, were vested in these corporations. This act was superseded by the municipal act of 1849, which, though amended and reconstructed by successive parliaments, has not been altered in any of its essential principles. The first elections under its provisions were held in 1850, but it was not until 1851 that the new plan made much of an impression on the country. The local municipalities were divided into six classes: (1) Townships. (2) Counties. (3) Police villages. (4) Incorporated villages. (5) Towns, and (6) Cities, to each of which were granted certain privileges and prerogatives.

Sir Frederick Haldimand in 1781 began the work of surveying townships in Upper Canada, but not much progress was made. It soon became evident that more vigorous measures were necessary, and accordingly a surveyor general was appointed. Under his direction the work was prosecuted vigorously, and settlements were established for the distressed Loyalists, who were resorting to this province in large numbers.

In each of the districts into which Upper Canada was then divided, Land Boards, as they were designated, were established. The Nassau Land Board consisted of the following persons: Lieutenant-Colonel Hunter, or the officer commanding, Lieutenant-Colonel Butler, Peter TenBroeck, Robert Hamilton, Benjamin Pawling and Nathaniel Pettit. Their first meeting was held in 1789 in Navy Hall, Niagara, immediately after the close of the Quarter Sessions. Their duties were (1) To examine into the loyalty and character of all persons claiming or asking lands for settlement, if approved, the oath of allegiance was administered, and the surveyors were directed to locate the applicants on unclaimed lands. (2) To settle all land disputes. A great many settlers located their families on lands still unsurveyed. When the surveys were

completed, disputes concerning boundaries arose, and the Land Board acted as a court of adjudication. (3) To locate settlers and have a general oversight over all land matters. (4) To appoint road commissioners, and (5) To recommend such measures to the government as, in their opinion, would promote the welfare and harmony of the inhabitants.

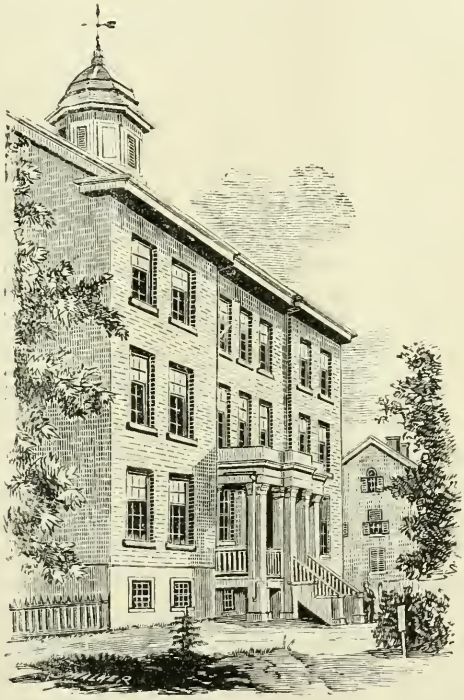
On the recommendation of the Land Board Mr. Augustus Jones was, in June, 1791, appointed Deputy Provincial Land Surveyor for the District of Nassau. He had been in active work since November, 1789, assisting Mr. Philip Fry in his surveys, and was therefore familiar with the work required of him. Having been closely connected with the first surveys around the head of the lake, a brief outline of his personal history will not be out of place. His second son, the Rev. Peter Jones, in his autobiography, says: "My father, Mr. Augustus Jones, was of Welsh extraction. His grandfather emigrated to America prior to the American Revolution, and settled on the Hudson River, in the State of New York. Mr. A. Jones, having finished his studies as a land surveyor in the city of New York, came with a recommendation from Mr. Colden, son of the Governor of that State, to Lord Dorchester, Governor General of Canada, and was immediately employed as a Deputy Provincial Surveyor in laying out town plots, townships and roads in different parts of the Province. This necessarily brought him in contact with the Indian tribes. He learned their language, and employed many of them in his service. He became so much interested in the Indian character that he resolved on taking a wife from among them. Accordingly he married my mother, Tuhbenakanguay, daughter of a chief of the Mississagua tribe of the Ojibway nation. This took place at the Grand River in 1798. The issue of this union was five sons and five daughters. My father being fully engaged in his work, left my eldest brother and myself entirely under the care and management of my mother. She preferred the habits of her own people, and for more than fourteen years we lived and wandered about with the Indians."

Sir Frederick Haldimand, Governor General of Canada, on the application of Capt. Joseph Brant and other chiefs and warriors of the Six Nation Indians, granted them in 1784, and to their posterity forever, the Grand River from its source to its entry into Lake Erie, and extending six miles on either side of the river. The limits of this Indian Reserve were neither definitely fixed nor surveyed until 1791, when a plan of the Grand River was laid before the Land Board of Nassau. They called Capt. Joseph Brant and the principal chiefs and warriors to aid them with their counsel and advice. After careful consideration it was unanimously agreed upon and determined that the bend of the river eastward nearly two miles from its mouth or issue into Lake Erie and the Mohawk village near the bend of the river, northward, shall be the two fixed points. That a line drawn straight from one of these points to the other shall form the centre line of the Indian settlement or lands on the Grand River, and that two parallel lines to this, six miles distant, on either side of the river, shall form the bounds between them and the district of Nassau. This agreement was ratified on the first day of February, 1791. The total cost of this survey was about four hundred dollars.

This Indian line, a name by which it is familiarly known among the residents of that locality, forms the southerly boundary of Binbrook, Glanford and Ancaster. Its bearing, as laid down on the surveyor's plan, is north 62° 30′ west to a point opposite the Mohawk village, where it changes its direction, and runs north 15° 40′ west. This last named line forms the western boundary of the Gore of Beverly.

The Mississagua Indians claimed the lands lying along the northern shore of Lake Ontario as far east as the Credit River. To separate these from the lands already purchased, a line running in a north-westerly direction, and familiarly known as the "Purchase Line," was surveyed. The starting point for this survey was the "Old outlet," connecting Burlington Bay with Lake Ontario, and situated near the northern end of the Beach. This line was run at an angle of north 45° west, and extended

to a point distant about twelve miles from the water's edge. From this point the surveyors were instructed to run a series of radial lines like the spokes of a wheel, with the view of reaching the sources of the Thames. From this it is quite evident that the authorities knew very little about the interior of the country. At a later date this line was extended some four miles, and now forms the boundary between the Counties of Wentworth and Halton.



OLD COUNTY COURT HOUSE.

CHAPTER VI.

Constitutional Act of 1791 — John Graves Simcoe — His Early Life — Visits America — Elected Member of the British Parliament — Appointed First Governor of Upper Canada — A Government Organized — Province Divided into Counties — First Session of Parliament — Formal Opening — Acts Passed — Governor Simcoe Visits Detroit — Survey of the Governor's Road — First Survey of Townships — Townships Numbered — Names Substituted for Numbers — Plans Registered — The L of Glanford — Surveys Completed.

REFERENCE has been made incidentally to Upper Canada, but it was not until May, 1791, that the British parliament passed an act for the division of the Province of Quebec into two parts. The westerly portion was called Upper, and the easterly, Lower Canada. This act went into force on the 26th of December, 1791, and Colonel Simcoe was appointed the first governor of the western province. In Upper Canada the Legislative Assembly consisted of sixteen representatives elected by the people, and the Legislative Council of seven councillors nominated by the Crown. A provincial court of appeal was constituted, the English tenure of land by free and common socage adopted, and provision made for the support of the Protestant clergy. Tithes were enforceable, but Protestants were protected from paying them in support of the Roman Catholic clergy.

John Graves Simcoe, the first governor of Upper Canada, was an Englishman by birth and education. He attended the free grammar school at Exeter until he was fourteen years of age, when he was removed to Eton, and afterwards to Merton college, Oxford. Shortly after leaving college he obtained a commission as ensign in the 35th Regiment, when he was only nineteen years of age. This regiment was ordered to America to take part in the Revolutionary war. Here he distinguished

himself by his energy, sound judgment and thorough military knowledge, and succeeded in procuring a commission as captain of a company in the 40th Regiment. This company won great honor at the battle of Brandywine. Captain Simcoe was promoted to the rank of major, and placed in command of the regiment known far and wide as the Queen's Rangers. The special duties of this regiment were principally those of scouts or light cavalry, and they were accorded certain privileges not given to any other corps. He remained in command of this regiment until the surrender of Lord Cornwallis at Yorktown. On account of enfeebled health he was allowed to return to England as a prisoner on parole. Here he remained until he was relieved from parole by the conclusion of a treaty of peace between the mother country and her colonies. In recognition of his eminent services, His Majesty conferred upon him the rank of lieutenant colonel of the army.

During his military career he had acquired a reputation in England, and in 1790 was elected a member of parliament. He took an active part in the discussion that arose on the Constitutional Act. Being intimately acquainted with its provision and sympathizing deeply with the refugee loyalists, he seemed the most eligible person to appoint as governor of Upper Canada. Accordingly he was appointed, and his subsequent career fully justified the confidence placed in him.

He arrived at Kingston after a long and tedious journey up the St. Lawrence, and on the 8th of July, 1792, took the oaths of office, and proceeded at once to organize a government. The following persons were appointed members of the Legislative Council: William Osgoode, chief justice; John White, who came out from England for this purpose in 1792, attorney general; Peter Russell, receiver general; D. W. Smith, surveyor general; William Jarvis, provincial secretary; James Small, clerk of the council; Thomas Talbot was private secretary, and Major Littlehales, A. D. C. to the governor. Mr. Gray was appointed solicitor general; Thomas Ridout and Wm. Chewett, assistant surveyor generals; Peter Clark, clerk of the Legislative Assembly; John G. Law, usher of the

black rod; Colonel John Butler, superintendent of Indian affairs. The council chamber was at Navy Hall, Newark, now Niagara.

A proclamation was issued by the Governor on the 16th July, 1792, dividing the province into nineteen counties for the purpose of electing representatives to the Legislative Assembly. The limits of these counties were determined more by the number of inhabitants than by the extent of territory embraced within their limits, due allowance being made for prospective settlements. The following are the names of the counties beginning at the eastern boundary of the province: Glengarry, Stormont, Dundas, Grenville, Leeds, Frontenac, Ontario, Addington, Lennox, Prince Edward, Hastings, Northumberland, Durham, York, Lincoln, Norfolk, Suffolk, Essex and Kent. Sixteen representatives were elected. At that time, what is now known as North Wentworth, formed part of the west riding of York, and South Wentworth part of the first riding of Lincoln. York was divided into two ridings, the east and the west, and extended from the County of Durham westward to the river Thames, then called La Tranche, and embraced all the territory north of the western part of Lake Ontario, Lake Geneva, and a carrying place from Lake Geneva to Mohawk village. Lincoln was divided into four ridings, the first, second, third and fourth, and had the Niagara river for its eastern boundary, Lake Erie and the Grand river west to Mohawk village for its southern boundary, and Lake Ontario, Lake Geneva and the west riding of York for its northern boundary. By this proclamation the name of Lake Geneva was changed to that of Burlington Bay.

The first parliament of Upper Canada was summoned to meet at Niagara on the 17th day of September, 1792, and was prorogued on the 15th day of October following. The names of sixteen representatives elected by the people were: John Macdonell, John Booth, J. W. Baby, Alexander Campbell, Philip Dorland, Jeremiah French, Ephraim Jones, William Macomb, Hugh Macdonell, Benjamin Pawling, Nathaniel Pettit, David William Smith, Hazleton Spencer, Isaac Swayzy,

Mr. Young and John White. The members present subscribed to the oaths of office, except Philip Dorland, who, being a Quaker, refused to be sworn. His seat was therefore declared vacant, and Peter VanAlstine elected to fill the vacancy.

To impress the people of this province with the fact that they were a part of the British Empire, the Governor opened parliament with all the pomp and ceremony that distinguished the opening of the British parliament. Soldiers were drawn up in line to form a guard of honor to His Excellency, the members of the Legislative Council gave notice of his presence, the members of the Legislative Assembly appeared at the bar of the House, and the Governor read the speech from the throne. In it he cited his authority for calling them together, spoke approvingly of the many wise provisions of the Constitutional Act of the previous year, referred to the trusts and duties committed to their care, alluded in flattering terms to the many advantages possessed by the colony, and concluded by expressing the hope that it would soon be settled with a contented and prosperous people.

When the formalities of opening the session had been concluded, the legislators proceeded actively to business. The following acts were passed, received the royal assent, and became law: 1. An act to repeal certain portions of the Quebec Act of 1775, and to introduce the English law as the rule of decision in all matters of controversy relative to property and civil rights. 2. An act to establish trial by jury. 3. An act to establish the Winchester bushel, and a standard for other weights and measures. 4. An act concerning courts of common pleas. 5. An act to prevent accidents by fire. 6. An act for the more easy and speedy recovery of small debts. 7. An act to regulate the tolls to be taken at mills (not more than one-twelfth for grinding and bolting). 8. An act for building a gaol and court house in each district, and to change the names of the districts. The name of Lunenburg district was changed to that of Eastern district, Mecklenburg to Midland, Nassau to Home, and Hesse to Western. Owing to the time

(Sept. 17th), at which the Parliament was summoned to meet, only five representatives elected by the people, and two members of the Legislative Council, were present at the opening ceremonies. The remaining members could not attend to their parliamentary duties, as they were required at home to secure their crops and finish their fall work. The seat of government was removed from Niagara to York in 1797, and the Provincial Parliament was opened in a wooden building near the Don. Parliament street received its name from this event.

Governor Simcoe, with a small party of officers and men, started from Niagara on the 4th of February, 1793, to visit the post at the Straits of Detroit, and to review the soldiers stationed at that place. On their journey they visited Mohawk village, the home of Capt. Joseph Brant. They went from this place to the Delaware Indian village on the Thames, Capt. Brant and a band of his braves accompanying them. Here they remained for a short time, and then proceeded to Detroit, where they reviewed the 24th Regiment, and examined the fort. On the return trip a day was spent examining the country around the present site of the city of London, which in the opinion of the Governor was a very desirable situation for the metropolis of Canada. Lord Dorchester favored Kingston. A compromise was agreed upon, and Toronto, then called York, became the capital.

When the Governor returned to Niagara, he issued the following instructions to Mr. Augustus Jones, Deputy Provincial Surveyor: "You are to proceed immediately to Burlington Bay (formerly Lake Geneva), and from thence to the extent of bateau navigation in Coote's Paradise, at or near a creek (Beasley's creek) which falls from the mountain, and thence commence your survey by running, measuring and slightly marking a line south 77° west, until you strike the river Thames, which it is conjectured, you will do near the Upper Forkes." When Mr. A. Jones had completed this survey, and sent his report to the government, it was found that this line, instead of running south 77° west as conjectured, ran south

CAPT. JOSEPH BRANT.

78° 30' west. These instructions bear the date of March 19th, 1793.

The first surveys made in the Niagara peninsula were two townships fronting on the Niagara river, and extending as far south as the Welland river. These were known as Townships Nos. 1 and 2, in the district of Nassau. On the west side of No. 1, and extending westward to Coote's Paradise, a range of townships was surveyed, and were known as Townships Nos. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 and 8, in the district of Nassau. In the rear of No. 7 another township was surveyed. These surveys were made in 1790 and 1791. On the north side of Lake Geneva a portion of a township was surveyed in 1791, and called the Township of Geneva.

On the 18th December, Governor Simcoe issued a proclamation designating these townships by names instead of numbers, as follows: No. 1, Newark, changed to Niagara in 1800; 2, Stamford; 3, Grantham; 4, Louth; 5, Clinton; 6, Grimsby; 7, Saltfleet; 8, Barton. The one in the rear of No. 7, or Saltfleet, was called Binbrook. These names were chosen from the names of places in the counties of Lincolnshire and Yorkshire, in England.

The township of Saltfleet is divided into eight concessions or rows of lots, and a broken front. These concessions are subdivided into seventeen blocks, each containing two lots. These lots have a frontage of twenty chains, by a depth of fifty, and contain one hundred acres each. The starting point in the survey is a line, called a base line, running at right angles to the western boundary of the township of Grimsby, and at a convenient distance from the lake shore. Around each of these blocks, a strip of land one chain in width, is reserved for a road allowance. The concession lines run north 72° west, and the side lines south 18° west. According to the returns of the assessors for 1894, this township contains 28,173 acres.

The general plan of survey in Barton is similar to that of Saltfleet, with this exception, that each concession contains only twenty-one, instead of thirty-four lots. The concession lines,

and the side lines run in the same direction as the corresponding lines in Saltfleet, but the concession lines are not coterminous since the base line was run farther to the north. It is estimated that the number of acres in this township, according to the original survey, was about 17,500, but this has been reduced to 12,762, the remainder being occupied by the city of Hamilton. In both of these townships the concessions are numbered from the lake, southward, and the lots, from the eastern boundary, westward.

When the township of Binbrook was first surveyed, it consisted of four concessions, each containing five blocks. These were numbered 1, 2, 3, 4 and 5 respectively, beginning at the easterly boundary, and contained 1,000 acres each excepting number 5, which contained 600 acres. This township lies immediately in the rear of, and adjacent to the township of Saltfleet. The concessions are numbered from north to south, and run parallel to those in Saltfleet, with their side lines at right angles to the concessions, both lines having the same bearing as the corresponding lines in Saltfleet and Barton. In a subsequent survey these blocks were subdivided into five lots, each containing 200 acres. This township, as first surveyed, contained 18,400 acres, but in the year 1800, the L of Glanford was detached from Glanford, and joined to Binbrook, and now it contains 26,387 acres.

The copies of the original plans in the Crown Lands office, Toronto, show that the townships of Saltfleet, Barton, Binbrook, and part of a township on the north side of Lake Geneva, called the Township of Geneva (now East Flamboro'), were surveyed in 1791 by Augustus Jones, Deputy Provincial Surveyor, and countersigned by Samuel Holland, Surveyor General, and at a later date by D. W. Smith, acting Surveyor General for Upper Canada. These plans contain the names of each proprietor, inserted in his own lot, and are dated Nassau, 25th October, 1791.

Reference has already been made to the survey of the Governor's road, sometimes called Dundas street, westward from a point on the south shore of Coote's Paradise to the

forks of the Thames. In May, 1793, Mr. A. Jones was instructed by the surveyor general for Upper Canada—"To proceed to Coote's Paradise, and from thence along the road marked to the river Thames, which you report to run south 77° west, until you intersect the north-east boundary of the land occupied by the Six Nation Indians, running north 15° 40′ west, and there commence your survey by admeasuring, marking and laying off so much of three townships, as is hereinafter mentioned."

The first township was surveyed on the north side of this road. Each concession was divided into six blocks, with an allowance of one chain for roads between these blocks, and between the concessions. Each block was subdivided into six lots, each lot having a frontage of 20 by a depth of 100 chains. These lots were numbered from west to east, and the concessions from south to north. The plans prepared by Mr. A. Jones, and registered in the surveyor general's office, show that this township extended twelve miles from front to rear, and covered an area of 108 square miles. The bearings of the concession lines are south 77° west, and of the side lines north 13° west, or in other words the former run thirteen degrees south of a line running due east and west, and the latter the same distance west of a line running due north and south. The Indian line runs north 15° 40′ west, while the western boundary of this township runs north 13° west. A gore of land is thus left between these two boundaries, which remained separate from any municipality until 1821, when it was made a part of Beverly.

The second township on the north side of this road was surveyed on the same general plan, with similar concessions, blocks, lots and road allowances, and extended from the eastern boundary of the first township to the north angle of Coote's Paradise, the lots being numbered from west to east, and the concessions from south to north.

On the northern shore of Lake Geneva, Mr. A. Jones, in 1791, surveyed a portion of a township to which the name of Geneva was given. Four concessions and a broken front were

HAMILTON IN 1847.

surveyed. These concessions were divided into seven lots each. After completing the survey of the first concession in the second township, he was instructed to divide each of the seven blocks in the different concessions of the township of Geneva into two lots, each lot to have a frontage of about 23 chains, and a depth of 87 chains. In this section of the second township the concessions were to run at right angles to the north-eastern boundary line, a line running north 45° west from the outlet at the northern end of the Beach. A road allowance of one chain was left between lots 7 and 8, and is known as the Centre road.

The third township was to consist of that triangular tract of land bounded on the north by the Governor's road, on the southwest by the Indian line, and on the southeast by the western boundary of the township of Barton. This tract was surveyed on the same general plan as that adopted for the survey of the first township, which lies immediately to the north and adjacent thereto. The concessions, blocks, lots and road allowances correspond in form and size with those of the adjoining townships on the north. The lots were numbered from west to east, and the concessions from north to south. Similar lines are described by the same bearings, and run in the same directions.

In December, 1793, Governor Simcoe changed the designation of the various townships, surveyed in the old district of Nassau, from numbers to names. The names assigned to the first eight townships have already been given. Of those surveyed during the summer of 1793, by Mr. A. Jones, the name of Beverly was given to the first on the north side of Dundas street, and Flamborough to the second, while the third, situated on the south side of said road, received the name of Ancaster.

In December, 1793, instructions were given to Mr. A. Jones to survey outlines of a new township between Barton and the Indian lands on the Grand river. He was further instructed to extend the line forming the western boundary of Barton in a southerly direction, until it intersected the north-

easterly boundary of these lands. This extended line was to form the western boundary of the new township, to which the name of Glanford was given. The concessions were to run parallel to those in Barton, and to have a depth of 66 chains, with an allowance of one chain for roads between concessions. These were subdivided into lots having a frontage of 28½ chains, and a road allowance of one chain was reserved between each group of five lots. Some of the work having been done in a careless manner, the survey of this township was revised and a corrected plan registered in the surveyor general's office, and countersigned by Thomas Ridout, surveyor general. The lots in Glanford contain 188 acres, instead of 100 or 200 as in the other townships. When the survey of Glanford was completed it was found that a tract of land, lying between Binbrook and the Indian lands, still remained unsurveyed. In 1794, Mr. Jones surveyed this, and laid it out on the same plan as that adopted in Glanford. It received the name of the L of Glanford, and remained a part of that township until 1800, when it was attached to and made part of the township of Binbrook. This explains why there is a skip from four to seven in numbering the concessions in this latter township, and affords a reason for the variation in the form and size of the lots in these two sections of it.

When the townships now forming the county of Wentworth were first surveyed, a plan was prepared and registered in the surveyor general's office. The boundaries were duly fixed and marked, but only one or two concessions were subdivided into lots with fixed metes and bounds. As these were taken up for settlement, other concessions were surveyed in detail, roads opened, and the lots assigned to those coming in as settlers. Soon, however, the land jobber or speculator applied for and received large grants, one person alone having no less than 6,600 acres in the township of Ancaster, with smaller quantities in other parts of the county. Mr. A. Jones was the surveyor selected to fix the metes and bounds of the townships in Wentworth, and to prepare the necessary plans for the surveyor general. Other surveyors were employed to complete certain

parts of the work, originally planned by Mr. Jones. Among the earliest of these are Messrs. Iredale, Stegman, Law, Philps, Whelock and Grant. These surveys were practically completed about the close of the eighteenth century.

CHAPTER VII.

Roads — Dundas Street — King's Landing Place — Second Division into Counties — Gore District Formed — Representatives in the First District Council — Brant Separated from Wentworth — Halton Separated — Wentworth as now Constituted — Wardens Elected — County Treasurers — County Clerks — P. S. Inspectors — County Councils — Act of 1896 — Commissioners Appointed — Report of Commissioners — Members of the New County Council — Warden Elected.

Building roads and opening up ways of communication in these early days necessarily involved a great amount of labor. Trees had to be felled, underbrush cut and cleared away, corduroy bridges made over low and wet places, and the smaller stumps and other obstacles removed. At first these roads were merely paths through the forest, and frequently followed the Indian trails. These paths were widened into roads as occasion required, so that sleighs could pass along them in winter and wagons or carts in summer.

Many of these early roads were of necessity very irregular in their course, according as the way was obstructed by hills, streams or swampy places. As the country grew older, and the population increased, these roads were straightened, the hills levelled, the roadways graded, and the streams bridged. At first this work was done by the residents of each locality, acting under a pathmaster appointed by the Quarter Sessions. Some of the most important of the leading thoroughfares, however, received aid from the government.

Governor Simcoe originated a plan for supplying Upper Canada with two great thoroughfares, one to extend from Kingston on the east to Lake Huron on the west, and the other from Toronto to Lake Simcoe. That portion of the former running from Toronto westward is called Dundas street, while

that extending eastward is called the Kingston road. Yonge street is the name given to the one running north to Lake Simcoe. Two purposes were to be served by these roads. The first, and at that time doubtless the more important, was that of a great military highway, and the second, of a great commercial road to give the outlying districts easy access to the ports on Lake Ontario.

Dundas street was surveyed at a distance of about three miles north of the lake shore. This position was selected in order to avoid the difficulty of bridging the streams near their outlets into the lakes, and for greater safety in sending supplies or forwarding troops in case of war. It passes through East Flamboro' about the centre of the third concession and continues in a westerly direction until it strikes the road allowance between the third and fourth concessions of West Flamboro'. Here it turns to the south as far as Rockview, thence to the southeast across lot 23 in the third concession, thence in a circuitous course south and west, until it reaches the King's landing place, where it intersects the road leading westward to the Thames. On the early maps this latter road is called Dundas street, but is now generally spoken of as the Governor's Road.

The King's landing place consisted of a block of land containing about 60 acres, and was reserved as a town plot, at the head of bateau navigation on the west of Coote's Paradise. It was composed of 20 acres of the southern end of lot 17 in the first concession of West Flamboro', and 40 acres of the northern part of lot 53 of the first concession of Ancaster. In 1800 it was surveyed as a town plot, and received the name of Coote's Paradise, which was afterwards changed to Dundas in honor of Sir Henry Dundas.

An act was passed in 1798 dividing the province into twenty-two counties, which were grouped into nine districts. The townships of Ancaster, Barton, Binbrook, Glanford and Saltfleet formed part of the new district of Niagara, while Beverly and Flamboro' remained in the old Home district. It was at this time that Flamboro' was divided into East and West. The

WILLIAM MARTIN, WARDEN 1896.

royal assent to this act was reserved, and it did not come in force until 1st January, 1800.

From 1800 to 1816 no changes were made in any of the municipalities around the "Head of the Lake." At the latter date the new district of Gore was formed from parts of the Niagara and Home districts. It was named in honor of Sir Francis Gore, one of the early governors of this province. From its earliest settlement to this date, North Wentworth had for electoral purposes, formed part of the west riding of York, and South Wentworth part of the first riding of Lincoln. This new district was divided into two new counties named respectively Wentworth and Halton. The former comprised the townships of Saltfleet (including Burlington Beach), Barton including Burlington Heights), Binbrook, Glanford, Ancaster, and so much of the county of Haldimand as lies between Dundas street and the village of Onondaga, commonly called Bearsfoot, while the latter was composed of the townships of Trafalgar, Nelson, East and West Flamboro', Dumfries, Waterloo, Woolwich and Nichol, together with the reserved lands in the rear of Blenheim and Blanford.

The next important change in the system of local self-government in this province was the establishment of district municipal councils. In January, 1842, elections were held pursuant to the act chap. 10, 4th and 5th Victoria, when the following persons were duly elected to represent the various municipalities, viz.:

NAME.	TOWNSHIP.
Agnew, Andrew	Nassagaweya.
Biggar, Herbert	Brantford.
Bowen, Arthur	Barton.
Buchanan, Alexander	Dumfries.
Capron, Hiram	Dumfries.
Clarke, Samuel	Trafalgar.
Coleman, James	West Flamboro'.
Condon, J	Saltfleet.
Dresser, Frederick	Ancaster.

NAME.	TOWNSHIP.
Good, Allen	Brantford.
Hannon, Joseph	Glanford.
Higgison, John	Puslinch.
Hopkins, Caleb	Nelson.
Kennedy, Chas	Esquesing.
Miller, John	Nelson.
Millard, I. K	East Flamboro.'
McKerlie, John	Binbrook.
McNaughton, Alex	Esquesing.
Nesbit, Stephen	Beverly.
Nichol, Alex	Puslinch.
Robinson, Walter	Beverly.
Servos, D. K	Barton.
Spohn, Philip	Ancaster.
Spencer, Joseph	West Flamboro'.
Waddell, Thos	Saltfleet.
White, John	Trafalgar.

John Wetenhall, Esq., was appointed the first warden by commission under the great seal of the Province and served five years. The first session opened on the 8th February, 1842. Samuel Clarke, Esq., was elected the second warden and served three years.

The Act passed in 1841 establishing District Councils was repealed in 1849, when the Harrison Municipal Act was passed. In 1850 the first elections were held under its provisions. Robert Spence, Esq., afterwards postmaster-general, was chosen first warden of the united counties of Wentworth and Halton, and served in that capacity for three years. The county of Brant was formed in 1851, and the municipality was called the United Counties of Wentworth, Halton and Brant, but at the expiration of one year Brant was erected into a separate county municipality. Wentworth and Halton remained united until the close of 1854, when Halton became a separate county for municipal purposes. The act separating Halton from Wentworth was passed in 1853, but did not go into effect

until certain conditions were fulfilled. When all matters of difference were amicably adjusted, and the conditions of separation complied with, the act of separation was carried into effect by proclamation of the Governor General. John Heslop, for many years clerk and treasurer of Ancaster, was elected first warden of the county of Wentworth, and served four years in succession. Since 1855 Wentworth has remained in its present form, and now comprises the following municipalities, viz.: Ancaster, Barton, Beverly, Binbrook, Flamboro' East, Flamboro' West, Glanford, Saltfleet, Waterdown and Dundas.

The following list gives the names of the different wardens elected in Wentworth, the municipalities they represented, and the position they filled in the township municipalities:

YEAR.	NAME.	OFFICE.	MUNICIPALITY.
1855	John Heslop	Reeve	Ancaster
1856	do	do	do
1857	do	do	do
1858	do	do	do
1859	Alexander Brown	Deputy Reeve	East Flamboro'
1860	do	do	do
1861	do	do	do
1862	do	do	do
1863	do	do	do
1864	do	do	do
1865	do	do	do
1866	do	do	do
1867	Alva G. Jones	Reeve	Saltfleet
1868	R. R. Waddell	do	Barton
1869	do	do	do
1870	Thomas Bain	do	West Flamboro'
1871	Alonzo Egleston	do	Ancaster
1872	James Somerville	do	Dundas
1873	Thomas Stock	do	East Flamboro'
1874	do	do	do
1875	Peter Wood	do	Beverly

G. S. COUNSELL, COUNTY CLERK.

YEAR.	NAME.	OFFICE.	MUNICIPALITY.
1876	F. M. Carpenter	Reeve	Saltfleet
1877	Thomas Stock	do	East Flamboro'
1878	John Weir, jr	do	West Flamboro'
1879	Thomas Stock	do	East Flamboro'
1880	do	do	do
1881	William Sexton	do	Ancaster
1882	do	do	do
1883	Thomas Lawry	do	Barton
1884	do	do	do
1885	T. H. A. Begue	do	Dundas
1886	J. W. Jardine	do	Saltfleet
1887	A. R. Wardell	do	Dundas
1888	John Ira Flatt	do	East Flamboro'
1889	John W. Gage	do	Barton
1890	Robert Ferguson	do	Beverly
1890	M. S. Wilson	Deputy Reeve	Dundas
1891	John Dickenson	Reeve	Glanford
1892	Arch. Cochrane	do	West Flamboro'
1893	Peter Reid	do	Saltfleet
1894	Wm. McClure	1st Deputy Reeve	Beverly
1895	J. O. McGregor	Reeve	Waterdown
1896	William Martin	do	Binbrook

When the Gore District Council was organized in 1842, Mr. Henry Beasley was appointed treasurer. He remained in office four years, when Mr. James Kirkpatrick was chosen to succeed him. Mr. Kirkpatrick's term of office extended from the beginning of 1846 to the close of 1876, when he retired. His successor was Mr. John T. Stock, who tendered his resignation to take effect on the 1st of August, 1895. The present treasurer, Mr. Archibald Cochrane, was then appointed as the successor of Mr. Stock.

Dr. E. Cartwright Thomas was chosen clerk of the Gore District Council at its organization in 1840, and remained in office one year, when he was appointed sheriff. He was succeeded by Mr. H. W. Jackson, who served in this capacity

four years, when he retired. His successor was Mr. James Durand, who remained in office until the close of 1849, when the District Councils were superseded by the County Councils. In 1850 the first County Council for the united counties of Wentworth and Halton was organized, and Mr. Charles O. Counsell was appointed clerk. He remained in office until his death in October, 1860, when he was succeeded by his son, Mr. G. S. Counsell, who now discharges the duties of this office.

In 1871 Mr. J. H. Smith was appointed Public School Inspector, and has held office since that time.

Modifications in our system of local self-government are frequently made, especially in working out the details of our assessment and municipal systems. In recent years the number of members sent to our county councils throughout the province, as well as the cost of maintaining them, has increased to such an extent that some changes in the constitution of these governing bodies were rendered necessary. These changes are embodied in an act passed during the second session of the eighth legislature of Ontario and cited as "The County Councils Act, 1896." Under its provisions each county is divided into not less than four nor more than nine divisions or districts. The fundamental basis for this division is population, but assessed value and extent of territory are also taken into consideration. Local municipalities are not to be divided except where it is plainly necessary to do so in order to arrive at a just and equitable division, but no polling sub-division is to be divided. These districts are technically called "County Council Divisions" and are designated by numbers, as "First County Council Division," "Second County Council Division," and so forth. In each division the county councillors, who must be residents of such division, are elected by ballot each alternate year. This gives the persons elected a two year's term of office. Voters have the option of casting both their votes for one candidate, or they may give a vote to each of two candidates. This is an attempt to solve the problem of minority representation as between local municipalities. No member of the council of a local municipality, nor any clerk, treasurer, assessor or collector

is eligible as a candidate. The necessary machinery is duly provided for the proper nomination of candidates, recording and counting the votes, declaring who is elected, and fixing the qualifications of voters and candidates.

Under authority of this act the Lieutenant Governor-in-Council appoints commissioners to divide the various counties in this province into suitable districts. His honor Judge Bell, of Kent, and his honor Judge Horne, of Essex, were appointed to form the necessary county council divisions in Wentworth. The following is their report on this matter:

"*To His Honor the Lieutenant Governor in Council:*

"We, the undersigned commissioners, appointed under 'The County Council's Act of 1896,' by the Lieutenant Governor in Council, to divide the County of Wentworth into County Council divisions, report:—That having duly heard and considered all the evidence adduced before us, and having had due regard to the provisions of the said act, we have divided the said County into six County Council divisions as follows, that is to say:

"1. The First County Council Division to consist of the township of Beverly.

"2. The Second County Council Division to consist of the township of Ancaster.

"3. The Third County Council Division to consist of the township of Flamborough East, the village of Waterdown, and that part of the township of Flamborough West lying north of a line between the north and south halves of lots one to twenty-one, inclusive, in the fourth concession, and also comprising the south halves of lots six and seven[1] in the fourth concession of said township.

"The Fourth County Council Division to consist of the town of Dundas and all that part of the township of Flamborough West not included in the Third County Council Division as hereinbefore set forth.

(1) These half lots form part of a polling division, and the law specially directs that "in no case shall polling sub-divisions be divided."

DR. J. O. M'GREGOR, WARDEN 1897.

"5. The Fifth County Council Division to consist of the township of Barton and Glanford.

"6. The Sixth County Council Division to consist of the township of Saltfleet and Binbrook.

"All of which is respectfully submitted.

"Dated at Hamilton, in the said County of Wentworth, this eleventh day of July, A. D. 1896.

"(Signed) A. BELL, C. R. HORNE, } Commissioners."

The first election under this act was held on Monday, the 4th of January, 1897, when the following county councilors were elected:

First County Council Division, Alex. Ironside, Thomas S. Henderson.

Second County Council Division, Edward Kenrick, B. A., J. B. Calder.

Third County Council Division, J. O. McGregor, M. D., T. F. Easterbrook.

Fourth County Council Division, Edward Collins, David Patterson.

Fifth County Council Division, James Marshall, John W. Gage.

Sixth County Council Division, Murray Pettit, N. S. Cornell.

The County Council held its first session under the new regime on Tuesday, the 29th of January, 1897, when Dr. J. O. McGregor, of Waterdown, was duly elected warden.

CHAPTER VIII.

The Evils of War — Its Effects on Canadians — Injustice of this War — The Situation in Canada — A Crisis Reached — Some Causes Affecting the War — "Berlin Decree" — First "Order-in-Council" — Second "Order-in-Council" — "Milan Decree" — "Embargo Act" — "Non-Intercourse Act" — Repeal of the "Order-in-Councill" — Conquest of Canada the Real Object of War — American Opinions For and Against War — Formal Declaration of War — Campaign of 1812 — Campaign of 1813 — First Retreat of General Vincent — Government House Destroyed — The Crisis of the War — Battle of Stony Creek — Mrs. Secord's Journey — Beaver Dam — Naval Engagement off Burlington Beach — Reverses in the West — Tecumseh — Rendezvous at Ancaster — Council of War at Burlington Heights — Results of the War.

By the splendor of its trappings, by the martial ardor which it inspires, by the heroic bravery of its devotees, and by the pomp and pageantry of its surroundings, war carries the mind of man away from its stern realities and shocking barbarities, where

> "Naked plains and ravag'd fields
> Succeed to smiling harvests and the fruits
> Of peaceful 'labor.'"

Could we, if only in imagination, visit the battle field after the struggle is over, and see the mangled forms of the dead and dying, witness the desolation and destruction that follow in its train, and hear the wail of the widow and orphan as they mourn over loved ones, how differently should we look upon it! With what deep feelings of solicitude would our hearts be stirred if even rumors of war should reach the quiet of our homes! But how much greater would the intensity of these feelings be if the pleasant valleys and hills of our native land should ever resound to the measured tread of invading armies!

Some such thoughts must naturally have arisen in the minds of these pioneer settlers when they learned that the authorities of the American Republic had openly proclaimed war against Great Britain. Among the peaceably disposed inhabitants of Canada, whose only crime appears to have been a warm attachment to the mother country and an honest devotion to her laws and institutions, these alarming reports must have spread feelings of terror and dismay. To see their homes and their loved ones exposed to all the hardships and privations of an unprovoked war, and to witness the ruin of their country at the hands of a kindred people speaking the same language, and holding in common the traditions of a glorious past, nerved them to deeds of valor and aroused a spirit of resistance that must ever command the respect and admiration of their posterity. Our forefathers had not forgotten the bitter experiences of the Revolutionary struggle, nor yet had the courage which animated them during these trying times died out in the breasts of their sons. True in their devotion to British rule, and inspired by a deep patriotic enthusiasm, they at once organized themselves into battalions of militia, took up arms, and were ready to lay down their lives in defence of home and country.

Whatever reasons there may have been to provoke the colonists to revolt in 1776, it is quite evident that the verdict of history does not in any way recognize the justice of the declaration of war in 1812. The difficulties that arose during the few preceding years might have been peaceably adjusted by the diplomatic agents of the two countries, had not a reckless Democratic majority bent on conquest, determined to invade the homes of their peaceful and inoffensive neighbors to the north. This they did, but not one acre of territory was annexed, nor yet did they gain one single permanent advantage. On the contrary, it strengthened the allegiance of the Canadian people and bound them more closely to the throne of Great Britain.

At this time the situation in Canada was indeed precarious. With a population of less than 300,000 all told, and these widely scattered in small settlements without any means of rapid com-

munication, with a long and exposed boundary, and with the mother country embroiled in European wars, is it at all surprising that the hearts of these sturdy pioneers were filled with misgivings as to the fate of these colonies? Did not the burden seem greater than they could bear? Had they not been strong in their allegiance to Great Britain, and true to the principles of their forefathers, these provinces would have been conquered, and Britain would have been stripped of her colonial possessions in America. However, Providence had decreed otherwise, and we are now left to work out our destiny as part of that Greater Britain "upon whose shores the sun never sets." May we then, as Canadians, be true to our country, loyal to that great Empire of which we form a part, and ever bear in mind that this is the

"Land of the beautiful and brave,
The freeman's home—the martyr's grave,
The nursery of giant men,
Whose deeds have link'd with every glen
And every hill and mountain stream
The romance of some warrior dream."

In the western province the situation was even more desperate than it was in the east. When the war broke out it was estimated that the population of Upper Canada did not exceed 80,000. These were grouped in small settlements along the frontier, and were exposed to attack both by land and water. The principal centres were along the northern banks of the St. Lawrence, at Kingston, around the Bay of Quinte, at York (now Toronto), around the head of Lake Ontario, and along the Niagara river, with a few settlements on Lake Erie and the River Detroit. When we consider the sparseness of the population, for it did not exceed that of the County of Wentworth and the City of Hamilton combined, and the long frontier they were called upon to defend, the outcome of the war is indeed gratifying. Nor was the want of population the only drawback. The means of communication between these widely separated settlements was particularly bad, for the country had been settled less than thirty years, and the roads

in most cases were merely paths cut through the forests. This rendered the transportation of troops and supplies a long and arduous task. The rapid concentration of an army at a given point is essential to the successful defence of any country. In addition to these disadvantages the mother country was engaged in war on the continent, and could not furnish the necessary troops to defend her colonies as she would have done had she been free from European entanglements.

There are crises in the lives of nations as in the lives of men. So in these colonies a crisis had come, and that was whether they should maintain their allegiance to Britain intact, or become a part and parcel of the American Republic. Thanks to the resolute determination of these grand old U. E. Loyalists and their descendants we are still under the care and protection of the British flag. James Russell Lowell says:

"Once to every man and nation comes the moment to decide,
In the strife with Truth and Falsehood, for the good or evil side;
Some great cause, God's new Messiah, offering each the bloom or blight,
Parts the goats upon the left hand, and the sheep upon the right,
And the choice goes by forever, 'twixt that darkness and that light.

* * * * * * *

Backward look across the ages and the beacon moments see,
That, like peaks of some sunk continent, jut through Oblivion's sea,
Not an ear in court or market for the low forboding cry
Of those crises, God's stern winnowers, from whose feet earth's chaff must fly,
Never shows the choice momentous, till the judgment hath passed by."

The crisis in the colonies was only a part of a greater crisis in the history of mankind that was reaching its culminating point on the continent of Europe. Intoxicated by his success in the past, and lured on by an insatiable ambition, Napoleon crossed the Nieman on his fatal march to Moscow, six days after President Madison had issued his declaration of war against Great Britain. Like Alexander of old, he followed the phantom of Universal Empire. It eluded his grasp. He died an exile on St. Helena.

The United States declared war against Great Britain on the 18th June, 1812, exactly three years before the decisive

battle of Waterloo. Some of the causes that led to the gradual estrangement of the good will of the young Republic from the mother country and eventually brought about the declaration of war are to be found in the series of events that occurred in Europe during the six preceding years. Embittered by the memories of the terrible blow inflicted on his navy at Trafalgar and the Nile, Napoleon, when the Prussian monarchy had been humbled at Jena, turned fiercely upon Great Britain, and attempted the destruction of her commerce by issuing the famous "Berlin Decree."[1] This decree was formally promulgated on the 21st of November, 1806, from Berlin, the Prussian capital. Although it did not extinguish British commerce, yet it inflicted serious damage upon it, and caused heavy losses to many of her merchants. The rigorous enforcement of this decree compelled the British ministry to adopt defensive measures. Accordingly, on the 7th of January, 1807, the first "Order-in-Council"[2] was issued. At first this was well received in the United States, but afterwards it was made a pretext for war. In June, 1807, an unfortunate incident occurred in the too rigid enforcement of the "right of search." The American frigate Chesapeake had on board some deserters from the British navy, whose return had been demanded by the British Consul at Norfolk, and by the captains of the vessels from which they had deserted. These demands were refused. Acting under instructions from Admiral Berkeley, Captain Humphries, of H. M. ship Leopard, followed the Chesapeake to sea, and, coming up with her, intimated that he desired to send a message to the commander. A letter was sent asking that the deserters, whose names were given, be restored to the British. Commodore Barron, the commander of the Chesapeake, refused to comply with this request, whereupon the Leopard fired a broadside. A short skirmish ensued, which ended in the American vessel striking her colors and restoring the deserters. This incident aroused a strong feeling of antipathy against Britain, which was greatly strengthened by the issue of an angry proclamation by the President on the 2nd of July following.

(1) See "Berlin Decree" in last Chapter.
(2) See "Order-in-Council" in last Chapter.

Events in Europe forced the British ministry to issue a second "Order-in-Council," which was done on the 11th of November, 1807. Napoleon, on the 17th of the following December, issued the "Milan Decree" as an answer. Intelligence from Europe plainly indicated to the American authorities that the policy of France did not exempt the United States from the operations of the "Berlin Decree." Acting upon this information Congress, on the 25th of December of that year, passed the "Embargo Act," which excluded all foreign vessels from sharing in the coasting trade.

Public opinion, which was constantly being fomented by demagogues and partizan politicians, steadily increased in its hostility towards Great Britain. To allay this feeling, and to offer reparation for the affair of the Chesapeake, the British ministry sent an envoy extraordinary to America. His mission failed owing to the refusal of the President to withdraw the proclamation of the 2nd of July. The "Embargo Act" seriously injured American commerce, and was soon superseded by a "Non-Intercourse Act," which failed to satisfy either its promoters or the public, and was therefore repealed. Another maritime encounter between the American 44-gun frigate, President, and the British 18-gun sloop, Little Belt, which was destroyed on this occasion, added to the complications already existing. The American captain was tried by court martial and acquitted. Great Britain accepted the official statement that no hostility was intended on the part of the American government. The Americans had made an offer that if France would withdraw her decrees, or England the orders-in-council, she would prohibit her commerce from the other. Napoleon promised to revoke the "Berlin" and "Milan Decrees" if the Americans would carry out the policy of non-intercourse with Britain. This they did, but Napoleon failed to fulfil his promises.

The downfall of the Percival ministry in Great Britain brought Lord Liverpool to the premiership. With him was associated Lord Castlereagh as Secretary of Foreign Affairs. Twelve days after this ministry was formed the obnoxious

"Orders-in-Council" were revoked. But it was too late. Congress had already declared war against Great Britain, and was massing her armies along the frontier of Canada.

From the tone of the President's message, and the tenor of the speeches delivered in Congress by some of the leading members of the Democratic party, it was clearly foreshadowed that Canada would be the objective point. They were quite confident of an easy conquest, as may be seen from the following extracts from speeches made in Congress prior to the declaration of war. Dr. Eustis, United States Secretary of War, said: "We can take Canada without soldiers; we have only to send officers into the provinces, and the people, disaffected towards their own government, will rally round our standard." The Hon. Henry Clay, who, in 1814, signed the treaty of peace as one of the commissioners, expressed himself still more strongly: "It is absurd to suppose we shall not succeed in our enterprise against the enemy's provinces. We have the Canadas as much under our command as Great Britain has the ocean, and the way to conquer her on the ocean is to drive her from the land. We must take the continent from them. I wish never to see a peace till we do. God has given us the power and the means; we are to blame if we do not use them. If we get the continent she must allow us the freedom of the seas." [1]

The proclamation issued by Brigadier-General Smyth, of the army on the Niagara, and addressed "to the soldiers of the centre," leaves still less doubt as to the ultimate purpose of the American authorities. We give a few extracts from this document which is dated at "Camp, near Buffalo, 17th November, 1812":

"*Companions in arms!* The time is at hand when you will cross the streams of Niagara *to conquer Canada*, and to secure the peace of the American frontier.

"You will enter a country that is to be *one of the United States*. You will arrive among a people who are to become *your fellow citizens*. It is not *against them* that we come to

(1) Quoted from the Canadian Magazine.

make war. It is against that government which *holds them as vassals.*

"You will make this war as little as possible distressful to the Canadian people. If they are peaceable, they are to be secure in their persons, and in their property as far as our imperious necessities will allow."

He concludes his proclamation with the following appeal:

"*Soldiers of every corps!* It is in your power to retrieve the honor of your country, and to cover yourselves with glory. Every man who performs a gallant action shall have his name made known to the nation. Rewards and honors await the brave. Infamy and contempt are reserved for cowards.

"*Companions in arms!* You came to vanquish a valiant foe; I know the choice you will make. Come on, my heroes! and when you attack the enemy's batteries, let your rallying word be THE CANNON LOST AT DETROIT OR DEATH."[1]

It is to be borne in mind, however, that the American people were by no means unanimous in their desire for war. While the matter was under discussion it was vigorously opposed by many influential members of Congress, and was finally carried by a comparatively small majority. In the New England States popular feeling was very strong against it, and the intensity of this feeling on the part of the inhabitants of Boston and vicinity was shown by displaying their flags at half-mast as an emblem of mourning, and by mass meetings at which resolutions were passed denouncing it as subversive of the principles of American liberty, and antagonistic to their national interests. Its principal advocates were the representatives from southern and western States, while those from the north and east were strongly opposed to it.

The Americans were ambitious of securing possession of and controlling the destinies of the whole of North America. Actuated by this motive, and taking advantage of the time when Britain was engaged in a fierce struggle with the first Napoleon, and when she was taxed to the utmost to maintain

(1) Quoted from Anglo-American Magazine.

her supremacy, nay, even when her very existence as one of the great powers of Europe was threatened, the American Congress openly declared war. Their avowed object was to redress certain alleged grievances, notably some "Orders-in-Council" prohibiting all foreign vessels from trading with the French, and the "right of search" for deserters from the navy, but the real purpose as shewn by subsequent actions was the acquisition of the provinces of British North America. These "Orders-in-Council" as well as the "right of search" which formed the chief grounds of complaint, were withdrawn by Britain, but the Americans still persisted in going on with the war.

The plan of campaign adopted by the Americans was to invade Canada by way of Lake Champlain in the east, by the Niagara river in the centre, and by the River Detroit in the west. Sir Isaac Brock, who was administrator during the absence of Sir Francis Gore, determined to make the first attack. Consequently he sent Captain Roberts to Fort Michillimackinac, which was surprised and taken. This confirmed the allegiance of the northwest Indians, and secured a valuable strategic point to the British. General Hull crossed the Detroit river at Sandwich, summoned the Canadians to lay down their arms, and submit themselves to the Americans. This they bravely refused to do, and defied both him and his army. In the meantime General Brock issued a proclamation from his headquarters at Fort George, to allay the fears and strengthen the hands of the people in the west. He also sent Colonel Proctor with a small force to aid the garrison at Amhurstburg. General Hull was driven back to Detroit, and forced to surrender, which he did with the best grace possible. Along the Niagara river the Americans were defeated at Queenston Heights, while at Rouse's Point, in the east, they retired after a slight skirmish. Doubtless the temper of the Canadian people was a disappointment to them, for they anticipated an easy victory. In this they were very much deceived, for instead of being welcomed with open arms they met with the most determined resistance. Thus ended the campaign of 1812, with the

British successful at all points, but with the loss of their brave commander, Sir Isaac Brock,—

> "The mind that thought for Britain's weal,
> The hand that grasped the victor's steel."

The Americans conducted the campaign of 1813 on lines somewhat similar to that of 1812, but instead of attempting the conquest of the whole of British North America, they concentrated their efforts on the province of Upper Canada. The American forces had been greatly strengthened during the winter, both on Lake Ontario and along the Niagara frontier. Commodore Chauncey made an attack on York, the capital of Upper Canada, and on the 27th of April succeeded in capturing it. Here they remained until the 2nd of May, destroying the public buildings and plundering the churches and library. They then made a descent upon Fort George, at the mouth of the Niagara river, where General Vincent was stationed with an army numbering something less than 1,400 men. Being unable to hold this position against the superior forces concentrated upon it, he retreated towards Burlington Heights.

On the 11th of May, 1813, while the American fleet were on their way to Niagara, they destroyed "Government House" on Burlington Beach. The following account of this place is taken from a topographical description of Upper Canada issued under the authority of Lieutenant Governor Sir Francis Gore:

"At the south end of the Beach is the King's Head, a good inn, erected for the accommodation of travellers by order of his Excellency, Major General Simcoe, the Lieutenant Governor. It is beautifully situated at a small portage leading from the head of a natural canal (Lottridge's Inlet), and connecting Burlington Bay with Lake Ontario. Burlington Bay is perhaps as beautiful and romantic a situation as any in interior America, particularly if we include with it a marshy lake which falls into it, and a noble promontory (Burlington Heights) that divides them. This is called Coot's Paradise, and abounds with game." The King's Head Inn was more familiarly known as "Government House," and was used as a distributing centre

for presents to the Indians, who received gifts annually as compensation for lands taken for settlement. Among those who had charge of this inn were Augustus Jones, William Bates and Robert Lottridge.

Affairs in Upper Canada were rapidly approaching a crisis that was to decide the fate of the Canadas. There were only some 2,100 British troops available for the defence of the Upper Province. These were assisted by a noble band of militia who were determined to contest every foot of ground. The American army on the Niagara frontier numbered fully 6,000, and this, with the superiority of the American fleet on Lake Ontario, rendered the conquest of this province extremely probable. After the capture of Niagara, and the retreat of General Vincent to Burlington Heights, the military authorities were so disheartened that they determined to disband the militia, and abandon the western portion of this province to its fate. Accordingly, on the 28th of May the militia were disbanded, and told that they might go home if they chose to do so. Some few returned to their homes to protect their families, and look after their private interests, but the great majority followed the army to Burlington Heights, determined to do all in their power to drive out the invaders. The Hon. W. H. Merritt, in his journal of the war, says: "I strongly suspected from the indifferent manner in which the militia were treated, that the Upper Province was to be abandoned, which opinion was entertained by most people. * * * * I felt in a sad dilemma. The thought of abandoning the country and leaving everything that was near and dear to me was most distressing."

During the night of the 5th and the morning of the 6th of June the battle of Stony Creek was fought, with the advantage decidedly in favor of the British. For a more detailed account of this memorable battle the reader is referred to the next chapter. A few days after the successful issue of this midnight sortie Lieutenant Fitzgibbon, with a detachment of the 49th, a small body of Indians and a few militia, captured Colonel Boerstler's force at Beaver Dam, securing upwards of 500 pris-

oners. It was just prior to this battle that Mrs. Secord made her heroic journey on foot through the forests to warn the British of their danger.

Mrs. Secord, widow of the late James Secord, who was fatally wounded at Queenston, obtained information of the plans of the Americans to surprise Lieutenant Fitzgibbon, then stationed near Beaver Dam. She was slight in person, delicate in health, and worn with care and anxiety on account of the death of her husband, and the loss of her home. The dangers with which she was surrounded, and difficulties she overcame while making this memorable journey, are here given in her own words: "I shall commence at the battle of Queenston, where I was at the time the cannon balls were flying around me in every direction. I left the place during the engagement. After the battle I returned to Queenston, and then found that my husband had been wounded, my house plundered and my property destroyed. It was while the Americans had possession of the frontier that I learned the plans of the American commander, and determined to put the British troops under Fitzgibbon in possession of them, and, if possible, to save the British troops from capture, or perhaps total destruction. In doing so I found I should have great difficulty in getting through the American guards, which were ten miles out in the country. Determined to persevere, however, I left early in the morning, walked nineteen miles in the month of June over a rough and difficult part of the country, when I came to a field belonging to a Mr. Decamp, in the neighborhood of the Beaver Dam. By this time daylight had left me. Here I found all the Indians encamped; by moonlight the scene was terrifying, and to those accustomed to such scenes, might be considered grand. Upon advancing to the Indians they all rose, and with some yells, said, "woman," which made me tremble. I cannot express the awful feeling it gave me; but I did not lose my presence of mind. I was determined to persevere. I went up to one of the chiefs, made him understand that I had great news for Capt. Fitzgibbon, and that he must let me pass to his camp, or that he and all his party

would be all taken. The chief at first objected to let me pass, but finally consented, after some hesitation, to go with me to Fitzgibbon's station, which was at the Beaver Dam, where I had an interview with him. I told him what I had come for, and what I had heard,—that the Americans intended to make an attack upon the troops under his command, and would, from their superior numbers, capture them all. I returned home next day exhausted and fatigued."[1] For some time after this event military affairs remained very quiet along the Niagara frontier.

On the 28th of September, the squadron on Lake Ontario, under command of Commodore Chauncey, met the British off Toronto harbor. The Americans seeing they had the advantage both in armament and in tonnage, at once offered battle. The British Admiral seeing clearly the disadvantages under which he labored, declined to accept the challenge, knowing that it probably meant the destruction of his fleet. In the skirmish which ensued, the British ship Wolf had her maintop mast and mainyard severely damaged, and the Royal George, under Captain Mulcaster, had her foretop mast shot away. The American vessel Tompkins had her foremast, and the Pike her bowsprit and mainmast badly injured. One of the heavy guns on the Pike burst, killing some 22 men, and doing serious damage to the vessel. The British directed their course towards Burlington Bay, the Americans gave chase, but the pursuit was soon relinquished. An American writer says, "This much is clear, that the British were beaten and forced to flee, * * * but in good weather the American force was so superior that being beaten would have been no disgrace to Yeo." This naval battle was witnessed by many of the old residents of Saltfleet, who came to the brow of the mountain and watched it with eager interest.

In the west General Proctor had met with such a series of reverses that he deemed it prudent to retire to Burlington Heights, where he hoped to join the army of the Centre, under

(1) Quoted from Anglo-American Magazine.

General Vincent. The American army opposed to him, and which numbered fully 6,000 men, of whom from 1,200 to 1,500 were cavalry and mounted riflemen, were under the command of General William Henry Harrison. Encumbered as the British were with a large amount of baggage, their movements were necessarily slow. This enabled the Americans to overtake them and force a battle, which they did at Moraviantown, a village on the river Thames. The entire force opposed to the Americans amounted to 476 men, of whom not more than 20 were dragoons, and a body of Indians numbering about 500, under the celebrated Indian Chief, Tecumseh. This battle was fought on the 5th of October, and the Americans were victorious.

It was at this battle that the celebrated Indian warrior Tecumseh met with his death in the forty-fourth year of his age. A writer in the Anglo-American Magazine thus describes this noble Indian: "He was of the Shawnee tribe, five feet ten inches high, and with more than the usual stoutness, possessed all the agility and perseverance of the Indian character. His carriage was dignified, his eyes penetrating, and his countenance, even in death, betrayed the indications of a lofty spirit rather than of the sterner cast. Had he not possessed a certain austerity of manners, he could never have controlled the wayward passions of those who followed him to the battle. He was of a silent habit, but when his eloquence became roused into action by the reiterated encroachments of the Americans, his strong intellect could supply him with a flow of oratory that enabled him as he governed in the field so to preside in the Council." He was wounded in the thigh during the early part of the battle, and was carried to the rear, where he cheered his warriors and directed them in battle. Suddenly these cries ceased, and he was found still in death, a rifle shot had pierced his breast. His body was borne far into the forest he loved so well, where he was buried. His friends erased all traces of his grave, and took a solemn oath never to reveal the place of his sepulture, well knowing that the Americans, in their in-

tense hatred towards him, would desecrate his grave and dishonor his remains.

The defeat of the British at Moraviantown forced them to continue their retreat. After a long and toilsome journey, during which they endured severe privations, and suffered greatly from the hardships incident to a march through an almost unbroken forest, they reached the village of Ancaster on the 17th of the same month. When the inhabitants of this quiet country place heard of the reverses in the west, and saw the straggling groups of soldiers as they entered the village, their minds were filled with grave apprehensions as to their own safety. It seemed to them inevitable that they should witness the destruction of their homes and property. The panic spread rapidly, but as no victorious army followed, quiet was soon restored. The remnant of Proctor's army reached Burlington Heights, where they met the Centre army on their retreat from Niagara, for Sir George Prevost had issued orders to General Vincent to evacuate all the British posts, and to retire to Kingston with the least possible delay. At Burlington Heights they held a council of war, when it was decided that the western part of the province should be defended at all hazards.

As the purpose of this sketch is simply to narrate the events directly affecting the interests of this portion of the province, it will not be necessary to continue in detail the records of this war. Suffice it to say that the British were victorious at Chrysler's Farm, Chateauguay, La Colle Mill, Chippęwa and Lundy's Lane. In the early part of 1814, the general European war ceased for a while, and this left Britain free to look after her interests in America. The seat of war was transferred almost entirely to the United States, her ports blockaded, and her commerce seriously crippled. On the 14th of December, 1814, the Treaty of Ghent was concluded and peace restored.

When the war began the Americans were confident of victory, and felt assured that the Canadas would soon become a part of the Republic. The results were not gratifying either to their pride or their ambition, nor did they add to their laurels

as a nation. On the contrary they suffered defeat, when the victory was within reach; they sent glowing reports innocent of truth, and unbacked by action, and they issued pompous proclamations which accomplished nothing. In short, the conduct of the war from the first was marked by incompetency on the part of the managers, a lack of enthusiasm in the armies, and a mutual want of confidence in the commanding generals. They saw their merchantmen captured, their foreign trade destroyed, their revenues decreased, and the credit of the nation impaired to such an extent that they could not negotiate a loan with which to prosecute the war. When happily this unfortunate struggle was brought to a close, the grievance of which the Americans complained—the right of search and the freedom of neutral nations in times of war—formed no part of the treaty of peace. The results briefly summed up were, heavy losses to the nation without any corresponding benefit.

The Canadians suffered much from this war. Their homes were wrecked, their property destroyed, their farms left untilled, and in some instances their towns and villages were sacked and burned. The loss of life was great when compared with the smallness of the population, their expenses were heavy considering the sources of income and the wealth of the people, while trade and commerce were almost totally demoralized. On the other hand this war developed a strong Canadian sentiment, strengthened them in their allegiance to the mother land, inspired them with a spirit of self-reliance, and united the British and French in their patriotic devotion to a common country. The recurrence of another such war is not at all probable, but should it ever come, which God forbid, the same spirit of devotion, the same heroism of action, and the same indomitable courage would characterize the descendants of those brave pioneers who suffered and died for the cause of home and country.

CHAPTER IX.

The Crisis of the War — Events Preceding the Battle — Landing of the Americans — W. H. Merritt's Dragoons — Reconnoissance by Col. Harvey — Gen. Dearborn's Movements — General Winder's Advance — Chandler's Brigade — Description of Stony Creek — Burlington Heights — Hamilton — Americans at Stony Creek — Position of American Army — Planning the Attack — Advance of the British — Isaac Corman Taken Prisoner — William Green's Night Journey — Countersign Given — Corman's Second Arrest — "Billy Green, the Scout" — F. G. Snider's Account — Col. Harvey's Attack — Perilous Position of the 49th — Capt. Merritt's Escape — Retreat of Americans — Statement of Losses — Concluding Remarks.

A PICTURE with true perspective gives to the eye an accurate representation of the scene which it depicts, so the placing of the battle of Stony Creek, and the council of war at Burlington Heights in their true historical perspective, enables us to form a more correct estimate of their importance. The time at which these events occurred was undoubtedly the crucial period of our history, and the loyalty and devotion of the people were tried as if by fire. The crisis of the war was safely passed, although unknown to the actors in the struggle. These two places are indeed historic ground, and as Canadians we should show our appreciation of their true worth by erecting some monument to commemorate these events.

"Yet this 'battle' sways the future, and behind the dim unknown
Standeth God within the shadow keeping watch above his own.
We see dimly in the present what is small and what is great,
Slow of faith, how weak an arm may turn the iron helm of fate."

By the kind permission of J. P. Merritt, Esq., of Oakhill, St. Catharines, the following extract from the diary of the late Hon. W. H. Merritt, M. P., describing the events preceding the battle of Stony Creek, is herewith inserted:

"On the evening of the 29th of April I was deputed by Brigadier General Vincent to bring down all the boats from Burlington, which was accomplished in sixteen hours. The enemy, with their fleet, returned to Fort Niagara. From this time till the 27th of May every man was turned out at two o'clock in the morning, and remained under arms. Some men were twelve nights in succession on guard. Our small force was formed into three divisions; Col. Myers, with 'Kings,' and two companies of militia, defended the lake coast to the Four Mile Creek; Col. Harvey, with three companies of Newfoundlands and three companies of Glengarrys, one company of the 41st, one company of the 44th, and two of militia, up the river to Queenston; General Vincent, with the 49th regiment and militia, in rear of Fort George, to act as occasion might require. Col. Harvey and myself rode up and down the river during the night and slept at day. On the 25th the enemy commenced operations by cannonading Fort George, which they burned. For want of ammunition we were unable to return the fire. On the 27th, at four in the morning, they were discovered under cover of a thick fog. They commenced to land at 9 a. m. Our right and left divisions were obliged to fall back on the reserve, which, numbering but 800 men, were forced to retire.

"After finding the boats commanded by Commodore Barclay who was at Twenty Mile Creek with the light company of the Kings, and ordering the troops down, I returned with them as far as 'Shipman's,' where I was met by a message and ordered to go to De Cew's, to which place the army had retreated. Remaining all night, I took the party through the woods, arriving there next morning at 9 o'clock on the 28th of May.

"This day the militia were disbanded and the regulars marched to Grimsby on the way to Burlington Heights. Early on the 29th I returned to the Twelve, at Shipman's, where the enemy had its advance guards. I remained at my father's until midnight, when I returned to Grimsby to report. Here I was ordered to remain with the troops and a few militia until

driven off by the enemy. Their appearance next day with a flag of truce, shortly followed by a party whose force caused me to retreat to Stony Creek on the 1st of June. During the next week we had several skirmishes in which I lost some of my men."

Mr. Merritt had previously organized a company of dragoons, and with these he was detailed to protect the rear of the retreating army. Being well acquainted with this section of country, he was able to do this work effectively, although it taxed his men to the utmost as they had little rest and scarcely any sleep for six or eight days. His acquaintance with the people enabled him to keep well posted in all the movements of the invaders. He used this knowledge to the great advantage of the British, but the enemy with their large invading force drove the pickets of the rear guard across the big creek near the Red Hill, and as far west as Aikman's. This was the position of the British when the Americans encamped near Stony Creek late in the afternoon of the 5th of June. Mr. Merritt, continuing his narrative, says:

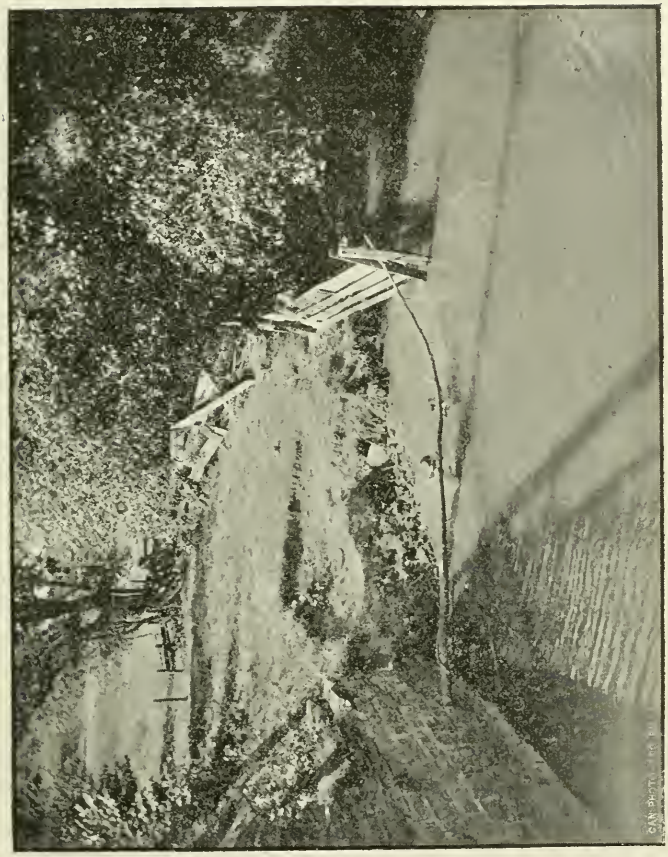
"A reconnoissance by Colonel Harvey and Cornet McKenney revealed the fact that the enemy were encamped for the night at Stony Creek, and that they had a party of 1,500 men on the lake shore. On the return of the party sometime near midnight when Mr. Merritt and a number of officers were lying on the grass fast asleep, a suggestion was made either by Cornet McKenney or Mr. George, an ensign in the militia, that it would be a good idea to attack the enemy in their camp, and probably surprise them before daylight shewed the real state of their numbers. Col. Harvey approved of the plan and proposed it to General Vincent, who after a little deliberation proceeded to carry it into effect, much to the joy of all who left their homes a few days ago in grief and sadness of heart.

"In the silence of a warm summer's night the order to advance was quietly given, and never were preparations for a deadly grapple with an invading foe more heartily received. It has been truly and eloquently said that the battle of Stony

Creek was neither a Waterloo nor an Inkerman, but that the issues at stake for the men of the Niagara peninsula were, everything equal, as important in their results as the success of the most dearly won field that ever the conquerors rested upon."

So many descriptions of this midnight sortie have appeared that it is a difficult matter to decide which is the most accurate. The writer has consulted official documents, collected as far as possible the traditions connected with this battle, and gathered information from all sources available with the view of giving a full and trustworthy account of it. In doing so he has quoted freely from an article prepared by E. B. Biggar, Esq., and published in the Hamilton Spectator in June, 1873. These extracts, which contain a graphic description of the battle-field and its environments, are supplemented by foot notes, and by a few paragraphs containing some additional information which was deemed essential to complete the narrative:

"When Vincent retreated towards Queenston he was followed by the American, Col. Scott, who succeeded in making prisoners of fifty British regulars. As soon as they had taken possession of the now dismantled and untenable fort and town (consisting of a few ruined houses), Gen. Dearborn was informed that Col. Proctor was on his way from the Detroit frontier to effect a junction with Gen. Vincent at Burlington Heights. Supposing this information to be correct Dearborn proposed to despatch part of his army to cut off Vincent's retreat and thus prevent their joining. This was agreed upon, and Gen. Winder, at his own request, was appointed to the duty. Accordingly he set out, but took the wrong road and was obliged to return. This caused a ruinous delay of two days, by which time Vincent had gained the Heights, and of course the idea of heading the retreat was then given up. Dearborn's intentention was to transport his troops to Burlington Bay by the fleet, 'but,' says Auchinleck, 'the cabinet at Washington had given this arm of the expedition a different direction.' So two more days were spent in unresulting deliberations as to how to proceed. I will be pardoned for digressing somewhat from the subject to remark that it was fortunate for the British that



THE RED HILL.

they were opposed by the commander that they were. Gen. Dearborn was a man much advanced in years and was suffering from ill health at the time. In his younger days he had distinguished himself in the Revolution as a man of activity and daring; but was now in his dotage almost, and had he even possessed physical health and full powers of mind, it is doubtful if his abilities as a leader would have been equal to the task before him. His manœuvres at the taking of York were ill-planned in the extreme, and his action in this and succeeding enterprises, clumsier and more ill-planned. The old general was recalled from his command just a month after the battle of Stony Creek, and Gen. Wilkinson, another old and equally incompetent leader, appointed as his successor.

"Again General Winder started with a brigade in pursuit of the British. This brigade, which included a corps of dragoons; Col. Burns' detachment of cavalry (stated by G. Auchinleck to number 250); and Archer's and Towson's artillery, amounting to only 800 men, according to J. B. Lossing, the writer of 'Sketches of the War, 1812.' Another American work, however, states them at 1,450. Winder pushed rapidly on to the Twenty Mile Creek, at which place he was told that Vincent was posted strongly at Burlington Heights, and had received reinforcements from Kingston. Believing this (an invention, no doubt, of some unscrupulously patriotic denizen) to be true, he halted in his pursuit, and sent a request to Dearborn for more troops. In compliance with this another brigade was sent, under the command of General Chandler, who being the senior officer, took the chief command on his arrival. Lossing says that Chandler's brigade counted 500 men, making the total American force 1,300. Auchinleck, the Canadian historian of the war, with a fairer appearance of accuracy, puts them down at 3,450. W. H. Merritt, speaking of them as encamped at Stony Creek, says there were '2,000 in the lane to the left, in advance of their artillery' (and cavalry, which numbered 250). Placing the artillery at the moderate number of 350, there would then be 3,100. Besides these, a body of troops, whose number is unknown, came up the lake in seven-

teen batteaux. Reducing the conflicting statements of a dozen different authorities to a fair average, the two brigades could not have been less than 2,800 men. Chandler and Winder now moved forward to the Forty Mile Creek, where they drove off the mounted militiamen under Capt. Merritt. Having here ascertained more accurately the position and strength of the British they proceeded on their march, and towards evening on the 5th of June they arrived tired, hungry and thirsty, at a place which was soon to be the scene of disaster and defeat to themselves, but a most brilliant and glorious success for the British—Stony Creek.

"Before giving a view of the subsequent incidents it may be well to give some idea of what constituted Stony Creek and Burlington Heights, so that the reader may better understand the relative position and surroundings of the two armies. Neither of these two places had any claims at that time to the title of village even. Stony Creek was a stream which took its rise in a swampy tract of woodland some miles beyond or south of that ridge of land known as the 'mountain,' the same ridge over which the great Niagara thunders, and winding northwest poured over this; then running northward through the present village emptied into a small lagoon which stretches in from the shore of Lake Ontario. The creek is not perennial but in the spring and fall a most beautiful falls is formed at the escarpment where the water pours over from its summit in one unbroken descent of 80 to 100 feet. The great, symmetrical regular oval wall of grey rocks from whose summit the water pours into a rocky basin beneath; the majestic evergreen crown of pines and hemlocks encircling and overlooking its brow with conscious imperiousness; the undergrowth that overhangs and fringes like a valance the rugged edge of rocks; and further on the shrubbery which carpets the steep banks of the canon that gazes on the rich valley beneath; and the grand and picturesque boulders piled confusedly together (and which bear still on their faces the evidence of old Ontario) make up a picture which the traveler might look upon hundreds of times without losing any of its variety or enchanting picturesqueness.

After leaving the foot of the falls its waters dash gaily down over rocky ledges to the level below and then course over a complete bed of small, loose stones to its outlet. From this it derives its name of "Stoney Creek." Our ancestors spelt it "Stoney," and that error is now a confirmed custom with the inhabitants, though it has been discarded in this sketch. A narrow, crooked, rough road ran west from Queenston to the Heights,[1] and round the lake to York and Kingston. On this road, hard by Stony Creek, lived Edward Brady, who kept a small log tavern. About a hundred yards east of the creek and nearly opposite him, lived Stephen Jones (father of the present Judge of the County of Brant), who also kept a log tavern. Another log shanty was built close to this, but the occupant's name is in oblivion. Adam Green, (after whom Greentown is called) lived on the hill in a log house west of the creek, on the spot now occupied by H. Spera's house. Just below this on the bank was an old water-power saw-mill. Nearly a half mile west of the creek, and overlooking the battle ground from a hill on the south was James Gage's house; his brother William lived some distance across the road on another hill. The house of the latter is the only one that still stands entire, as it stood then. Nearly between these two, close by the road was a little log cabin in which a man named Lappin lived. An unfinished frame house (said to be the only frame house in the parts except one) stood by the creek. There was only one more building besides these, but it was the finest and best of all. It was the old church.

> "It stood upon a hill; a gentle hill,
> Green, and of wild declivity,"

and in the centre of what is now the grave yard, a yard then dotted by scarce a tombstone. It was built by the Wesleyan Methodists, and was, with the single exception of the Grand River stone chapel, the oldest church in Western Ontario, or (it is said) in the whole Province. Long before the year 1800 the settlers used to come a distance of twenty or thirty miles to

(1) This road was built on the old Indian trail from Niagara to Mohawk village.

listen to itinerant preachers in this church. It was built with the labor of the settlers and without money; its clapboarded sides never saw paint; its inside walls never knew plaster or whitewash; its humble altar glittered with not an ornament, no great chandelier shed its light on a fashionably dressed audience at night, nor organ pealed its thundering accompaniment to a trained choir. Its only steeple was the chimney top that towered over its old fire-place—for there were no foundries or stoves then. Still its pious congregation looked proudly upon it as a grand edifice. (Years after the war it was repaired and refitted, however, and was still the finest chapel in this part of the country. It was torn down in 1871.) Two miles west of Stony Creek, William Davis kept a tavern, near the bank of the Big Creek close by the road. It was here that Colonels Harvey and Murray boarded for a time during the war. The story is told how an awkward and verdant youth named McNabb (afterwards Sir Allan) was introduced to Murray in this house, and became so confused in being presented to one whom he thought so great a man that he kicked over his chair in rising; and how he afterwards said he believed he would have rushed out of the house had he not been brought to his senses by a grim smile of assurance from Murray. Farther up the road was another house—still standing on the present site of Bartonville—then the only representative house of that village. Farther yet was Mr. Aikman's place, and shortly beyond a stone habitation, the ruins of which have been lately pulled down.

"As near as I have been able to ascertain, the ground on which the city of Hamilton now stands was then owned as follows: Geo. Hamilton, after whom the city was named, owned 200 acres south of the road—which is now King street, and east of James street. Bounding this on the north, and extending from James to Wellington streets, was Hughson's farm, whose name is still preserved in Hughson street. These two farms were bounded on the west by the property of William Wedge; and on the east by the farms of Ephraim and Col. Robert Land. Though these were called 'farms,' nothing

grew on them but a low undergrowth, indicative of marshy ground, called 'scrubby oak.' A man named Barns kept tavern in a small frame house on the present corner of King and James streets, and was said to own 100 acres of land somewhere in that part. This old signless frame tavern may be said to have been the germ and beginning of the city of Hamilton. These buildings enumerated, planted in the midst of an unknown forest, like so many islands in an ocean, were all that then was of Stony Creek and Hamilton—a name then unknown as a locality. That part of Hamilton now known as 'Dundurn Castle' was termed the Heights as well as the high land on the other side of the canal. On the grounds around the site of the castle, and in other places entrenchments were cut and trees felled for some distance around, with their branches pointing outward, as a sort of *cheval de-frise*, traces of which may yet be seen in the present cemetery. And behind these entrenchments was Vincent's camp.

"It has been said that the Americans reached Stony Creek late in the afternoon of the 5th of June, 1813. One of the British dragoons who had been stationed a distance below the Creek as a look-out came riding through the hamlet at full gallop, firing his pistol and shouting that the enemy were coming. As he was a notorious liar the alarm was received doubtfully. Another dragoon, John Brady, rode eastward, upon this, to reconnoitre, and ere he had advanced half-a-mile suddenly came upon them. A short distance before him a deer path ran down to the road from the mountain, and this he resolved to gain in the face of the enemy. Putting spurs to his horse, he rode up, screened by the fire of two log heaps that were burning by the road, and firing off his piece at them, darted up the deer path to the mountain. As he wheeled several muskets answered his own shot, but the bullets whistled harmlessly by or struck the intervening trees. Brady climbed the mountain and in less than two hours was at Vincent's camp at Burlington heights. The advance cavalry of the Americans soon pranced up before Brady's tavern, when, among other things, they appropriated the family's bread that

had been freshly baked the same afternoon. The clattering of cavalry hoofs, the clanking of swords, the heavy rattle of the artillery, and the long and strange array of invading soldiers as they filed along the narrow road, struck the few inhabitants of the hamlet with wonder and astonishment. It was soon whispered about among them that a battle was to be fought the next day, and as may be expected the wives and maidens of the vicinity were in great consternation. Arrived at the old church the advance guard encountered Capt. Williams, whom they drove to the west side of the Big Creek. Williams and his men mounted the west bank of the Big Creek and, firing from thence, killed one man and mortally wounded another, who was carried into Davis' tavern. The sun was getting low in the west as the advance and main body found themselves on a piece of high and uneven land surrounded by a dense forest where it was impossible to camp on account of the inpenetrable underwood—unless it would be in the contracted limits of the road. Under these circumstances the men were ordered to fall back on Stony Creek. Soon after they were gone an American surgeon was sent to attend the wounded man at Davis'. He seemed in great excitement; swore at the men under his charge for not hurrying to obey his orders, and was sure they would be scalped if they did not get away at once. So the wounded man was tumbled into one of the beds and they rattled off in their wagon, bed and all. It seems he had heard the shouts of Williams' men and imagined them to be Indians. (Without discussing the question of cruelty and savagery practiced by the Indians on both sides during this war it will be proper to mention that the Americans stood in singular dread of the British Indians, and were in constant terror of the scalping knife, to which feeling was owing partly their defeat in this conflict, though, be it remembered, not a solitary Indian was in the battle.) It is related that some of the men on their way back to Stony Creek stopped at a well to drink. One of them said to a comrade, 'I think I will take this piece of land (pointing to a small clearing) when Canada is conquered.' This man was found the next day among the

slain. The poor fellow is still waiting for his farm beneath an appletree that sheds its bloom on each returning 6th of June over the ground where the soldiers were buried.

"A small tributary stream of Stony Creek ran down past Gage's house, distant about half a mile at that point from the main stream, and was enclosed by a low, level, woodless strip of ground called the 'flat,' which was itself walled in on either side by an abrupt bank about ten feet high. The road at this place was not then graded, but pitched immediately down these banks; and it was on the eastern one that Chandler ordered his cannon to be planted, so that they might sweep the road to the west. On each side of the road, near the guns, slept the artillerymen. Immediately in rear of this (Towson's) artillery, Col. Burns and his cavalry camped. In a cleared field south of the road towards Gage's house, a body of nearly 2,000 Americans pitched their tents, stretching along and above the bank; 500 lay in a lane in the flat west of the stream and to the right front of the artillery. Archer's artillery and another body of men occupied a position towards the lake. And finally, in advance of the rest a party of about fifty took possession of the old church. All the settlers in the vicinity were taken and held as prisoners lest they should carry any information to Vincent. Three of them (whose names I could mention) were confined in Lappin's log cabin, in uncomfortable proximity to the cannon, and a guard placed over them. Chandler, Winder and some of the principal officers occupied Gage's house (while the family were put down cellar) and used his barn and outhouses as store-rooms for their baggage. The troops were ordered to sleep on their arms that night; the cannon stood in readiness to sweep the road; and full directions were given by Chandler when and how to form in line of battle should any attack be made. Thus for the first time, the tents of a Canadian enemy were spread upon Stony Creek ground, and for the first time the smoke of an enemy's camp fires arose on Wentworth air. The men took their much-needed supper, and lay down upon their arms weary and exhausted from their long, tiresome day's march. The noise and bustle of the camp grad-

ually died out, as the men sought their rest, and the darkness closed in. Characteristic of June the night was hot and breezeless, as the day had been clear and sultry. There was no moon; the horizon on all quarters was entombed in a mountain of dark clouds from which the "heat lightning" shot out at intervals, and illuminated the tree-tops with its dull flickering glare. Soon the men were asleep, and the only sounds to be heard were the sullen tread of the sentinels, the distant wail of some bird or animal, and the dying crackle of the camp fires, which revealed indistinctly the grey pyramids around them, and the forms of outlying soldiers.

"Let us now leave the Americans to the slumber which was fated to be so suddenly and abruptly broken, and follow the motions of the British.

"Towards evening Vincent had sent out Col. John Harvey, his deputy-adjutant general, for the purpose of reconnoitring the enemy. Taking ensigns McKenny and George, two officers of W. H. Merritt's company, he went forward with the light companies of the 49th, and met Williams' company at Big Creek. While Harvey, George and McKenny were ascending the east bank of the creek in advance of the men, they came upon an American with a British prisoner. The American levelled his piece to fire on them, when Harvey called out to the British soldier to seize him, which was no sooner said than the gun was wrested from him, and the captor was captive. Harvey lent his pistol to George Bradshaw, he being without small arms, and the American, whose name was Vanderberg, was conducted by him to the presence of Vincent. The British soldier had strayed from the road in the early part of the day, returned without knowing that the enemy had advanced so far, and was seen and seized. The reconnoitering party now went cautiously forward to a position from which they could view the enemy. Here they saw that the extended line of encampment of the enemy was scantily guarded, and scattered and disconnected, the artillery poorly supported, and the cavalry placed awkwardly in the rear of the artillery. McKenny and George both suggested a night sortie upon them.

Harvey saw at once the feasibility of it and concurred. Harvey has always been looked to as the first who proposed this scheme of night attack, but the honor of it really belongs to these two, McKenny claiming to have spoken of it first (see W. H. M.'s "Journal"). At night they returned and proposed the night attack to Vincent, who without much deliberation moved to carry it into effect. He acceded to it more readily as he knew full well how very critical his situation was. York was in the grasp of the enemy and an active and powerful fleet was on the lake to oppose him. And should he delay action till the next day an outnumbering army would be on his position at the very time when he had but ninety rounds of amunition for each man. W. H. Merritt, who understood perfectly well the state of affairs, spoke of it thus: 'All my hopes depended on this bold enterprise, for had we not attacked them they would have advanced the next morning, and in all probability we would have retired without risking an action, as our force was not one-third of theirs. Proctor and the whole upper country would then have fallen.' It was the result, then, of this night attack upon the enemy that was to decide the fate of the western portion of the province.

"An order to move forward startled the sleeping officers and men from the grass whereon they were reposing, and instantly the camp was alive with preparations to march. It was about half-past ten that the last of the brave seven hundred and four who were to honor themselves and their posterity in this daring encounter, disappeared from the waning light of their campfires down the lonely road eastward. Stealthily they took their way beneath the grand wall of trees that rose on either side of the road, and in places arched together overhead, closing them in profound night and darkness. As the little phalanx wound along their sinuous path toward the enemy's encampment not a word was spoken nor a sound of any kind escaped their ranks. On they stole down the west bank of Big Creek, then up the eastern like a train of noiseless ghosts. Just as they arrived at Davis's the slumbering echoes of the woods awoke upon their ears with the sound of a gun, in the very direction of the enemy. The

whole body halted almost without the word of command. This report called for increased caution; some information was gleaned from Davis; and an order went around to have the charges drawn from every gun, lest by some accident they should go off, and perhaps defeat the only scheme by which they could hope for success. They now formed into sections, and with the light companies of the 49th in the van and Vincent at the head of the rear column, they once more proceeded. Their movements were now attended with greater caution, for they were not certain that the report heard was not an alarm at their approach. They arrived in sight of the first sentry at nearly two o'clock on Sunday morning (6th). Col. Harvey, who was to conduct the attack, was in front of the light companies with another man of the 49th, and observed the sentry reclining against a tree which leaned partially over the road about a hundred yards west of the church. I have never been able to discover for a certainty whether the countersign was obtained; or if it was, how it was done. Lossing asserts that it 'was obtained from a treacherous dweller near, who by false pretenses had procured and conveyed it to General Vincent.'"

There is a tradition that the statement made by Lossing is not wholly devoid of truth. The person referred to as "a treacherous dweller near," was Mr. Isaac Corman, who then lived on lot 22, in the 3rd concession of Saltfleet. It appears that when the advance pickets of the invading army approached Stony Creek on the afternoon of the 5th of June, they saw a man setting gate posts at the end of the lane leading to his house. They took this man prisoner and marched him to the lake shore where some 1,500 of the Americans were encamped. He was left in charge of an officer who at first treated him with scant courtesy. Hearing this officer speak of Kentucky, he informed him that he too was a Kentuckian. This produced a great change in the bearing of the officer, who after this declaration treated him as a friend and not as a foe. They engaged freely in conversation when Corman told him that he was a cousin of General W. H. Harrison, then commanding the American army in the west, and as boys

they had many a time played together at school. This established confidence, and the officer gave him permission to return to his home. Mr. Corman asked how he was to pass the sentries. The officer, placing the fullest confidence in his integrity, gave him the countersign, and he at once started on his way.

In the meantime Mrs. Corman had become very anxious as to the fate of her husband. While busy with her household cares, who should come in but her youngest brother William, then a young man of 19, and who was afterwards known as "Billy Green the scout." She informed him that her husband had been made a prisoner while at work, and was then in the hands of the Americans. They talked the matter over very earnestly, when young Green determined to make a search for his missing brother-in-law, and if possible find out where he was confined. He started in the direction of the lake shore and was fortunate enough to meet his brother-in-law at Davis' on his way home. Here Corman gave the countersign to young Green, who at once started for his home on the mountain. It was now getting quite dark. After several narrow escapes from being captured by the sentries he reached his home. It is said that on one occasion so completely was he hemmed in that he got down on all fours and trotted across the road like a dog, and made good his escape into the woods. When he reached home, he got a horse from his brother Levi, and followed the bush road by way of Mount Albion as far as the top of the mountain south of Hamilton, where he left his horse with a friend. He then proceeded on foot to Burlington Heights, where he met Col. Harvey and gave him the countersign. Col. Harvey consulted with General Vincent and his brother officers, when they decided to make a night attack on the enemy. Preparations were at once made, and the army began its march to Stony Creek. The weight of evidence fixes the time of this attack as about 2 o'clock in the morning of the 6th of June. It is said that he piloted Col. Harvey and his men on their march through the forests and led the advance at Stony Creek.

The American countersign used on this occasion, so tradition says, consisted of the first syllables of General W. H. Harrison's name, and was given in the following manner: Sentry to stranger,—"Who goes there?" Stranger,—"A friend." Sentry,—"Approach friend and give the countersign." The sentry then takes the position of "charge," and presents the point of his bayonet to the breast of the stranger, and keeps it there until the countersign is given. Stranger at point of bayonet,—"Will." Sentry,—"Hen." Stranger,—"Har." The sentry lowers his musket and allows the stranger to pass.

It seems quite evident that the British authorities had obtained the American countersign from some source, for they not only passed the sentries, but reached the centre of the camp before the Americans were aware of their presence.

Corman, after parting with young Green, continued his journey eastward to his own home. Hearing a noise behind him, he turned to discover the cause, when he was seized by three American soldiers who took him prisoner a second time. They accompanied him home and remained on guard at his house over night. Early next morning news came that the American army was in full retreat. On hearing this the guards forsook their posts and joined their retreating comrades. In their hurry to depart they left some sacks and a soldier's canteen. These articles were kept for many years by the Corman family as mementoes of this visit.

The reader will pardon a slight digression here in order that a brief account of the young man who carried the countersign to Col. Harvey may be given. "Billy Green the scout" was the youngest son of Adam Green who emigrated from New Jersey to Canada in 1792, and settled on the mountain in Saltfleet, a little to the south of Stony Creek. As a boy he shunned companionship, and loved to wander in the woods alone. He was an expert climber, seemed to have no sense of danger, and was perfectly at home in the forests. It is said that he could climb almost any tree, run out on one of its branches, jump across to the limbs of another, and thus go from tree to

tree much as a squirrel does. He was active in movement, quick in decision, very impulsive, and seldom thought of the consequences of any act. Hence he was well fitted for any daring adventure, and seemed to delight in danger of any kind. He differed from the other members of his father's family, and led quite an eventful life. He died in Saltfleet in the 89th year of his age.

Mr. F. G. Snider, of Ancaster, who was then a member of the flank company of the 49th, and took part in the battle of Stony Creek, makes the following statement concerning the manner in which the countersign was obtained: He says,—"A little before 2 o'clock in the morning we drew near the American lines. Col. Harvey sent two men forward to reconnoitre while the main body halted. They were challenged by the first sentry. One of them replied to the challenge and said, "A friend." The sentry said, "Approach friend and give the countersign." The man challenged did not have the countersign, but he approached, and when the sentry presented the point of the bayonet to his breast, leaned forward to whisper the countersign, got past the point of the bayonet, grasped the sentry by the throat, and threw him down, when his companion came up, presented a pistol to his head, and ordered him to give the countersign or die. The disarmed sentry gave the countersign, and was taken prisoner. The second sentry was approached and the challenge given. This was answered as in the former case by the two men, and the countersign found to be correct. In the meantime the British had advanced, and the pickets, seeing there was no hope for them, gave up their arms. They then approached the old Methodist church and found that the two generals—Chandler and Winder—were sleeping within; they were secured as prisoners, and the British advanced to the centre of the camp, when the battle began in earnest."

Continuing his narrative Mr. Biggar says:

"In contradiction to this a '49th man' gives his printed testimony as follows: 'I had been driven in that afternoon from Stony Creek, and was well acquainted with the ground.

The cautious silence observed [speaking of their march down] was most painful: not a whisper was permitted; even our footsteps were not allowed to be heard. I shall never forget the agony caused to the senses by the stealthiness with which we proceeded to the midnight slaughter. I was not aware that any other force accompanied us than the Grenadiers, and when we approached near the creek I ventured to whisper to Col. Harvey, 'We are close to the enemy's camp, sir!' 'Hush! I know it,' was his reply. Shortly after, a sentry challenged; Dieu, Danford and the leading section rushed forward and killed him with their bayonets; his bleeding corpse was cast aside, and we moved on with breathless caution. A second challenge 'Who comes there?'—another rush, and the poor sentinel is transfixed, but his agonized groans alarmed a third who stood near the watch fire; he challenged and immediately fired and fled.' Not a moment was now to be lost. Harvey, whose plans had been perfectly organized before starting, instantly ordered his men to deploy into line. He and Col. Fitzgibbon took the road straight ahead: Major Plenderleth swept round to the left, and Major Ogilvie with a party of the 49th opened to the right. In the meantime the sentry at the church door had been approached in the shade of the trees and killed, and the whole party—who were lying in all parts of the church with their heads peacefully pillowed on their coats and boots—were made prisoners. The excitement of the men, wrought by subdued silence, was now at its greatest intensity. With wild and terrific yells they burst with fixed bayonets into the flats upon the astonished Americans. The frenzied outburst of voices seemed to fairly shake the woods; and in the next short minute the whole flats and the opposite hill was a scene of crazy commotion and disorder. The five hundred in the lane flew madly to the hill, leaving their blankets, knapsacks and some of their arms behind. The British halted at the deserted camp-fires of the enemy to load their guns and replace their flints, which some of them had taken out for safety. While this was being done, Col. Fitzgibbon rushed up to the cannon, saw that the artillerymen were not yet by them, hur-

ried back and ordered the captain of the first company to charge upon them. The company was at once on the double-quick march in the face of the guns; but hardly had they gone twenty feet before a man sprang to touch off one of the cannons. It hung fire; the captain yelled to his men to 'break off from the centre or they would all be killed,' but the words had no more than gone from his lips when the thundering explosion came, and, not his men, but the captain himself and two of his officers lay dead in the road. By this time the Americans had somewhat recovered from their first confusion, and while the British were still loading, the dark hill, for nearly a half-mile in extent, was suddenly illuminated with a crashing volley. It was a grand and awful sight; none but those who actually witnessed it can form a true conception of the ghastly sublimity of the spectacle. Following the dreadful flash and crash came a silence yet more impressive, broken through by the clinking of ramrods and groans of the wounded and dying. Now an ominous 'click click-click!' rattles along the gloomy hill, succeeded by another echoing roar of musketry, and a shock of artillery; and again the trees, the tents, and everything about lives as in a momentary day; and again the whizzing bullets are followed by moans and dying words. But now the flashes came from the flats also, and from simultaneous volleys the firing runs into an incessant roar, the hill and the valley are continuous sheets of living flame, and the sky is bright with the glare. The guard at the cabin door near the foot of the hill had fled with the rest, and now directly in the face of the fire the four men who had been confined therein ran excitedly towards the British. Strange to tell, they reached the lines in perfect safety. Then again the bayonets are fixed and the British dash forward; in rushing through they get confused, but Plenderleth rallies them, and on towards the cannons they push; up the hill they spring, and

> 'Flash'd all their sabres bare,
> Flash'd as they turned in air,
> Sabring the gunners there,
> Charging an army, when
> All the world wondered.'

"Three cannons and tumbrels, with thirty men and one of the generals, were taken in the fierce charge by Plenderleth. Ogilvie had charged up towards Gage's, and had captured the other general while coming out of the house. At about the same time the two American generals were lost to their men, Vincent was lost to the British, and was supposed to be killed or wounded. Under these circumstances Col. Burns became leader of the Americans, and Harvey assumed command of the British. The 49th were on the hill pressing onward when Burns' cavalry assailed them, cut through the ranks, and drove them back down the hill. In changing so rapidly their positions at this time, the opposing sides became mixed, and more confusion prevailed. In this state of affairs nearly fifty of the 49th British regiment were taken prisoners, and a number of Americans were also taken by the British. The Americans now began to retire, which they did without pursuit. As it was getting daylight, Harvey thought it prudent to retire too, as day would soon discover to the enemy the insufficiency of his force and probably incite them to renew a conflict which he was not able to keep up. As soon as day began to break, Capt. Merritt was sent down to ascertain, if possible, what had become of the missing general. He arrived at the scene of the midnight carnage, and was viewing over the ground not thinking of the enemy, when he was accosted by an American sentinel under Gage's house with 'Who goes there?' At this unexpected challenge he was about to surrender, as both his pistols were in the holsters, when he bethought himself of a ruse, and turning to the sentinel, and riding towards him inquired, 'Who placed you there?' Supposing him to be one of their own officers, the sentinel returned that he was put there by his captain who had just gone into the house with a party of men. The captain then asked him if he had found the British general yet, at the same time pulling out his pistol. At the sight of the weapon leveled at him, the sentinel dropped his gun and gave himself up. Just then a man, without any gun, ran down the hill. Capt. Merritt called him and he obeyed the summons. Thus securing the two prisoners unob-

served by the party of men in the house, he took them off to the Heights, but found no trace of Vincent. A large body of the enemy reappeared on the battle field between seven and eight o'clock, and proceeded to destroy the provisions, carriages, spare arms, blankets, etc., which they could not take, and then retreated, leaving their own dead to be buried by the British. As they passed from the scene of their discomfiture, their band struck up the then popular air, 'In My Cottage near the Wood,' and to this lively tune the disordered army left the hamlet of Stony Creek forever.

"They did not halt till they reached the Forty Mile Creek, where they encamped over night. But Sir James Yeo having sailed from Kingston on the 3rd, with his squadron for the purpose of annoying the enemy at the head of the lake, appeared off this creek at daylight of the 7th. Being becalmed, it was impossible to get within range with the large vessels, but the schooners Beresford and Sidney Smith were tugged up and commenced fire. This added to a panic caused by some Indians appearing on the brow of the mountain, and firing into the camp, caused the Americans (now reinforced by Generals Lewis and Boyd) to break camp and retreat to Fort George, leaving behind 500 tents, 100 stand of arms, 140 barrels of flour, and about 70 wounded men, who were duly taken care of. But the Americans met a severer loss in the destruction and capture of all the batteaux that were in co-operation with the land forces. Twelve of them were taken with all their contents by the Beresford, and the residue of five driven on shore, where their crews deserted them, and joined the flying army.

"When Capt. Merritt returned to camp without the General, George Bradshaw and John Brant (a half-brother to the celebrated Joseph Brant) started again in search. They met him emerging from a side path, arrayed in a borrowed hat and on a borrowed horse. He had lost himself, he said, in the woods while the battle was going on; and in the general excitement lost hat, sword, and horse. On his return to camp he was greeted with loud cheers from his men, who had almost given him up as killed or taken prisoner.[1]

(1) See Col. Harvey's letter of the 6th of June in the last chapter.

"The following is the statement given in an American account (Lossing's) as the return of killed and wounded at Stony Creek: the British had 23 killed, 100 wounded, and 55 missing. The Americans had 17 killed, 38 wounded, and 99 missing.

"Somewhat at variance with this is Vincent's official report, which says: 'The action terminated before daylight, when three guns and one brass howitzer, with three tumbrels, two Brigadier-Generals, Chandler and Winder, first and second in command, and upwards of 100 officers and privates remained in our hands. * * * It would be an act of injustice were I to omit assuring your Excellency, that gallantry and discipline were never more conspicuous than during our late short action; and I feel the greatest satisfaction in assuring you that every officer and individual seemed anxious to rival each other in his efforts to support the honor of His Majesty's arms, and to maintain the high character of British troops. * * General return of killed, wounded, and missing: 1 lieutenant, 3 sergeants, 19 rank and file, killed; 2 majors, 5 captains, 2 lieutenants, 1 ensign, 1 adjutant, 1 fort-major, 9 sergeants, 2 drummers, and 113 rank and file, wounded; 3 sergeants, and 52 rank and file, missing.' A veteran, John Lee, who assisted in burying the dead, *counted them himself*, disagrees with both, and affirms that there were buried that day sixty-one men of both sides.

"This loss in a half-hour's fight made a large gulf in 704 men. The severe loss on the British side is easily accounted for in the fact that they were exposed to the light of the camp fires where they suffered fearfully before they were prepared to return the fire. From the position of the dead and wounded next morning it was known that they lost as much from those two first volleys as in all the rest of the fight. Most of the Americans were wounded with bayonets. All the honor of this sharp and effectual repulse of an enemy outnumbering them four to one, is due to the decision, energy and judgment of Col. Harvey as the leader of a brave, active and faithful band of men.

"Many came the next day to witness the scene of the engagement. Men, horses, guns, swords and baggage were strewn on every part of the ground. The old church was shattered and riddled with balls in every part, and wore its marks of ill-usage down to the year 1820. The bodies of the dead were conveyed on an old wood sleigh to their graves, the settlers of the neighborhood assisting in the mournful task. Part of them were buried where some of them had slept, but the night before—on a projecting point of the hill east of the creek and a little distance north of the present road. The others—without distinction of country—slumber in the graveyard close to the spot whereon the old church stood. No stone is yet erected to perpetuate their memory or designate their sleeping place; but rebuking the descendants, two apple-trees stand patient sentinels over them, and as each sixth of June rolls round, shake the snowy laurels from their own heads to perfume and hallow their anniversary day! As their lives were arduous and warlike, so let their slumbers be light and peaceful—both friends and foes—and when they wake to the notes of the last, final bugle call, may they find the honored place in Paradise given to those who spend their life and blood in the good and noble cause of Country!"

CHAPTER X.

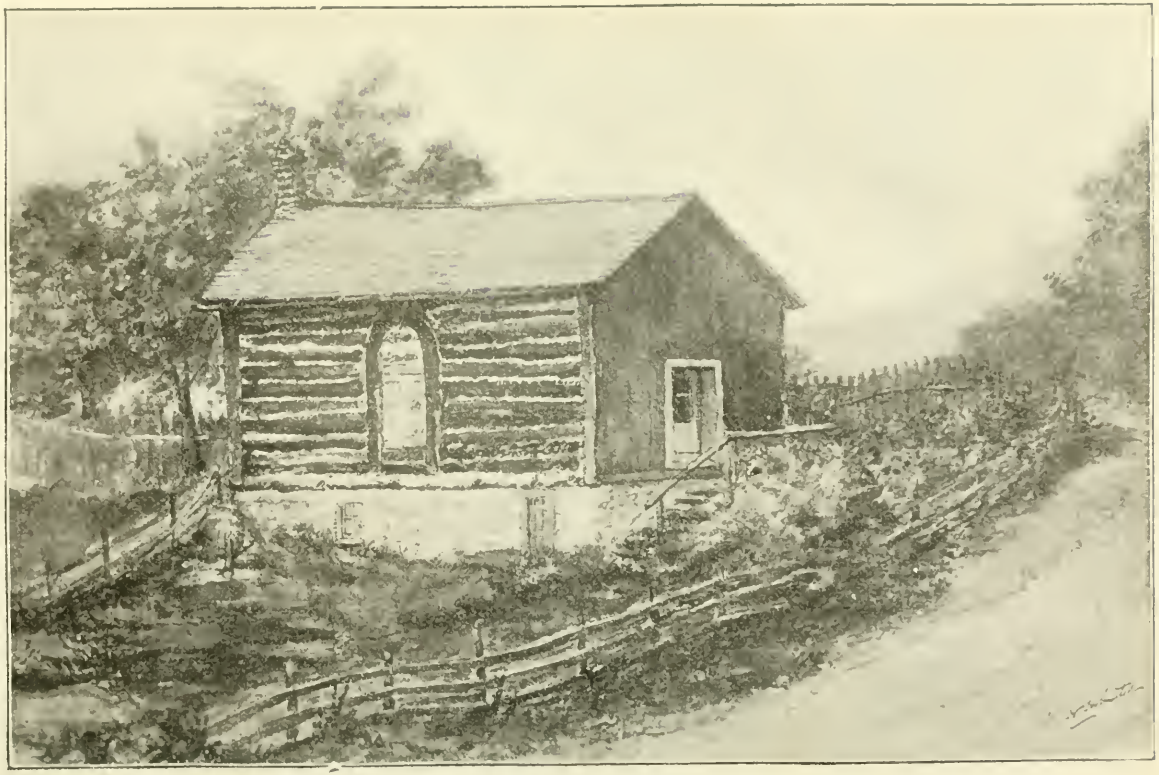
Wm. Bates' Letter — Note of Hand — Berlin Decree — First Order-in-Council — Letter from Col. Harvey Vindicating General Vincent — General Hull's Proclamation — Sir Isaac Brock's Proclamation.

WILLIAM BATES' LETTER.

"HEAD OF LAKE ONTARIO, Sept. 14th, 1799.

"DEAR AUGUSTUS,—

"I wrote you some time ago but haven't had any chance to send it. I received a letter from brother Jonathan and one from Mr. Blain, by Samuel Jarvis' wife. Mr. Blain wrote that he should set out for this place in about four weeks from the date of his letter—the last of July. I shall look for him soon. Jonathan offers to send me Brazon, if I thought it would answer. I have a plenty of grain and hay, and must have him by all means, but the trick is to get him here. I would be glad of his saddle and bridle with him. I have written to Jonathan to go to the post office at Albany. He will get his letter as soon as you get this. If you have the least thought of moving into this province to live, it would be well for you to conclude—the sooner the better. The new Governor is likely to make great alterations for the better. He was much displeased with the conduct of the administration of the government. He said they took better care of themselves than they did of the inhabitants, and was much displeased with their having 100 acre lots joining the town, and not leaving it as a commons for a town privilege. He has promised the inhabitants that when he returns in the spring, that he will see that they shall be provided with lands for a commons, that if those who owned the 100 acre lots joining the town would not give them up for a commons, he would build a block house on each of them and make it King's land, which he had a right to do. He also found fault with their neglecting to encourage ministers in the



THE FIRST COURT HOUSE.

Reproduced from a painting by Mrs Holmested, of Dundas, by kind permission of His Honor Judge Snider.

THE PRESENT COURT HOUSE.

settlements, and said that he would give every indulgence to ministers from the States that would choose to come and reside here. He said that if any person that knew a minister in the States, of good character, who wished to come in, to let him know and he would get the Bishop's approbation immediately, that it was his wish to have such ministers for two reasons, viz.: it helped to unite with the States, and would be likely to give great satisfaction to the parishioners, and secondly, a clergyman from England would be likely to be above himself, wishing to live in the English style, which could not be supported in this new country. I am of the opinion that he will make great alterations for the better. Mathews was at my house this week, and was enquiring about you. He says that the barracks and a block house are to be built in front of his house, which will make the stand more valuable to have the garrison so near the town. I wish you would make it convenient to come, and bring Brazon with you. If you haven't sold your horses, and they are in good order, they will fetch £70. Weeks has sold his horses for £85. I have keeping, and will keep them till you can make sale of them, for nothing. Cattle are still high. Cows fetch £10. I sold a yoke of oxen a few days ago for $100 in hand. I want you here to make out well. To my mind this is as good a stand for trade as is in the country. I have reason to believe that I can have a store of goods for asking for it. Colonel Smith said he felt disposed to help me, and if I did not get this place to my mind, then he would give me a good chance on his farm nine mile from town, and would set me up with goods and potash kettles to do business. It is my opinion you can't do better than to come here and see for your own satisfaction, and judge for yourself. If you should come and like to move by sleighing, I have room enough, and will provide you with provisions for a year, and will be able to do it within myself. I am at a loss what to say to you, not knowing your intentions. Tell your wife that I am sure she would be pleased with this situation, and I hope that won't prevent. I think I may expect to see you here soon, and will lay in salmon for your family, as now is the season. I am go-

ing to the Credit to get my winter store, never was finer at ten for a dollar, that weigh fifteen pounds each. If you come this fall, I shall be able to treat you to roast duck till you are tired. They have just come, and the rice is just ripe, which will make them very fat. If what I have said won't move you, I don't know what will. I have not seen Mr. Barton since I left you, nor heard from him since I wrote to you before. I hear he is doing well. I think you have heard from him since I have. Weeks talks of not going down this fall. You may tell Mr. Street that I have not spoken to Dr. Allen about his note, for this reason, I was at his house, and found his circumstances such that it was not convenient for him to pay till fall. He has 30 acres of wheat that is very good, and 40 acres of corn planted which will enable him to pay, and if he is not willing, I know which way to make him, so I look upon the debt to be safe, and will get it this winter. You must give my respects to Dr. Thompson. Tell him I have not got the pay for the harness to spare yet, but have not forgot his favor. I want you to get my mill irons and still to Schenectady, and I can get them from there any time. If you can get them there soon, they can be brought to me this fall, which would be of great consequence to me. The mill irons will fetch £80 a set. The still can be put to immediate use. They would clear a £100 this season. I have not time to write Alexander Thompson. Tell him he may depend on good encouragement in his gristing, and if he will come I will engage him for what will pay his expenses. He must not fail of coming with you, and ride one of your horses, and Crosswell the other. I think there is no doubt of Crosswell getting what he can do. I shall be looking for you with your aides-de-camps. Mr. Blain informed me that the yellow fever had made its appearance, which I am sorry for. I have nothing to say about politics, as they are scarcely heard of here. We have peace and plenty. All of my family are getting better. Should John Lamb not have got his pay, nor sold the mill irons, if he will send them to me, I will get the money for him. If his clover seed were here it would fetch the cash. Harry is sick with the fever and

ague. It is uncertain when he will set out for home. He was to have set out in this month but the ague will prevent. Mr. Chisholm is still sick. It is uncertain when he will be able to go home. The enclosed letter to William Chisholm you will forward to him, as he wishes an answer soon. Should you come, bring me in a good beef or two, and I will pay you well for them. I will engage you £10 at the least. You must take what I have written in this letter. I have not room nor time to say much more. I send you a sample of the wild rice, which is plentiful here. There are 50 acres within one mile of this that would produce 20 bushels per acre if it could be saved. My respects to Mr. Beers and to the Rev. Mr. Chase, and to all friends. Becky joins with me in love to you and Betsy and the children. Should you not come give your assistance in sending Brazon and you will much oblige.

"Your loving brother,

"WILLIAM BATES."

"Mr. Augustus Bates,

"Thorpsfield, County of Delaware,

"and State of New York."

Evidently Mr. Bates sold his still, as the following promissory note shows:

"For value received I promise to pay Thomas Mears fifteen pounds seven shillings and three pence, New York currency, (it being money advanced and expenses paid on two stills belonging to William Bates) within two months from the date. Witness my hand, Saltfleet, January 8th, 1801.

"(Signed.) AUGUSTUS BATES."

BERLIN DECREE.

"1. The British islands are placed in a state of blockade. 2. Every species of commerce and communication with them is prohibited; all letters or packets addressed in English, or in the English characters, shall be seized at the post-office, and interdicted all circulation. 3. Every British subject, of what

rank or condition whatever, who shall be found in the countries occupied by our troops, or those of our allies, shall be made prisoners of war. 4. Every warehouse, merchandise, or property of any sort, belonging to a subject of Great Britain, or coming from its manufactories or colonies, is declared good prize. 5. Commerce of every kind in English goods is prohibited; and every species of merchandise belonging to England, or emanating from its workshops or colonies, is declared good prize. 6. The half of the confiscated value shall be devoted to indemnifying those merchants whose vessels have been seized by the English cruisers, for the losses which they have sustained. 7. No vessel coming directly from England, or any of its colonies, or having touched there since the publication of the present decree, shall be received into any harbour. 8. Every vessel which, by means of a false declaration, shall have effected such entry, shall be liable to seizure, and the ship and cargo shall be confiscated, as if they had also belonged to England. 9. The prize court of Paris is intrusted with the determination of all questions arising out of this decree in France, or the countries occupied by our armies; that of Milan, with the decision of all similar questions in the Kingdom of Italy. 10. This decree shall be communicated to the kings of Spain, Naples, Holland and Etruria, and to our other allies, whose subjects have been the victims, like our own, of the injustice and barbarity of English legislation. 11. The ministers of foreign affairs, of war, of marine, of finance, and of justice, of police, and all postmasters, are charged, each in his own department, with the execution of the present decree."

BRITISH ORDER-IN-COUNCIL.

"At the Court at the Queen's Palace, January 7, 1807.

"PRESENT,

"The King's Most Excellent Majesty in Council.

"Whereas the French Government has issued certain orders, which, in violation of the usages of war, purport to

prohibit the commerce of all neutral nations with his majesty's dominions; and also to prevent such nations from trading with any other country in any articles the growth, produce, or manufacture of his majesty's dominions; and whereas the said Government has also taken upon itself to declare all his majesty's dominions to be in a state of blockade, at a time when the fleets of France and her allies are themselves confined within their own ports, by the superior valour and discipline of the British navy; and whereas such attempts on the part of the enemy would give to his majesty an unquestionable right of retaliation, and would warrant his majesty in enforcing the same prohibition of all commerce with France, which that power vainly hopes to effect against the commerce of his majesty's subjects, a prohibition which the superiority of his majesty's naval forces might enable him to support, by actually investing the ports and coasts of the enemy with numerous squadrons and cruisers, so as to make the entrance or approach thereto manifestly dangerous; and whereas his majesty, though unwilling to follow the example of his enemies, by proceeding to an extremity so distressing to all nations not engaged in the war, and carrying on their accustomed trade, yet feels himself bound by a due regard to the just defence of the rights and interests of his people, not to suffer such measures to be taken by the enemy, without taking some steps on his part to restrain this violence, and to return upon them the evils of their own injustice; his majesty is thereupon pleased, by and with the advice of his privy council, to order, and it is hereby ordered, and no vessel shall be permitted to trade from one port to another, both which ports shall belong to, or be in the possession of France or her allies, or shall be so far under their control as that British vessels may not freely trade thereat; and the commanders of his majesty's ships of war and privateers shall be, and are hereby instructed to warn every neutral vessel coming from any such port, and destined to another such port, to discontinue her voyage, and not to proceed to any such port; and any vessel, after being so warned, or any vessel coming from any such port, after a reasonable

time shall have been afforded for receiving information of this his majesty's orders which shall be found proceeding to another such port, shall be captured and brought in, and together with her cargo, shall be condemned as lawful prize. And his majesty's principal secretaries of state, the lord's commissioners of the admiralty, and the judges of the high court of admiralty, and courts of vice admiralty, are to take the necessary measures herein as to them shall respectively appertain.

"W. FAWKENER."

COLONEL HARVEY'S LETTER.

"BURLINGTON HEIGHTS, Sunday, 6th June, 1813.

"MY DEAR COLONEL:

"The enemy having dared to pursue (as he arrogantly termed it) this division by moving a corps of 3,500 men with four field guns, and 150 cavalry, to Stony Creek (within ten miles of this position), I strongly urged General Vincent to make a forward movement for the purpose of breaking up this encampment. In the course of yesterday afternoon, our advance posts (at Davis', eight miles from here towards Forty-mile Creek), consisting of the light company of 49th regiment, was driven in. I instantly went out for the purpose of reconnoitering, and found the enemy had again withdrawn to his camp at Stony Creek. I therefore recommended to the general to move the five companies of the King's (say 280) and the 49th regiment (say 424)—total, 704 men—which was accordingly done at half-past eleven o'clock. General Vincent accompanied these troops, the conduct and direction of which he was so good to give me. The troops moved in perfect order and profound silence; the light companies of the 49th and King's in front, the 49th regiment in the centre, and the King's as a reserve. In conformity with directions I had given, the sentries at the outside of the enemy's camp were bayoneted in the quietest manner, and the camp immediately stormed. The surprise was tolerably complete, but our troops incautiously advancing and charging across the line of the camp fires, and a few muskets being fired (notwithstanding my exertions to

check it), our line was distinctly seen by the enemy, whose troops in some degree recovered from the panic, and formed upon the surrounding heights, poured a destructive fire of musketry upon us, which was answered on our part by repeated charges whenever a body of the enemy could be discovered or reached. The King's regiment and part of the 49th charged and carried the four field pieces in very gallant style, and the whole sustained with undaunted firmness the heavy fire which was occasionally poured upon them.

"In less than three-quarters of an hour the enemy had completely abandoned his guns and everything else to us. Our loss has been severe, but that of the enemy much more so. Our trophies, besides the three guns and howitzers (two of the guns, by-the-bye, were spiked by us and left on the ground for want of means of removing them), are two brigadier-generals, one field officer, three captains, one lieutenant and about 100 men prisoners.

"General Vincent, being too much hurried and fatigued to write to-day, has desired me to forward to you with this letter the returns of killed and wounded, as well as those of the prisoners and ordinances retaken. The brigadier-general's dispatch will be forwarded to-morrow. In the meantime he desires me to congratulate his Excellency on the complete and brilliant success of the enterprise, and on the beneficial results with which it has already been attended. Information has just been received that the enemy has entirely abandoned his camp, burnt his tents, destroyed his provisions, ammunition, etc., and retired precipitately towards the Forty-mile creek. Our advance party occupy the ground on which his camp stood.

"I am, my dear colonel, very faithfully, etc., yours,

"(Signed) J. HARVEY, Lieut-Col., D. A. G."

"P. S.—This is sent by Capt. Milner, who proceeds with Brigadier-Generals Chandler and Winder, and who, from having been present both in the action of this day and that of the 27th ultimo, and all the intermediate operations, is perfectly

qualified to give his Excellency every satisfactory information on those subjects. (Signed) J. H.

"The circumstances in which I write will, I hope, excuse this hasty and inaccurate scrawl, of which, moreover, I have no copy."

Col. Harvey's letter was evidently intended to be an official dispatch to the Governor-General, as it was written at Gen. Vincent's request, and has the following direction written over the date-line: "Pray forward the enclosed to His Ex——y the first opportunity."

HULL'S PROCLAMATION.

"Inhabitants of Canada.

"After thirty years of peace and prosperity, the United States have been driven to arms. The injuries and aggressions, the insults and indignities of Great Britain, have once more left them no alternative but manly resistance or unconditional submission. The Army under my command has *invaded your country*, and the standard of Union now waves over the territory of Canada. To the peaceful, unoffending inhabitant, it brings neither danger nor difficulty. I come to find enemies, not to make them. I come to protect, not to injure you.

"Separated by an immense ocean and an extensive wilderness from Great Britain, you have no participation in her councils, no interest in her conduct—you have felt her tyranny, you have seen her injustice; but I do not ask you to avenge the one, or redress the other. The United States are sufficiently powerful to afford you every security consistent with their rights and your expectations. I tender you the invaluable blessings of civil, political, and religious liberty, and their necessary result, individual and general prosperity—that liberty which gave decision to our councils and energy to our conduct, in a struggle for independence, and which conducted us safely and triumphantly through the stormy period of the revolution—

that liberty which has raised us to an elevated rank among the nations of the world, and which has afforded us a greater measure of peace and security, of wealth and improvement, than ever fell to the lot of any country.

"In the name of my country, and by the authority of Government, I promise you protection to your persons, property and rights. Remain at your homes; pursue your peaceful and customary avocations, raise not your hands against your brethren. Many of your fathers fought for the freedom and independence we now enjoy. Being children, therefore, of the same family with us, and heirs to the same heritage, the arrival of an army of friends must be hailed by you with a cordial welcome. You will be emancipated from tyranny and oppression, and restored to the dignified station of freemen. Had I any doubt of eventual success, I might ask your assistance, but I do not. I am prepared for every contingency—I have a force which will look down all opposition, and that force is but the vanguard of a much greater. If contrary to your own interests and the just expectations of my country, you should take part in the approaching contest, you will be considered and treated as enemies, and the horrors and calamities of war will stalk before you. If the barbarous and savage policy of Great Britain be pursued, and the savages let loose to murder our citizens, and butcher our women and children, this war will be a war of extermination. The first stroke of the tomahawk, the first attempt with the scalping knife, will be the signal of one indiscriminate scene of desolation! *No white man found fighting by the side of an Indian, will be taken prisoner; instant destruction will be his lot.* If the dictates of reason, duty, justice and humanity, cannot prevent the employment of a force which respects no right, and knows no wrong, it will be prevented by a severe and relentless system of retaliation. I doubt not your courage and firmness—I will (not) doubt your attachment to liberty. If you tender your services voluntarily, they will be accepted readily. The United States offer you peace, liberty and security—your choice lies between these, and war, slavery and destruction. Choose then, but

choose wisely; and may He, who knows the justice of our cause, and who holds in his hand the fate of nations, guide you to a result the most compatible with your rights and interest, your peace and happiness.

"W. HULL,
"By the Generrl, A. P. Hull,
"Captain of 13th, U. S. Regt.
"of Infantry and Aid de Camp."

"H. Q. Sandwich,
"July 8th, 1812

BROCK'S PROCLAMATION.

"The unprovoked declaration of War, by the United States of America, against the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland and its dependencies, has been followed by the actual invasion of this Province, in a remote frontier of the Western District, by a detachment of the armed force of the United States. The officer commanding that detachment has thought proper to invite His Majesty's subjects, not merely to a quiet and unresisting submission, but insults them with a call to seek voluntarily the protection of his Government. Without condescending to repeat the illiberal epithets bestowed in this appeal of the American commander to the people of Upper Canada, on the administration of His Majesty, every inhabitant of the Province is desired to seek the confutation of such indecent slander, in the review of his own particular circumstances. Where is the Canadian subject who can truly affirm to himself that he has been injured by the Government in his person, his liberty, or his property? Where is to be found in any part of the world, a growth so rapid in wealth and prosperity, as this colony exhibits? Settled not thirty years, by a band of veterans, exiled from their former possessions on account of their loyalty, not a descendant of these brave people is to be found, who, under the fostering liberality of their Sovereign, has not acquired a property and means of enjoyment superior to what were possessed by their ancestors. This un-

equalled prosperity could not have been attained by the utmost liberality of the Government, or the persevering industry of the people, had not the maritime power of the mother country secured to its colonies a safe access to every market where the produce of their labor was in demand.

"The unavoidable and immediate consequence of a separation from Great Britain, must be the loss of this inestimable advantage; and what is offered you in exchange? to become a territory of the United States, and share with them that exclusion from the ocean which the policy of their present government enforces—you are not even flattered with a participation of their boasted independence, and it is but too obvious, that once exchanged from the powerful protection of the United Kingdom, you must be re-annexed to the dominion of France, from which the Provinces of Canada were wrested by the arms of Great Britain, at a vast expense of blood and treasure, from no other motive but to *relieve* her ungrateful children from the oppression of a cruel neighbor; this restitution of Canada to the Empire of France, was the stipulated reward for the aid afforded to the revolted colonies, now the United States; the debt is still due, and there can be no doubt but the pledge has been renewed as a consideration of commercial advantages, or rather for an expected relaxation in the tyranny of France over the commercial world. Are you prepared, inhabitants of Upper Canada, to become willing subjects, or rather slaves, to the Despot who rules the Nations of Europe with a rod of iron? If not, arise in a body, exert your energies, co-operate cordially with the King's regular forces, to repel the invader, and do not give cause to your children, when groaning under the oppression of a foreign master to reproach you with having too easily parted with the richest inheritance of this Earth—a participation in the name, character, and freedom of Britons.

"The same spirit of justice, which will make every reasonable allowance for the unsuccessful efforts of zeal and loyalty, will not fail to punish the defalcation of principle; every Canadian freeholder, is by deliberate choice, bound by the most solemn oaths to defend the monarchy as well as his

own property; to shrink from that engagement is a treason not to be forgiven: let no man suppose that if in this unexpected struggle, His Majesty's arms should be compelled to yield to an overwhelming force, that the Province will be eventually abandoned; the endeared relation of its first settlers, the intrinsic value of its commerse, and the pretensions of its powerful rival to repossess the Canadas, are pledges that no peace will be established between the United States, and Great Britain and Ireland, of which the restoration of these Provinces does not make the most prominent condition.

"Be not dismayed at the unjustifiable threat of the commander of the enemy's forces, to refuse quarter should an Indian appear in the ranks. The brave bands of natives which for their zeal and fidelity, by the loss of their possessions in the late colonies, and rewarded by His Majesty with lands of superior value in this Province; the faith of the British government has never yet been violated, they feel that the soil they inherit is to them and to their posterity protected from base arts so frequently devised to overreach their simplicity. By what new principle are they to be prevented from defending their property? If their warfare, from being different from that of the white people, is more terrific to the enemy, let him retrace his steps—they seek him not—and cannot expect to find woman and children in an invading army; but they are men, and have equal rights with all other men to defend themselves and their property when invaded, more especially when they find in the enemy's camp a ferocious and mortal foe, using the warfare which the American commander affects to reprobate.

"This inconsistent and unjustifiable threat of refusing quarter for such a cause as being found in arms with a brother sufferer in defence of invaded rights, must be exercised with the certain assurance of retaliation, not only in the limited operations of war in this part of the King's Dominions, but in every quarter of the globe, for the national character of Britain is not less distingnished for humanity than strict retributive justice, which will consider the execution of this inhuman threat as de-

liberative murder, for which every subject of the offending power must make expiation.

"ISAAC BROCK,
"Maj. Gen. and President.

"Head Quarters, Fort George, 22nd July, 1812.

"By order of His Honor the President,
"J. B. Glegg, Capt. A. D. C."

WATERDOWN MECHANICS' INSTITUTE

Amongst the material gathered by the late Joseph H. Smith for his History of Wentworth County and donated by the heirs to this Society, is the minute book of The Waterdown Mechanics' Institute. Information compiled from its pages is here used as an addendum to the History of the County, which is being issued as volume ten of the Papers and Records of The Wentworth Historical Society.

Sometime in or before the year 1843 an act was passed by the Legislature to encourage the formation of Literary Societies and Mechanics' Institutes. One result of this was The Waterdown Mechanics' Institute, which was established November 4th, 1843, and at the first recorded meeting, on Friday, November 24th, 1843, the first paragraph of the minutes says:

"After the adoption of the Constitution (which was not effected without a great deal of deliberation on each article) the members proceeded to the discussion of a question selected by them at a previous meeting."

CONSTITUTION.

Article 1.—This Association shall be called The Waterdown Mechanics' Institute.

Article 2.—The object of this Institute shall be the improvement of the mind and the diffusion of knowledge; by means, first, of a library containing only Philosophical, Historical, Biographical and Mechanical works, to the com-

plete exclusion of novel reading of every description. Secondly, lectures on any useful and important branch of knowledge. Thirdly, by the discussion of questions in relation to appropriate subjects, excepting such as relate to the political or religious creed of any member of the Institute.

Article 3.—It is also hereby understood (as the most sacred article of this Institution) that in the transaction of the business of the same, whether in the discussion of questions or otherwise, no irreverent or unappropriate language shall be allowed, or any conduct that would in the least deviate from the strictest moral purity.

Article 4.—It is also hereby understood that at any time when a majority of this Association shall deviate from the principles established in "Article second," the minority, "however small," shall be entitled to the Library and other property of the Institute for the purposes specified in the said Article second.

Article 5.—The officers of this Institution shall be a President, Vice-President, Treasurer, Secretary and Librarian, who shall be elected by ballot.

Article 6.—The duties of the President shall be to preside at all meetings of the Society, to call all extraordinary meetings of the same, and at any discussion of questions to give decision. First, according to weight of argument, and second by, in accordance with his own views of the merits of the question.

Article 7.—The duties of the Vice-President shall be the same as the President's in his absence.

Article 8.—The duties of the Treasurer shall be to receive and appropriate all monies according to the directions of the Society.

Article 9.—The duties of the Secretary shall be to record all transactions of the Society, which shall be read at the commencement of each meeting for adoption, and to hold any necessary correspondence.

Article 10.—The duties of the Librarian shall be to take charge of such books as may be committed to his care, keeping a list of the same, and disposing of them to members alone, according to the By-Laws of the Library.

Article 11.—Any person may become a member of this Institution, provided he shall have been proposed to the Society by one of the members, and a week subsequently elected by ballot, by paying the annual sum of five shillings H. C.* and subscribing to this Constitution; or any person may become a member for life by paying the sum of one pound, ten shillings H. C.

Article 12.—Any person who shall knowingly and wilfully violate any article of the Constitution or By-Laws of the Institute, may be expelled by a vote of the majority of the Society.

Article 13.—The regular meetings of this Institute shall be on Friday of every other week, commencing with the anniversary, which shall be held on the first Friday in February.

Article 14.—Any Article or Articles of this Constitution, excepting Articles First, Second, Third and Fourth, may be altered or amended by a vote of two-thirds of the Society; provided always that such alteration or amendment shall have been proposed to the Society at least three months before its adoption.

This Constitution was signed by sixty (60) members.

*H. C. stands for Halifax Currency, or as it was commonly called in this province "Currency." The Shilling was equal to twenty cents, and the Pound to four dollars.

MEMBERS OF WATERDOWN MECHANICS' INSTITUTE.

Adam Fergusson (Hon.)
Ebenezer C. Griffin (Esquire)
Absalom Griffin
Royal Hopkins
John Graham
Thomas Stock
John B. Garvin
George D. Griffin
Michael Banghurst
Edward Evans (Esquire)
William Montgomery
William Stuart, jr.
William S. Griffin
Leander D. Marks
John Davis
Mathew Burns
James L. Baker
Read Baker
John English
J. K. Griffin
R. C. Parsons
John A. Markle
Samuel C. Glover
Jacob Markle
Hugh Ried
Russell Rid
Andrew Tait
Alex. Brown, senr.
Robert Hunt
D. E. Markle
George Rush
Egerton R. Griffin
Daniel G. Merritt
James McMonies
Wm. Brown
Patrick Dornan
John Stock
James Morton
Wm. Mackenzie
John Heywood
Walter Evans
Wm. Ashley
Timothy Claflin
Joseph Reeves
Henry F. Graham
Walker Stock
Daniel Cummins
John Tait
John Brown
John McCollum
Henry Young
Irvin Hedley
Samuel Anderson
Dugald McDougall
Henry Edwards
John McIntosh
A. Raymond
Alex. Cole
Edward Brown
John Glasgow
(Sixty in all)

Fourteen additional signatures were added during the next two years.

The Hon. Adam Fergusson, who then owned the property in the second concession of East Flamboro, now known as Captain Spence Farm, was the President of the Institute from the time of its formation in 1843 for thirteen years. The date of his last election to the office was October 4th, 1856. D. E. Markle was the Secretary till Feb. 7th, 1845, and was succeeded in the office by Geo. D. Griffin, who held the office till Feb. 4th, 1848, when William Clarkson was elected Secretary. The next incumbent was William Stuart, jr., elected Feb. 1st, 1850, and continued in the office till Dec. 22nd, 1854, when George D. Griffin was again elected and William Stuart became Librarian; but in Oct., 1856, he again took the office of Secretary. In Oct., 1858, he was succeeded by J. B. Thompson, who continued to hold the office as long as the Institute continued, the last minutes recorded being signed by him.

The meetings were held quite regularly during the first few years; frequent debates were held and general interest was kept up. But after 1856 the interest appears to have failed. At the Annual Meeting held October 16th, 1857, a new Constitution was adopted, and thereafter the principal interest appears to have centered in the Library, which had always been a strong feature in its work.

In May, 1858, the membership was reported as twenty-eight, a decrease of thirty-two in two years, having been sixty in 1855-56. There were at that time "seven hundred and twenty-four volumes in the Library, chiefly historical, philosophical and scientific works; value $800.00.

After 1859 the meetings reported were only from one to four per annum until 1866, in which year there were seven, and in 1867 four. During these two years there were readings and debates at each meeting. Then the interest died away again and not more than three meetings were recorded in any one year. The last meeting reported was on

May 9th, 1884, with an adjournment to May 16th, 1884, but there was no meeting of the latter date, and they might as well have adjourned **sine die** as no further meetings are reported. However, additions to the Library are noted as late as Aug., 1894.

The good accomplished in the education and development of the members of this and other similar associations cannot be estimated, but must have been very important in the advancement of the villages, the towns and the whole country.

PAPERS AND RECORDS

OF THE

Wentworth Historical Society

VOLUME ELEVEN

1924

AUTHORS OF PAPERS ARE ALONE RESPONSIBLE FOR STATEMENTS AND OPINIONS EXPRESSED HEREIN

HAMILTON
The Griffin & Richmond Co., Ltd., Printers
1924

WENTWORTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

1923 - 1924
OFFICERS

President ..... J. H. LAND
1st Vice-President ..... J. A. GRIFFIN
2nd Vice-President ..... MRS. HENDERSON
Secretary ..... F. HAMILTON
Treasurer ..... E. D. H. BOYD
Librarian .....

EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE

Rev. R. L. Spencer
Kirwan Martin
W. F. Moore
Col. W. R. Turnbull
T. B. McQueston
C. E. Bull
J. Plant
Dr. T. Wickett
Chester Walters
R. P. Newbigging

LADIES' COMMITTEE

President—Mrs. M. Henderson, 47 Forest Ave.
Secretary—Miss Charlotte A. Land.
Treasurer—Mrs. T. B. Knight.

CONTENTS

Martin gave an address detailing in a most interesting manner the story of the events we were commemorating and indicating the points of interest in connection with that story. This address will be an imporant part of our next volume.

The Wentworth Historical Society is continuing its activities and living up to its motto, "Colligere et Custodire"—"Gather and Keep," and below we record a few items of local "history in the making" during 1923: Early in the morning of February 23, 1923, an extremely cold day, occurred a very disastrous fire entirely destroying the Lister Block, corner of James and King William Streets, a very spectacular event, and the ice-clad walls continued to be an interesting picture for days afterward. The site of this building is now occupied by a fine six-story reinforced, steel, cement and brick block, which will be completed in the Spring of 1924.

On May 24, 1923, in the presence of a large crowd, near Stoney Creek, where the old King Street road is joined by the new Main Street highway to Queenston and Niagara, a fine monument in honor of the Canadian soldiers who fell in the war of 1914-18 was unveiled by the Lieutenant-Governor of Ontario. And on the 22nd of May the Governor-General, Lord Byng of Vimy, unveiled the Cenotaph erected by the Canadian Club of Hamilton in Gore Park Extension, in front of the City Post Office.

In the autumn of 1923 there was opened on Dunsmure Avenue, near the eastern limits of this city, a well finished, well equipped School building, said to be the largest public school building in Canada. It has been named the W. H. Ballard School, in honor of the veteran senior school inspector of Hamilton.

On the southwest corner of King and Queen Streets, where long ago stood the homestead of James Mills, one of the pioneers of Hamilton, a Masonic Cathedral of imposing appearance and great capacity was completed by the Scottish Rite Masons and dedicated in May, 1923.

Another Collegiate Institute of very fine architecture is being erected on Main Street near Kenilworth Avenue, to serve the far eastern section of the city. It will probably be opened sometime in 1924.

To provide for the advanced education of the young people of the west end of the city in the not far distant future, the Board of Education has wisely secured in good time a fine site for a third Collegiate Institute to be located in Westdale.

J. A. G.

RETROSPECTIVE

Since the publication of Volume 10 of the papers of thi Society the members have continued their activities in promotin the objects of the organization. The present volume rec some of the papers read at the open meetings of the Society an reproduces some of the clippings gathered from old periodical and now being kept.

The attention of the Government and of the people has been drawn to the neglected state of the old military cemetery on Burlington Heights and the imminent danger of its total destruction by iconoclasts. As a consequence steps have been taken which we trust will result in the preservation and beautification of what is left of these historic grounds. Burlington Heights might, with little effort, be made one of the most attractive spots in the county, even now, in spite of neglect and vandalism. It supplies almost unrivalled viewpoints of beautiful scenery to north and south, to east and west, as varied as it is charming. Land and water, tree clad slopes, valleys and green meadows and fields of waving grain, urban and suburban scenes in every direction.

Another of the accomplishments of the Society has been the placing, at a cost of some hundreds of dollars, of a memorial in Wabasso Park, on the north shore of Hamilton Bay, to commemorate the landing, near that spot, of Sieur La Salle and his associates in 1669, the first visit of white men to the shore of Hamilton Bay of which there is any authenticated account. Through the efforts of Mr. John Wallace, a very active member of our Executive last year, we secured a very large and suitable boulder on which to place a tablet. This the Society had transported to the Park; the Park Superintendent had it suitably mounted on a foundation of cement and small boulders. On the large boulder the Wentworth Historical Society caused to be placed an appropriate and elegant bronze plate briefly stating the historical facts. This tablet was designed, cast and placed by a local manufacturing firm.

On Saturday, June 9, 1923, His Honor, Lieut.-Governor Cockshutt, was introduced by President H. F. Gardiner to the large company of citizens who had gathered for the occasion, and after an appropriate and interesting address, his Honor unveiled the memorial. Mayor Thos. Jutten and Mr. T. B. McQuesten, of the Parks Board, then spoke briefly and suitably, and Mr. Kirwan

Hon. Richard Cartwright, U. E. L.

1759 1815

BY JUSTUS A. GRIFFIN.

At Albany, in the Province of New York, on the 2nd of February, 1759—163 years ago—was born Richard Cartwright, who was destined to play a prominent part in the early history of this Province. His father, also named Richard, an Englishman of a respectable family, a genial and hospitable nature, was born in London, Oct. 18, 1720, and his mother, Joanna Beasley, born in Albany, N. Y., March 6, 1726, was of loyal Dutch parentage.

Richard was a studious boy, fond of books, and after receiving a good education decided that he would be a clergyman. But the American War of Independence, commonly called The Revolutionary War, altered his plans. Young though he was his thoughtful mind led him to warmly espouse the Royal cause, and as a United Empire Loyalist he played the part of a man in the conflict. He married Miss Magdalen Secord, who was born May 4, 1763, and died Jan. 4, 1827. He died in Montreal July 27, 1815, and was buried there.

At the close of the war he entered into partnership with Robert Hamilton in a mercantile business at Kingston, Upper Canada. Their business extended rapidly and after a few years they dissolved partnership and Hamilton established himself at Queenston while Cartwright continued the business in Kingston, but they maintained an intimate friendship throughout their lives.

George Hamilton, who made the first survey of town lots in this city and from whom it derived its name, was a son of Robert Hamilton.

Mr. Cartwright kept copies of his letters in books, which are now preserved, being in charge of Queen's University, Kingston. The contents give much interesting and reliable information regarding many of the early settlers in this province.

I had the privilege of spending much time reading the letters in one of these books, covering the period April 23rd, 1799, to

October 4th, 1802. There are about eight hundred and fifty (850) letters in this volume—I did not read them all—some of them brief business letters, some combining business with friendly notes and comments, and others were dunning letters, but even the latter at times contained references that throw light upon the conditions then prevailing.

I note first, that this young man—he was only 33 years of age when appointed a member of the Legislative Council of the Province of Upper Canada on its organization in 1792, and had already been in business and a Judge of Common Pleas for several years—was very methodical. One indication of this fact is the existence of these letters, all carefully copied by hand. They were not made by use of copyable ink, tissue paper and a letter press, nor by carbon paper on a typewriter. The prompt replies to letters received is another evidence of method. The thorough grasp of an extended business as well as of public affairs and interests, shows conclusively that here was a man of system.

We are prone in this age to pride in our advancement and to regard the people of 100 years ago as having been slow and easy going. We hear talk of the rush and hustle that these modern days force upon the man of business. But after perusing these old letters one begins to doubt such statements. True it is, that there were no railroads, telegraph lines, telephones, trolley lines nor automobiles. But some of us have had experiences where none of these things existed and where much work was accomplished expeditiously notwithstanding: where there was system and discipline without the use of filing cards and innumerable forms. Such have been the experiences of the Hudson's Bay Company, of survey parties, of exploring and military expeditions. In Cartwright's day there was not even a well organized postal service. But what a rush there was to bring the wheat, the flour, the pork, the potash and the furs to the warehouses by teams of oxen and horses on clay and corduroy roads, by canoes and barges on rivers and lakes, from the distant farms and mills and forests. Then the hustle to load all these in the brigade of boats for shipment to Montreal, in order that as many trips as possible might be made in the season.

On the arrival of the boats from Montreal, too, there were the imported goods to unload and store away and later to be reshipped to the scattered settlements and trading posts to the west and the north by means of schooners, canoes and the beforementioned wagon teams.

Then there were the letters arriving to which answers must be sent by the returning boats, whether they were going east or west. Can you imagine a scene of greater activity or of greater need for system? What need for knowledge of conditions and of foresight to judge of the wants of the scattered population when ordering goods ahead for a year. Here let me quote from a letter which shows rejoicing for a peace treaty and at the same time some provision for changed conditions likely to result. How history repeats itself:

Dec. 30, 1801.

"To J. & A. McGill, Montreal.

I feel happy at the conclusion of peace, although the immediate effect must be to lessen the value of some part of our produce."

And again, the next day, Dec. 31st, 1801, he writes to James McGill, Esq., Montreal: "Rejoice most sincerely whatever may be the effect on the mercantile operations of this country. That this will be in the end rather favorable I am induced to believe. But as its immediate consequences will be to lessen the value of one considerable branch of our remittance I regret that my order for last year was so considerable, and if you do not think it too late I would wish to countermand one-third of it, and a third part of it taken proportionately from all the different items."

Traders or merchants in all the settlements of this Province west of Kingston apparently were among Cartwright's customers. Among the people of this part of the country mentioned in his letters I found the following:

Richard Beasley, with whom he had quite an extensive business and who was deeply in his debt. They were cousins, and it is said their wives were related. In writing, Cartwright sometimes addressed him as Dear Cousin, sometimes as Dear Richard, again as Dear Sir, and when annoyed it was Mr. Beasley, Sir; —— Springer and J. B. Rousseau, James Secord (a brother-in-law), Robert Hamilton, of Queenston, General Count Joseph de Puisaye, Wm. Kent, of Saltfleet, near Stoney Creek, and Augustus Jones of Stoney Creek.

He displays considerable knowledge of law and legal methods, as is to be expected of a legislator and a judge, an office he

filled for many years, though without emolument.* Of deeds, mortgages and wills he shows considerable knowledge, evidently acquired by actual experience. But he does not appear to have entertained a very high opinion of lawyers. In one of his letters, Oct. 16th, 1799, to the Messrs. McGill of Montreal, he says: "I have so indifferent an opinion of our lawyers that I am not inclined to have any concern with them, and at all events it will be best to let the matter lay over till Spring. I shall then have an opportunity of consulting the best of them in person. Perhaps when I see him (Mr. Dickson) and Mr. Hamilton in the Spring I may be able to do more than could be done by the **gentlemen of the long robe.**"

On the 14th May, 1801, he wrote to a Mr. John Dunn: "To go to law in this case would be to throw away money to no purpose."

There is not time on this occasion to quote all the letters of which I made notes, but a few of them may interest you, in comparing the past with the present.

On May 13th, 1799, he wrote to J. A. McGill, Montreal, as follows:

"Our winter is but just leaving us. Yesterday morning the ground was covered with snow, and we can barely perceive that vegetation has begun. Such a severe season has not been known since the establishment of the colony."

*NOTE—The following extract from Court records gives evidence of the public service he was giving at the age of 31 years:

"Court of Quarter Sessions,
"Town of Kingston,
"Tuesday, Jan. 12, 1790.

"Present: Richard Cartwright, Neil McLean, Archibald McDonell, Nicholas Hagerman, Stephen Gilbert, Esquires.

"The Court having considered the great abuses arising from the unlimited sale of Spirituous Liquors by Tavern-Keepers in this district, to all manner of persons and at irregular hours, they do therefore order and adjudge the following condition shall be entered in the recognizances given by Tavern-Keepers previous to their obtaining a Licence:—'That during the term of their said Licence they shall not entertain servants, or suffer Tradesmen or Laborers to abide in order to drink and tipple at their house longer than one hour in the day time; nor sell any Spirituous Liquors after the hour of nine o'clock at night in Winter, and ten o'clock in Summer.'"

To Rev. Geo. Hamilton, of Scotland, Oct. 16, 1799:

".....This province furnishes little political novelty that can interest any but ourselves. We are too obscure to attract attention; but our obscurity, like that of private life, does not preclude us from enjoying those substantial comforts not always to be met with in more dazzling situations. We look with anxiety, though with confidence, at the amazing exertions which Great Britain is making to rescue Europe from the grasp of the French."

Substitute German for French in the last paragraph and how true it was 115 years later.

To Hon. Robt. Hamilton, Queenston, Oct. 26, 1799. Speaking of cargo of schooner, he says:

"There are two horses and seven sheep on board for General de Puisaye, which please send him as soon as they are unloaded."

To Gen. Count de Puisaye, Oct. 27, 1799 (in French).

"Madame Cartwright sends her thanks for the delicious peaches (les pêches delicieux)."

This is proof that peaches were grown in this province more than 120 years ago, though an obituary notice in a local daily stated of a man born about 1850 that he introduced peach growing into this province.

May 5, 1801, he writes to Messrs. McGill: "If you could engage me some honest, handy fellow, able and willing to do anything about house or store, I should have no objection to give him eight dollars a month."

To Robt. Hamilton, Oct. 27, 1801. Referring to some mittens he says: "No profit, but much satisfaction."

Many of the letters were about flour which I find was sold wholesale in 1801 for 35 shillings ($7.00) per barrel.* Butter and cheese was sold that year—export price—at one shilling (20 cents) per lb.

He does not appear to think much more of some of the newspapers than he did of the lawyers. July 29, 1799, he writes to Robt. Hamilton: "I thank you for the sample of your Niagara paper. But as I am already a subscriber to the papers of which

*On Feb. 18, 1922, flour in Toronto was $7.00 to $7.50 per barrel.

this must necessarily be the copy, and as I cannot benefit by the editor's talents during the winter, I will save my four dollars for other purposes. You will oblige me by mentioning these as my reasons to the printers who have been civil enough to send me two copies of their **Constellation**, for I do not wish to be so rude as to give them my strongest reasons for declining to benefit by their new lights, which is a dislike to their character."*

To Robt. Hamilton, April 6, 1802: "Have the goodness to pay Mr. Tiffany for his paper what may be due and inform him that I do not consider myself as a subscriber.."

Mr. Tiffany was afterward a resident of Hamilton and a street here bears his name.

To J. & A. McGill, he writes on February 17, 1802: "Discontinue my subscription to **Quebec Gazette** after the first of May next."

Mr. Cartwright died in 1815 at the age of 56. During those years of a comparatively short life he had contributed in a wonderful degree to the progress of the country in business, in education, in social amenities, in legislation and in preserving order, as a citizen and as a judge. It is to be remembered also that he neither sought nor received any remuneration for most of his public services.

*NOTE—The first number of "The Canada Constellation" appeared July 20, 1799, "Published weekly opposite the Lion Tavern, Niagara. S. & G. Tiffany, proprietors." It lived one year, then died of starvation.

Hamilton's Stone Age

By H. F. GARDINER, M. A.

Following is a copy of the address on Hamilton's Stone Age, which was read at the thirty-second annual meeting of the Wentworth Historical Society, June 6th, 1922, by H. F. Gardiner:

Shakespeare says there are "sermons in stones," and one can find in an older book plenty of texts for the sermons, such as:

"The bricks are fallen down, but we will build with hewn stones."—Isaiah ix. 10.

"The stone was cut out of the mountain."—Daniel ii. 45.

"And they gave the money into the hands of them that did the work . . . . to the carpenters and builders . . . . and to masons and hewers of stone."—II Kings xii. 11, 12.

"Ye have built houses of hewn stone."—Amos v. 11.

Hamilton, like other places in Canada, had its wooden age, of which a few relics are yet to be seen. The material was plentiful and cheap in the early days, and with a few simple tools and moderate mechanical skill the settler could construct a wooden house adequate to shelter himself and his family until he could afford something more substantial. I have been told that the first brick store in Hamilton was built at the north-west corner of King and John streets, in 1829, by Henry Griffin, of Grimsby. But what the late Ald. William Hancock used to call our "mounting of stone" soon became an important factor in the development of the city. In making the roads down the side of the mountain, great quantities of stone were uncovered and removed —"niggerheads" suitable for foundations, coarse stone for side and back walls, freestone that made neat window-sills and handsome fronts for houses and stores, flagstones for sidewalks, stone that had only to be broken into proper sizes to make good macadam roads, or burnt to be converted into lime. Between 1840 and 1860, many beautiful stone residences were erected in Hamilton, as well as buildings designed for business purposes. Most of these are still occupied, though some have disappeared. There are detached houses, double houses, rows of houses, cottages; houses of which all four walls are of stone, and houses

that have stone fronts and brick side and rear walls; stone houses to which extra stories of brick have been added; stone churches, stone schools, stone hotels, stone banks, stone stores, stone factories; stone residences that have been converted into stores or offices, and stone stores that have long ago been diverted from their original purpose.

In my walks about the city I have noted the location of many of the stone buildings, large and small, and the result of my observations and inquiries may prove interesting, especially to old residents. I cannot presume that the list will be complete, or the information exhaustive. Probably many mistakes will be made, and I shall welcome corrections and additional facts.

STONE RESIDENCES.

Let us begin with the George Hamilton house, at the forks of the old John street road up the mountain and the new road which turns to the east—now called Arkledun avenue. Daniel Springer got the crown patent for lot No. 14, third concession, Barton, May 17, 1802. He deeded the 100 acres to his son John, who sold part of the farm to Thomas Dexter, who sold to James Durand, who sold to George Hamilton, Jan. 25, 1815. The first village lots sold by Mr. Hamilton were on John street, south of King street. He died in 1836, and his eldest son, Robert Jarvis Hamilton, born in 1812, became head of the family. In recent years the Hamilton house was the residence of the late Samuel Barker, M. P.

On the west side of the steep John street mountain road is Arkledun, built in the forties by Richard Juson, hardware merchant, who had previously lived in the stone house at the south-east corner of King and Bay streets. His store was on the north side of King street, west of John street, until he built the fine stone store on the site of the present George Robinson department store on James street south. That building was occupied as a hardware store by William McGiverin, Charles Cameron and John Proctor; as a printing office by the Spectator; and the late Frederick Watkins had a dry goods store there. Juson's nail factory was a stone building at the north-east corner of Cannon and Hughson streets. It was later occupied by J. H. Killey, manufacturer of steam engines, road rollers, etc. Mr. Killey went into partnership with William Osborne, and the works were moved to the north side of Barton street, east of Ferguson avenue. There the new pumping engines were built for the Hamilton waterworks, when the 20-inch main was laid in 1880-81. Mr. Killey anticipated the coming of the "horseless

carriage'' and wrote many letters to the newspapers urging that Hamilton should be first in the field to manufacture what we now call automobiles. The site of the Juson nail factory is now covered by the showroom and offices of the Burrow, Stewart & Milne manufactory. Arkledun was owned and occupied by Edward Browne, wharfinger and coal merchant; by James Turnbull, general manager of the Bank of Hamilton; and is now the residence of E. D. Cahill, barrister. When the Prince of Wales (King Edward VII) was in Hamilton in 1860, he lodged at Arkledun. There was then no fence between the grounds of Arkledun and those of Oakbank, the property of W. P. MacLaren, Mr. Juson's brother-in-law, and part of the Prince's suite lodged at Oakbank, and all ate there. Both the Juson and the MacLaren families were in England at the time, but Mr. Adam Brown was in charge of the two houses, and he made all the arrangements for the entertainment of the royal party.

Oakbank, on the east side of James street, was built by W. P. MacLaren and occupied by his family until the death of his son, Col. Henry MacLaren. It was then bought from the MacLaren estate by J. M. Young, who was drowned when the Lusitania was torpedoed by the Germans. The present owner of Oakbank is Dr. Rogers.

Ballinahinch, with spacious grounds at the corner of James street and Aberdeen avenue, was built by Aeneas Kennedy, the father of Reginald Kennedy, of the Hamilton Times. Parker & Kennedy's store was just east of the site of the Provident and Loan building. Mr. Kennedy's widow married Robert Ferrie, a son of Hon. Adam Ferrie. During her occupancy of the house, after Mr. Ferrie's death, a flood of water came down the mountain side and dug a great gully through the grounds. The British regiment, then stationed in Hamilton, feeling under obligation to Mrs. Ferrie for permission to hold band concerts on the property, assisted to repair the damage. The name by which the house is now known was given it by Edward Martin (who bought the property from Mrs. Ferrie), after the home of his family in Ireland. The present occupant of Ballinahinch is Mr. Ker, of the Spectator.

Colin Campbell Ferrie, an elder brother of Robert, built the stone house near the north-east corner of York and Oxford streets, afterward owned and occupied by Hon. Samuel Mills, and later by Anthony Copp. Cut in the stone over the front door is the inscription ''C. C. F.—1836.'' Mr. Ferrie's land, west of Queen street, extended from York street to Burlington Bay.

East of Queen street, just opposite Mr. Ferrie's grounds, was the stone residence of Thomas Stinson, now replaced by a row of brick houses. One of the stone outbuildings, facing the Tuckett factory, is now Pringle's warehouse.

Inglewood, south of Aberdeen avenue and west of Upper James street, was built about 1850 by Archibald Kerr, of the firm of A. & T. C. Kerr. On retiring from business, A. Kerr settled near Edinburgh and sold or leased Inglewood to T. C. Kerr. Later Miss May bought the place; then John Stuart, then W. D. Long, then W. J. Southam. In Mr. Stuart's time, the Marquis of Lansdowne, governor-general of Canada, was entertained at Inglewood.

John Brown built Highfield, south of Aberdeen avenue and west of Bay street, which he afterwards sold to Hon. James Turner. After Mr. Turner's death the house was utilized as a school for boys, under the superintendence of Mr. Collinson.

Just north of Oakbank stands a handsome stone house built by W. F. Findlay, of the firm of T. C. Kerr & Co., in which Col. Henry MacLaren lived for many years. It was sold to Mr. Fisher, of the Toronto, Hamilton & Buffalo Railway, and is now owned and occupied by Cyrus Birge.

Facing the eastern end of Herkimer street, on James street, is the residence of W. A. Wood. This house was built by David Law, of the firm of Young, Law & Co., and sold to J. G. Forster; then to Joseph Price, of the Great Western Railway, and later to Hon. A. T. Wood. Before Mr. Law built the house, the land was owned by D. C. Gunn, father of the late R. L. Gunn. About the time the Great Western Railway was built, Mr. Gunn undertook the construction of locomotives in Hamilton in a stone building east of Wentworth street north, afterwards used by Thomas Lawry as a packing house, and by Waddell & Carpenter in the manufacture of sewer pipes. A portion of that building is still visible.

Mr. Bigelow lived in the stone house just north of Mr. Wood's, later occupied by Mr. Parker, of the Meriden Britannia Works, and by Mrs. Grantham. Mr. Bigelow's crockery store was on King street, just west of the present Bank of Commerce, and he had a stone warehouse, which is still standing, on Jackson street, between James and Hughson streets.

John Young built and lived in the house on Upper John street, now known as St. Joseph's Hospital. He had previously lived at the corner of Main and James streets, where the Hamilton Club is now located.

At the upper end of Arkledun avenue, north side, near the little graveyard which contains the tomb of Dr. Case, is a fine stone house erected by Mr. Carpenter, of Gurneys & Carpenter, and called by him Rock Castle. John Brown, of the firm of Kerr, Brown & MacKenzie, lived there later, succeeded by Hon. Donald McInnes. Thomas Robertson, M. P., afterwards Judge, bought the place and changed the name to Rannoch Lodge, after the residence of his ancestors in Scotland. Mr. Carpenter built for an office—not a church—that funny stone building on John street, adjoining the Gurney foundry, north of King William street.

West of Rock Castle, on the same side of the road, is a house that was occupied, and probably built, by Edward Donnelly; afterwards owned by John Barry, Thomas Axworthy and William Ramsay.

The two handsome stone houses, facing north on Arkledun avenue, just east of the Barker residence, were built and occupied by the brothers, Edward and Charles Gurney. The contractors were Melville & Herald.

Going east from the head of the Jolley Cut, on the south side of Concession street, you come to a stone house that was built by James Jolley. He had lived on John street south, opposite Court House square, but Mrs. Jolley's health was not good, and Dr. Gerald O'Reilly, who then lived at the north-west corner of King and Mary streets, recommended a change of air. Mr. Jolley rented a house on the mountain, and the change was so beneficial that he resolved to build there. The fact that Mrs. Jolley lived to the age of ninety-four goes to prove that Dr. O'Reilly's advice was good.

Going west on Concession street to the head of the mountain road, one sees through the gateway a handsome stone residence, built by John Bradley, stepfather of John Patterson, who afterwards built the house on Hess street, south of King, now owned and occupied by W. C. Breckenridge. The late George H. Gillespie, partner of Adam Brown in the wholesale grocery business, lived for many years in the Bradley house on the mountain. Mr. Bradley owned much property in the central part of the city. Melville, Herald & White were the builders of the Jolley and Bradley houses on the mountain.

West of the present asylum property on the mountain is Barton Lodge, which was the residence of Colonel Gourlay, and was occupied for many years after his death by his widow and family.

Still further west is Chedoke, built by W. Scott Burn. Long ago, C. J. Brydges, general manager of the Great Western Railway, lived at Chedoke. It now belongs to St. Clair Balfour.

On the north-east corner of James street and Charlton avenue is a stone house long occupied by Sir Aemilius Irving, M. P., for Hamilton 1874-1878. This house was built by Mr. Titus, and the stones were not cut in the ordinary way, but sawed into shape in a yard on Hughson street, near Augusta street. For some reason the walls were afterward covered with plaster.

The first stone house on the south side of Charlton avenue, east of James street, is marked on an old map as belonging to, or occupied by, Mr. Griffin. Adam Brown, who lodged there at one time, says that, in the forties, Mr. Pringle, the lawyer; John Brown, brother of Adam Brown; A. Logie, afterwards county judge—father of the present Mr. Justice William Logie—and Mr. Griffin, of the Gore Bank, "kept bach" in the stone house on the south side of Hannah street, now called Charlton avenue, just east of James street. Messrs. Griffin and Logie bought the lots extending from Markland street to Concession street, now called Aberdeen avenue, east of Bay street. Mr. Griffin built the stone house facing Aberdeen avenue, which was sold to Judge Logie and then to H. W. Routh, partner of Adam Brown, and later to W. H. Gillard, who resided there until his death. Mr. Logie built a brick house on the Markland street side of the property.

Facing the end of Hughson street, on Charlton avenue, the house occupied by the late W. A. Robinson for the last half century was the property of C. L. Helliwell, whose store was on the corner of King and Hughson streets, where the Provident and Loan building now stands.

East of Mr. Helliwell's house on Charlton avenue lived John Galbreaith, who with D. B. Galbreaith kept store on King street, just east of the present Connaught Hotel. Galbreaith's Terrace was built on John street, north of Barton street.

Dennis Moore owned and occupied the stone house on Charlton avenue, near John street, now part of the estate of the late Mrs. G. H. Bisby.

Merksworth, the late Mrs. John Crerar's house on the north-east corner of Herkimer and Macnab streets, was built by James Osborne, and occupied by T. C. Kerr and by Frederick Broughton, general manager of the Great Western Railway, before it was purchased by Mr. Crerar.

The Church of the Ascension parsonage, on the south side of Charlton Avenue, between Macnab and Park streets, was built in the fifties with money raised by the ladies of the congregation, the building lot being donated by Richard Juson.

The stone house on the south-east corner of Park and Herkimer streets was built by Donald Nicholson for a manse for St. Andrew's (now called St. Paul's) Church.

Athol Bank, the house on the north-east corner of Queen and Herkimer streets, was built by its present owner and occupant, William Murray, the bard of St. Andrew's Society. The lot is high above the street and surrounded by a stone wall.

Mrs. Robert Thomson's house, on the west side of James street, with grounds extending from Duke to Robinson street, was built by Colin Reid, in imitation of Sir Walter Scott's Abbotsford. James Reid and his sister sold the place to Mr. Thomson. Colin Reid was a lawyer and James Reid a manufacturer of first-class furniture, with his factory and residence at the south-east corner of King and Park streets, where Mr. Souter now carries on business.

George S. Papps built the stone house on the south-east corner of Bold and Bay streets, and sold it to the late Mrs. Ewing.

The stone house on the south-east corner of Jackson and Macnab streets was built by Daniel MacNab, who sold it to his son-in-law, George Lowe Reid, chief engineer of the Great Western Railway. Later, it was purchased by Charles Magill, who was mayor of Hamilton for several terms and also represented the city in parliament before and after Confederation. Dr. and Mrs. T. H. Husband live there now. Daniel MacNab kept a hardware store on King street, just east of MacLaren's grocery, where the Canada Life building now stands.

Mrs. McQuesten's house on the south-west corner of Jackson and Macnab streets was built by R. O. Duggan, who sold it to Dr. Calvin McQuesten, grandfather of ex-Ald. Thomas B. McQuesten.

Hon. Samuel Mills owned and occupied the large stone house on the south-west corner of Main and Charles streets. Mr. Mills donated Harvey Park to the city.

The house on the south side of Main street, between Caroline and Hess streets, occupied in recent years by Mr. and Mrs. Robert Campbell and their family, was built by J. C. Macklin,

of the firm of T. C. Kerr & Co., on a lot purchased from Mrs. Cawthra, a daughter of Hon. Samuel Mills.

Wesanford, the residence of Mrs. Sanford, on the east side of Caroline street, with grounds extending from Jackson street to Hunter street, was the home of Edward Jackson. The house was rebuilt by the late Hon. W. E. Sanford.

On the west side of Caroline street, just opposite Wesanford, is the residence of William Southam, which was built by Tristram Bickle, whose drug store was on the north side of King street, a little east of James street. Bishop Fuller lived in this house for many years.

John W. Bickle, son and partner of T. Bickle, built the house now occupied by Mrs. Greening, on the north-west corner of Jackson and Caroline streets. Judge Robertson lived there for some time.

George E. Tuckett built the house at the south-east corner of King and Ray streets and lived there until his death. His factory was on the north side of King street, east of Bay street. A few years after the retirement of Mr. John Billings from the firm, Mr. Tuckett and his son built the large factory on Queen street, north of York street.

The stone house on the north side of King street, east of Ray street, with a double house on each side of it, belonged to Mrs. William Smith, a sister of Hon. Samuel Mills, whose husband wrote and published "Smith's Canada," about 1850.

The residence of Bishop Dowling, on King street, opposite the Tuckett homestead, was built by Mr. McIntyre, a brother-in-law of John Young. It was occupied for many years by Alexander Harvey, of the wholesale grocery firm of Harvey, Stuart & Co.

Dundurn Castle, on York street, opposite Hamilton Cemetery, was built by Sir Allan MacNab before 1850, on the site of the dwelling of Richard Beasley, an early settler and large landowner. The gates, and the masonry to which they are attached, were purchased from the estate of George Rolph, of Dundas. Sir Allan MacNab died in 1862. Hon. Donald McInnes bought Dundurn about fifty years ago and sold the castle and beautiful grounds to the city in 1898. In Mr. McInnes' time the Princess Louise and her husband, the Marquis of Lorne, then governor-general of Canada, were entertained at Dundurn.

The stone house at the corner of Locke and Tecumseh streets was originally Dundurn Lodge.

On the north-east corner of Merrick and Park streets, where the McLaren factory now stands, was a fine old stone house, once the property of T. Fisher and long occupied by James Simpson, wholesale grocer, whose store was on MacNab street, near the James Stewart foundry. Lord Alex. Russell lived in that house when the Rifle Brigade was stationed in Hamilton.

What must have been at one time a handsome residence—now almost in ruin—stands on the west side of Hughson street, between Picton and Macaulay streets. In its better days it was the residence of Michael Wilson Browne, who owned a lot of wharf property and was a candidate for parliament in the seventies.

George Roach, at one time mayor of Hamilton, and for a long time chairman of the Hospital Board, built the house on Barton street, between Macnab and Park streets, still occupied by members of his family.

Duncan MacNab occupied the stone house on the north-east corner of Cannon and Mary streets. He was connected with the Buchanan firm. One old resident states that this house was constructed with stones that had formed part of an old post-office building on James street, and was long occupied by Mr. Atkinson, pork packer.

The house on the north-east corner of Cannon and Wentworth streets was built for Mr. Milne by John Taylor.

The home of the Myles family stands on the south-east corner of Hunter street and Victoria avenue.

Mrs. Pigott's house on Wentworth street, opposite the end of Stinson street, was built by J. H. Davis, wool merchant, about 1865.

The second house west of Victoria avenue, on the north side of Main street, was built by Thomas Jackson for his own home.

The clergy of St. Patrick's church reside in the stone house at the north-east corner of Main street and Victoria avenue. It was built by Contractor Dunn.

F. W. Fearman built the stone house on the south side of Stinson street, at the head of East avenue, and lived there until his death. The house was enlarged in 1876.

F. E. Kilvert, M. P., who was collector of customs at the time of his death, lived on Stinson street, at the head of Emerald street.

The house at the corner of King street and Proctor Boulevard, long occupied by John Proctor, was built by Robert Middlewood, of the firm of Grant & Middlewood, proprietors of the Spring Brewery. The front door used to face King street, but the main entrance is now on Proctor Boulevard.

John Harvey, wool merchant, lived in the stone house on the north side of Robinson street, a little west of Macnab street. His place of business was on James street, immediately north of the Royal Hotel, in the stone building said to be the original unit of the Fisher & McQuesten foundry, afterward enlarged to cover the land now occupied by the Royal Markets building.

The white house on the south-east corner of Hunter and Macnab streets was at one time the home of William McMillan, fuel agent of the Great Western Railway, father of Senator James McMillan, of Detroit. It was rebuilt by William Stewart, son of James Stewart, of the Macnab street foundry firm, and is now a music school. Mr. McMillan and Mr. James Buntin, founder of the wholesale business now known as Buntin-Gillies Company, were active in procuring the bell for Macnab Street Presbyterian Church. Mr. Buntin lived near the head of Emerald street. On Hunter street, just east of the McMillan-Stewart place, is another stone house.

The manse of the Macnab Street Presbyterian Church is just south of the church building. Both are of stone.

The stone house on James street, farther up the hill than the reservoir, was built by Mr. Russell, who owned a freestone quarry in that locality.

The main building of the Aged Women's Home, on the east side of Wellington street, south of Young street, was built for an orphans' home, Mrs. Edward Jackson being a leading spirit in the financing. The property had belonged to Hiram Clark.

Dr. Rosebrugh's house, on the west side of James street, between Jackson and Hunter streets, originally intended for St. Andrew's Church manse, was the residence of H. C. Baker's father—the founder of the Canada Life Assurance Company; later of Andrew Milroy, of A. G. Ramsay, and of Dr. Rosebrugh, father of the present occupant. This house and the stone cottage just west of it used to front on Jackson street (then called Maiden Lane), before the Baptist Church building obstructed the passage.

The stone house on the south side of King street, between Ray and Pearl streets, was the residence of John Mills; afterwards of Mr. Davidson, accountant, and of William Kavanagh.

Another stone house, one block further west, now has a brick store in front of it.

A stone house on the north side of Markland street, a little east of Bay street, was built by John Brown for his mother. It was sold to William Wallace, of the Great Western Railway.

Among other noticeable stone houses is one of peculiar shape, on the south side of Hunter street, between John and Hughson streets; a large stone house on the east side of Charles street, between Jackson and Hunter streets; one on the south-east corner of Park and Cannon streets; one on the south-east corner of Cannon and Macnab streets.

On the south side of Forest avenue, between Hughson and John streets, is a house that was the home of F. J. Rastrick, architect.

A stone house stands on the south side of Charlton avenue extension, east of Wellington street, on one of Hiram Clark's mountain terraces.

Another, at the north-west corner of Augusta and Hughson streets, was the home of Dr. William Craigie; a large house at the north-west corner of Sanford and Rutherford avenues, at one time occupied by Mr. F. A. Ball, insurance agent, and later by F. H. Lynch-Staunton; the stone farmhouse of Joshua Brethour, on the east side of Ottawa street, north of Roxborough avenue.

On the west side of Grant avenue, between King and Main streets, is the Peter Grant homestead.

There is a stone house on the south side of York street, between Pearl and Locke streets; a two-story stone house on the north side of Hunter street, between Spring street and Ferguson avenue; another on the east side of West avenue, between Wilson and Evans streets; another on the north side of Duke street, between Bay and Caroline streets; another on the east side of John street, north of Augusta street; another on the north side of King William street, west of Ferguson avenue.

STONE DOUBLE HOUSES.

Semi-detached, or "double," stone houses were erected in many parts of the city, some of them being handsome and commodious, such as those on the west side of John street, north of Forest avenue; the pair on the north side of Duke street, between James and Macnab streets, in one of which lived Robert Service, of the wholesale firm of Service & Wyld, who used to entertain

the guests at the St. Andrew's Society banquets with recitations from Marmion.

Another pair, on the south side of Augusta street, between James and Hughson streets, in one of which Mr. Ambrose, music teacher, used to live; on the east side of James street, between Augusta and Young streets, belonging to J. M. Rousseaux and Mr. Ross; on the south side of Bold street, between James and Macnab streets, in one of which Isaac McQuesten used to live; on the north-east corner of James and Jackson streets; on the south side of Rebecca street, between Ferguson avenue and Mary street; on the west side of Hess street, between George and Main streets, built by Robert Gordon, son-in-law of Robert McElroy; on the south-west corner of Main and Hess streets, a large stone double house built by Robert McElroy, who lived in one of them. The father of Maitland Young lived in the other. Mr. McElroy owned much central property in Hamilton. He was the opponent of Hon. Isaac Buchanan in the by-election after Mr. Buchanan's appointment to the presidency of the council.

Two double houses on King street, near Ray, which belonged to Mrs. Smith, have been referred to. One part of the double house on Market street, between Park and Bay streets, used to be the residence of Captain Harbottle.

The double house on the east side of Ferguson avenue, north of Cannon street, was the property of Peter and John Ferguson.

On the south-east corner of Charles and Hunter streets lived L. D. Birely. His wife was a daughter of James Gage, on whose farm the battle of Stoney Creek was fought in 1813.

On the south side of King William street, east of Mary street, is a double house built by John Taylor, who lived in part of it.

Between James and Hughson streets, on Cannon street, opposite Knox Church, a double house.

On Catharine street, facing the end of Gore street, a double house, once occupied by Charles and Edward Magill.

On the south-west corner of Bay and Robinson streets is a double stone house, in half of which Mr. Morson used to live.

South of Barton street, on the east side of Locomotive street, is a large double stone house, which used to be Richard Creed's tavern.

ROWS OF HOUSES.

South of Charlton avenue, on the east side of James street, is a row of stone residences, built before 1850 by John Young, jr., father of J. B. Young, who is still living in Hamilton (1922). This row was known as Portland Place. Adam Brown lived in one of them immediately after his marriage. William Bellhouse lived in the house next to the Bigelow property. Mrs. Jarvis, sister of Sir Aemilius Irving and mother of Aemilius Jarvis, now of Toronto, lived for many years in the house at the corner of Charlton avenue. Other residents in this row were John Riddel, Mr. Routh, James Watson and Rev. John Hebden.

On the east side of John street, beginning at the north corner of Forest avenue, is a row of five well-preserved stone houses. Robert Griffith used to live in one of them.

W. P. MacLaren built a row of three high houses, called Herkimer Terrace, on the south side of Herkimer street, a little west of James street, and F. W. Gates added another to the western end of the row. Sheriff Thomas, father-in-law of T. C. Kerr, used to live in the one now owned and occupied by H. C. Baker. Mrs. J. E. O'Reilly recently sold the one nearest to James street.

The row of houses known as Sandyford Place, on the south side of Duke street, west of Macnab street, was built by Donald Nicholson. The widow of Peter Hunter Hamilton sold the property in 1854 to Joseph Hamilton, who sold it to Donald Nicholson in 1855. He sold one of the houses to Edward Martin in 1857, and one to P. Dewar in 1858. Successive occupants of houses in this row were Plummer Dewar, James Watson, Alexander Harvey, Alexander Turner, J. H. Greer, C. J. Hope, T. H. Macpherson and George Hope.

On the west side of James street, between Bold and Duke streets, is a row of ten stone houses, many of which are now occupied by physicians. Hon. Samuel Mills at one time owned three of them, and George Murison owned others. John A. Orr used to live in the house at the corner of Bold street, with Edmund Scheuer next to him. Joseph Mills, the hatter, lived nearer to the Duke street end of the row. Other well-known citizens who lived in that row were John B. Young, William Leggo, lawyer and author; George Taylor, manager of the Bank of British North America; Robert Milroy, bank manager; Mr. Whish, organist Central Presbyterian Church; Mrs. Bellhouse, mother of George Bellhouse; Mrs. Young, mother of George and John B. Young, and Walter R. MacDonald, who married a daughter of Daniel MacNab,

The row of four stone houses on the west side of James street, between Bold and Hunter streets, is said to have been erected by Dr. Rae, the celebrated Arctic explorer, who came to Hamilton to visit his two brothers. William Leggo, Mrs. Young, Dr. McDonald, Dr. Malloch, Dr. Crooker and Mr. Webber are remembered as former occupants. William Birkett, of the firm of Thomson, Birkett & Bell, father of the celebrated Dr. H. S. Birkett, of Montreal, lived in that row.

Three of the five houses in the row, on the south side of Hunter street, west of Hughson street, belonged to Mr. Donnelly, and afterward to John Barry. The two at the west end of the row belonged to Richard Bull, insurance agent.

Three stone houses, on the west side of Macnab street, north of Bold street, were occupied in days gone by by John Turner, Lloyd Mewburn and other well-known business men.

Three stone houses in a row on the west side of Catharine street, north of Rebecca street, and three on the east side of Catharine street, between Gore street and Cannon street, were considered very desirable residences half a century ago.

Three houses on the north side of Merrick street, between Park and Bay streets, once belonged to W. Kirkendall. Sir John Hendrie, ex-Lieutenant-Governor of Ontario, was born in the middle house of that row.

Three houses facing Barton street, on the north-west corner of Hughson street, were the property of T. Rae many years ago. Edward Browne lived in one of them and Joseph Hobson in another.

On the west side of John street, between Strachan street and the Grand Trunk Railway, are three or four stone houses.

Palmerston Terrace, on the south side of Jackson street, west of Park street, was built by Donald Nicholson, in the fifties, Mr. Rastrick being the architect. Judge Burton lived in one of those houses. Another was a fashionable school for young ladies, with Miss Samuel and afterwards Mrs. Hunter in charge.

STONE COTTAGES.

When stone was the favorite material for building, many stone cottages were erected in Hamilton, some of them with basement kitchens, so that the heat from the wood cook-stove could pass through a drum stove in the living room above.

Among those remaining are a cottage on the south side of Main street, between Catharine and Walnut streets, occupied by John Eastwood and Hugh Murray in turn—now a music school; a neat cottage on John street south, opposite St. Joseph's Hospital, in which P. T. Ware, jeweler, and afterwards Mr. Luxton used to live. Mr. Ware's store was on King street, where the Stanley Mills store is now. Another cottage is at the south-east corner of John street and Forest avenue; one on the south side of Cannon street, east of Ferguson avenue; one on the north-west corner of Cannon and Cathcart streets; a cottage on the west side of Bay street, between York and Market streets, where George Dickson, principal of the High School, used to live—now occupied by John Macleod, assessment commissioner; one on Bay street, near Mr. Bastien's residence; one on Ferrie street, near Bay street; one on Macnab street, between Simcoe and Ferrie streets; two on the north-west corner of Park and Cannon streets; one on Vine street, a little west of James street; two cottages on the west side of Catharine street, between Forest and Charlton avenues; four on the south side of Forest avenue, east of Catharine street; one on the south side of Forest avenue, west of Walnut street; one on the south side of Young street, between Walnut street and Ferguson avenue; one on the north side and one on the south side of Rebecca street, west of Ferguson avenue; one on the north-west corner of Macnab and Colborne streets, and one on the south side of York street, west of Bay street. A large stone cottage, which stood at the head of Wentworth street, east side, was built by Michael Aikman for his daughter, Mrs. Aitken. It was later occupied by William Bellhouse, George D. Griffin, Brant Sero and M. Pigott. The site is now covered by brick dwellings and Cumberland avenue runs through the grounds. Other stone cottages are to be found on the north side of Robinson street, between Caroline and Hess streets; one on the north side of Hunter street, between Walnut and Ferguson avenue; two on the north side of Duke street, between Bay and Caroline streets; one on the west side of Park street, south of the Gas Company's office; two on the west side of Catharine street, between Cannon and Robert streets; one on the south-west corner of King and Margaret streets. Captain Henery, chief of police and first governor of the jail on Barton street, used to live in the stone cottage on the south side of King street, next to the railway on Ferguson avenue. That cottage was built by Mr. Ireland, of the wholesale hardware firm of Bellhouse & Ireland, about 1848, for his own residence. There is a stone cottage on the east side of Macnab street, between Vine and Cannon streets. Dr. W. L. Billings lived in a stone cottage on the south-east corner of James and Cannon streets, the site being now covered with brick stores.

STONE WORKSHOPS.

The use of stone in the walls of factory buildings is no longer common, as it was in the time of Juson's nail factory, Gunn's locomotive works, the Great Western Railway car shops and Osborne's malt house. Some of the old-timers are yet visible, such as Gurney's molding shop on Catharine and King William streets, Moore's molding shop on Catharine and Robert streets, James Stewart's molding shop on Vine street, Copp Bros.' molding shop on Bay street, north of York street. The original waterworks pumping house at the Beach is a stone building. The old Laidlaw foundry building on Mary street remains; also the vinegar factory on James street, between Hunter and Augusta streets. The old stone building on Liberty and Young streets was a cannery once upon a time; the stone building on Jackson street, east of James, was a china warehouse; the stone building on the north-west corner of Barton and Elgin streets was the Webster sewing machine factory; the Pringle storehouse, on Queen street north, has been mentioned; the Schultz factory on York street, west of the Copp building, was once Rae's bacon-curing factory; the McElroy building, at the south-east corner of Hunter and James streets, was occupied by Her Majesty's troops in the sixties, and was later the Gardner sewing machine factory. When the corner building was utilized as barracks for the soldiers, the three stone residences to the south were rented for officers' quarters. The stone building at the north-west corner of Cannon and Bay streets, in recent years a hotel, was Fred Schroeder's cigar factory; the stone office building on Merrick street, west of the old Royal Hotel, was Fisher & McQuesten's tin shop; the old grist mill, at the south-east corner of Market and Park streets, was Prongucy's carriage factory; the stone building on the north side of King William street, between Catharine and Mary streets, was used as a storehouse by the Buchanan firm; the part of the Sanford premises on King street, adjoining the Connaught Hotel, was the John Macpherson shoe factory, and the stone gas works on Mulberry street, between Park street and Bay street, are still in the ring. F. T. Brooks' paint shop, on the east side of Mary street, south of King William street, was built for a private residence.

STONE HOTELS.

The Mountainview is one of the oldest. H. J. Lawry was the genial landlord in 1850. Thomas Davidson kept the City Hotel in the stone building at the south-west corner of James and Merrick streets, recently torn down to make room for the Arcade extension, before he built the Royal Hotel on the other side of

Merrick street, in 1857. There was a stone hotel at the corner of Vine and James streets, and several of them on Macnab street, facing the market. The Andrew Miller building on Macnab street, the front part of which is now occupied by Parke & Parke, was a hotel as recently as fifty years ago. The Burrows' auction building, on Rebecca street, east of James street, is said to have been built for Royal Hotel stables. The Dominion Hotel and the Franklin House have, or had, spacious stone stables on Market street; also the Hendrie Company.

STONE BANKS.

The Gore Bank was located where the Bank of Commerce now does business, at the south-west corner of King and Hughson streets. The Bank of Upper Canada was at the north side of Vine street, corner of James street, the building being afterward used by Col. McGiverin, D. B. Chisholm and the Federal Life Company. The Commercial Bank was on the site of the Spectator building, James street south. It was not a stone building. The Bank of British North America occupied the building on the south side of King street, east of James, more than seventy years ago. The Commercial Bank erected the building at the corner of James and Main streets, where the Bank of Montreal is now located. Before acquiring that building from the Merchchants Bank, the Bank of Montreal had the building on King street, west of James street, now occupied by the Royal Bank. The Bank of Hamilton and the Traders Bank used that King street building before the Royal. The Home Bank is located in the old postoffice building on James street north.

STONE STORES.

The James Jolley building and the three stores to the south of it, on John street, facing Princess square, come early on the list, because John street was part of the highway from Niagara to Ancaster before the James street road allowance was opened. Mr. Bull published the Gazette in the adjoining building. He built the stone printing office and residence on the Hughson street side of the square, afterwards Lovering's Hotel, which was torn down to make room for the Wentworth Arms Hotel. Joseph Hoodless had a furniture store in the old Gazette building on John street, before he moved to the Gates building on King street west. Present occupants in that locality are Bermingham, Boniface and Halford.

C. C. and John Ferrie built the stone store on the west side of Hughson street, south of the Bank of Commerce, in the forties,

which was occupied by James Turner & Co., wholesale grocers, until they moved to their present stand on Main street, which was built by Andrew Steven and at first intended for private residences.

The row of stone stores on the south side of King street, east of Charles street, had such occupants as McKeand, Forster, F. W. Gates, Lucas & Park and John Garrett in days gone by.

The building on the north-east corner of John and Main streets, now the John A. Reche drug store, was the property of John White, and was occupied by Donald Stuart, grocer, who lost his life in the Desjardins accident, March 12, 1857. Succeeding him in the grocery were William and James Lottridge, R. B. Morrison, Kelly & Clark, and others. P. C. Blaicher bought the property from Mr. White and opened the drug store there in 1882, under the firm name of Blaicher & Reche. Mr. Reche subsequently bought the building and Mr. Blaicher's interest in the business. The hall upstairs was used by the Freemasons until the erection of the hall at the corner of James and Gore streets, fifty years ago. It then became the Germania Hall and is now used by the War Veterans.

Young, Law & Co. built the fine wholesale store on the north-west corner of Macnab and Merrick streets. Thompson, Birkett & Bell conducted a wholesale dry goods business there. John Calder and the present occupants used it for a factory. R. A. Lucas, son-in-law of John Young, built the store afterwards occupied by Lucas, Steele & Bristol, and James McIntyre, brother-in-law of John Young, built the store occupied by James Simpson and J. E. Brown.

The stone stores on the opposite side of Macnab street were built by Mr. McKeand—some parts used for a while for the quartering of troops—and afterwards occupied by Lorimer, William Lottridge, Lumsden Bros., Long & Bisby, Walter Woods, Brown, Routh & Co., and Balfour & Co.

Buchanan, Harris & Co.—afterward Buchanan, Binney & MacKenzie—used the buildings on both sides of Catharine street, north of King street, in the good old days. You would have to glance into the alley east of Catharine street to realize how much stone was used in the original construction of the Buchanan place, but the side wall of the Adam Hope & Co. building, on the west side of the street, shows what these buildings looked like in their palmy days.

The John Lennox store, on the south side of King street, facing the Gore, is in the building erected more than seventy years

ago by A. and T. C. Kerr, whose property extended to Main street. After the death of T. C. Kerr, the business was conducted by A. Duncan & Co., and later by Knox, Morgan & Co. The wholesale dry goods business drifted away from Hamilton after the McInnes fire in 1879.

The Lister block on James street, north of King William street, was built by Webber Bros. for Joseph Lister, when the location of the Great Western depot on Stuart street was expected to divert trade from John street to James street.

The stone building on King street, east of the Provident and Loan offices, was the wholesale grocery of Harvey, Stuart & Co. Another stone building in that block is occupied by Mr. Junor.

West of James street, on the south side of King street, are two stone stores, one on each side of Finch Bros.

On the north side of King street, between Park and Macnab streets, are some stone stores. On the north-east corner of King and Macnab streets is a building that belonged until recently to the Oliver Springer estate. Charles Foster's merchant tailor business was there. Later, Hazell's grocery. Mr. Springer was a lawyer. He lived in a stone house on John street, opposite Wesley Church, with William Boice as his neighbor.

Cloke's bookstore is located in a building erected by the late John Moodie.

Several of the old stone stores on the north side of King street, between James and John streets, including the Clyde Block at the corner of Hughson street, and the hardware store, belonging to the Stinson estate, and occupied for many years by A. T. Wood and his successive partners, are still standing, though some of them are disguised with new fronts or added stories of brick.

On the west side of John street, near King William street, is a hardware store that used to be occupied by Young & Brother, dealers in plumbers' supplies. They manufactured coal oil lamps sixty years ago.

There are many two-story buildings, used as stores, on both sides of York street, between Macnab and Park streets, some of which were once private residences.

James H. Davis owned some of the stone buildings on Macnab street, between York and Merrick streets.

The stone store on the west side of Macnab street, between King and Market streets, so long occupied by F. W. Fearman and his sons, was earlier the wholesale grocery of W. G. and Samuel Kerr.

The stone stores on James street, between the old postoffice and the Masonic building, were built by J. M. Williams in the seventies.

The Raphael-Mack place, at the corner of James and Rebecca streets, was Mr. Furnivall's fashionable tailor shop. It was used as a postoffice before the building to the north of it was erected by the government on the Ritchie property.

The stores immediately north of the city hall stand on land owned by the city.

The stone buildings at the north-east corner of Market and Park streets and at the north-east corner of Macnab and Vine streets were built by Robert McElroy. A stone building at the northwest corner of Hughson and King William streets, once Alonzo James' hotel, is now used as an agency for a wholesale house.

PUBLIC BUILDINGS.

Part of the stone wall of the old Mechanics' Hall can be seen in the southern end of the Arcade building.

The present court house, on the block surrounded by Main, John, Jackson and Hughson street, occupies the site of the old court house and jail. The new court house was built by William Hancock, with C. W. Mulligan as architect. The jail on Barton street was erected at the same time—in the seventies.

The postoffice and customs building, at the south-west corner of King and John streets, built of Credit Valley stone, occupies the site of the D. McInnes wholesale dry goods store, a handsome building of Ohio freestone, which was burned down on August 1, 1879. Eli Van Allen was the contractor for the new postoffice building.

The old custom house building on Stuart street, west of Macnab street, was built when Sir Allan McNab was member of parliament.

The stone city hall, of which James Balfour was architect and M. J. Pigott contractor, stands on the site of the old brick city hall, in which space was found for the police court and the office of the chief of police, as well as for a butter market in the basement.

OFFICES.

The old Canada Life Assurance building, on the west side of James street, between King and Main streets, was built in the fifties, and for a time was leased to officers of the Rifle Brigade. It was sold to Henry McLaren, who sold it to Michael Pigott, contractor. The new Canada Life building, on the south-east corner of King and James streets, built of Connecticut stone, is on the site of the W. P. McLaren wholesale grocery, which was for a long time occupied by (Adam) Brown & (George H.) Gillespie.

On the south-east corner of King and Hughson streets the Provident and Loan building, Robert Chisholm, contractor, was preceded by a frame building, in which W. H. Glassco conducted a fur business.

The Landed Banking and Loan building, on the north-east corner of James and Main streets, succeeds a brick building, in which the Spectator was published in the time of T. & R. White and of Lawson & McCulloch.

STONE SCHOOLS.

The Central School, on the block bounded by Bay, Bold, Park and Hunter streets, was opened in the fifties, and rebuilt about twenty-five years ago.

The building on the east side of Caroline street, between Main and George streets, now a public school, was the high school until the new Collegiate Institute was erected on the Ebenezer Stinson block, which was bought from the Wanzer estate.

The stone building on Sheaffe street, west of Park street, now a school for girls, was formerly the Catholic Presbytery.

STONE CHURCHES.

Christ's Church, on James street, between Robert and Barton, dates back to 1835, but it was originally built of rough stone and has been rebuilt. Dean Geddes was the rector for many years. Among his successors were Rev. Messrs. Mockridge, Bland and Owen.

The Church of the Ascension was opened in 1850 by Bishop Strachan, of Toronto, the building being located on a lot at the corner of John street and Maria street (now Forest avenue),

presented by Richard Juson. Rev. John Hebden was the first rector. After him the brothers Carmichael, Mr. Wade and Mr. Renison.

St. Thomas' Church congregation worshipped in a building on Emerald street before their fine stone church on West avenue was built.

All Saints' Church, at the corner of Queen and King streets, was erected fifty years ago, the cost being provided for in the will of Hon. Samuel Mills.

St. Paul's Presbyterian Church, on the west side of James street, corner of Jackson street, was formerly known as St. Andrew's. It stands on the site of the old frame church, once surrounded by a graveyard.

Knox Church, at the north-east corner of James and Cannon streets, was built before 1850. Among its ministers were Prof. Young and Messrs. Robb, Irvine and Simpson.

The stone Presbyterian church, at the corner of Maenab and Hunter streets, was erected by an overflow from the Knox congregation. Rev. Dr. Inglis and Rev. Donald Fletcher were among the ministers.

The Baptist Church, at the corner of James and Jackson streets, was erected in 1878, the congregation having formerly worshipped in a church on Park street, between Merrick and Vine streets.

A stone church, with a new brick front, stands on Macnab street, near Colborne street.

St. Patrick's Catholic Church, on King street, between Victoria avenue and East avenue, was dedicated in 1877.

There is a small stone Baptist church on Hughson street north, and the Church of the Ascension supports a mission church on Walnut street, corner of Forest avenue. It was moved to that site from Wellington street, to provide a right-of-way for the railroad.

The Methodists had a stone church on the north-east corner of Macnab and Merrick streets, but it was demolished in the late sixties, when Centenary Church was built, and the material was utilized to rebuild First Methodist Church at the corner of King and Wellington streets.

Lake Medad and Its Legend

BY PETER M. LAND.

This beautiful sheet of water is not more than seven miles from the City, and, strange to say, is very little known, and the design of this paper is to rescue from oblivion, and bring to the notice of this Society, one of the most interesting spots in Western Canada.

The Lake, whose name heads this article, lies about two and one-half miles north of the Town of Waterdown, and is reached by a good road, running from the city through Waterdown, and almost direct to the Lake, and the scenery along this road is of unequalled beauty, as many of the members, who have tramped or driven over it, can testify. The Lake lies in a basin, among the hills, and had neither inlet nor outlet until a few years ago, when an enterprising miller cut a channel from it to a creek which took its rise nearby in order to get a better supply of water for his mill.

Its shape resembles a heart, with the point towards the north. The shore is rocky on the east, and low on the other sides, gradually rising to a line of rolling hills, once clothed with stately pines, now, alas, fallen before the axe of the lumberman. But a lovely clothing of cedar is left, and gives an air of peaceful beauty to the scene, and where, here and there, one hangs over the brink, its image is reflected in the clear, pure waters of the Lake, to which, the country traditions say, there is no bottom. But this I never attempted to prove. On the top of the rocky bank is an old Indian camp, deserted by them so long ago that over some of their fire holes pines have grown whose stumps measure 3 to 4 ft. across, and on some of which 250 annual rings have been counted, showing that the noble Red Men must have left their picturesque village about 300 years ago. That they occupied it for a length of time is proved by a burial ground on one of the rolling, gravelly hills above the camp, discovered a few years ago, and a number of relics and human remains taken out. It occupied about five acres of ground, and is now sown with wheat. Some of the skeletons had been dissected, for they were found entire, packed in copper kettles about 2 ft. in diameter and 8 in. deep, most of which fell to pieces on being handled; but some have been taken out entire.

I was fortunate enough to obtain a skull, which had evidently belonged to the "oldest inhabitant." The teeth had been lost by the owner so long that the cavity in the jaw bones had grown up, and left only one hole, where his "pet stump" had been—a "cherished one" no doubt, and the skull itself is twice as thick as any of the others found. The seams in it have disappeared, and it is solid bone. I did some excavating among the fire holes and found about a foot of fresh earth over them, on removing which I found them full of ashes, cinders, fragments of pottery and bones, gloriously mixed. The pottery very much resembled in composition the fire brick of today, being made evidently of pounded granite mixed with clay and rolled like dough in layers, and moulded and ornamented by hand. The shape is similar to that figured in the works on the subject, by Schoolcraft and others, and some fragments in my possession are marked with their owner's "totem." The bones showed that they were good hunters, as most of them belonged to the deer; but I also found some of smaller animals and fish. In one of the holes a large number of clam shells were found, proving that there was at least one epicure among them and that his nerves were weak, shellfish being a supposed specific. There were also "smokers" in those days, as some fine specimens of pipes were found, made mostly of the same material as the pottery; but one (which is now doing good service for a pale-face) is carved of a fine black stone, not to be found in this neighborhood, evidently a spoil of war. I have seen one from British Columbia made of the same stone.

An Indian camp and burial place would be common-place without a legend or tradition connected with it, and of course this has one, which tells us that: "Once on a time" it was the head village of a powerful tribe of—well, I don't know what tribe—a good many lay claim to it; so, for the purpose of the story we will call them Iroquois, who, as this part of the country was justly called an Indian paradise, lived on the fat of the land—and water. Moreover, they waxed fat, and, of course, saucy, and then wicked. Now, I think the pale-face had something to do with the last, or the copper kettles don't tell the truth. Be that as it may, they got so bad that the neighbors really couldn't put up with them, and so they left them to their own destruction. When the neighbors had gone away, they, of course, had to depend on themselves for diversion, and at last they got so bad that the Great Spirit Manitou determined to make an example of them. Now the vale occupied by Lake Medad was then a green glade, and was used by them as play grounds, where they held their scalp dances and war dances,

and had their Council and torture posts set up. One night they were amusing themselves by roasting the old chief Quin-nib-ben-aw's son. To be sure he deserved it, for he had persuaded the old man, who was ill, that he had a bad spirit in him, as no doubt he had, and told him he would kill it for him. But to prevent harm to himself he was to hold one of the copper kettles in front of his body (about as much protection as a tin pail), while he stood ten paces off, and shot the spirit with his arrow. The result surprised the old man, for the arrow did not stop in either the spirit or the kettle, but in the old chief's heart, and the son at once made tracks.

The tribe buried the old chief, and instead of a monument over him, they placed a reed in his mouth and up to the surface, and gave him his regular meals of soup through it. The son, coming on the sly to feed him in his turn (a point of honor among Indians), was caught, and at once put to the torture, as already told. Suddenly a rumbling noise was heard, then another louder one, and before they had time to get frightened even, came a blinding flash, a terrific roar, an awful shriek, and the whole tribe, glade, victim posts, scalps, and all, were swallowed up, and in its place lay a peaceful, smiling lake, full of splendid fish.

Only a few of the tribe escaped. Probably they were braves who had been to lodge, or had just stepped out to see a man, for all the rest, squaws, papooses, and all, were out on the playground to see the fun, when the bottom dropped out, and has stayed out ever since, for as I mentioned before, no one has been able to find it, "they say." From that time no Indian would go near the place nor fish in the waters, for they said the devil was there, and they think so still; and the fish are the souls of the departed. The inference is that they went to the D——d.

That is the legend, and certainly traditions of the elders tell of remarkable phenomena common to that point. Strange rumblings, resembling the roar of a train, heard at short intervals, from that direction during several years. At other times loud, booming reports like heavy cannon, would be heard. But now all is changed. The plow has passed over the burial place. A saw mill has been built on the shore of the Lake. The fish have been nearly all caught out of it, and the noble Red man is fast becoming a tradition.

Burlington Heights

HISTORICALLY AND GEOLOGICALLY

BY JOHN H. LAND

Lying as it does, a barrier between the Bay and the Marsh, this ridge of gravel, deposited ages ago, has a very marked place in the history of (1) the original owners, the Indians, (2) the early traders and settlers, (3) the defence of our country in 1812, and (4) as the resting place of our dead.

There is abundant evidence that this ridge, extending from the Valley Inn diagonally across the City to the Mountain at James street, was a favorite resting place of our Indians when on their fishing or hunting excursions, with fine shelter for their canoes, no matter which way the wind blew. When Richard Beasley, the first trader, built his store and cabin on its flank, they came oftener and in greater numbers to exchange their furs for the white man's goods.

During the war, these red allies were present in numbers in and about the camp. When Proctor was defeated at Malden and their leader, Tecumseh, killed, they came to Burlington Heights, looking for support and a new leader.

After Beasley, came other settlers, fleeing from the boasted freedom of the revolted Colonies, building their log cabins on the south end of the ridge and in the valleys on each side—Hess, Vanevery, Kirkendall, Rousseaux, Mills, Hatt, Hamilton, and others. When these same revolted colonists, in their zeal to extend the blessing of their freedom (and release from the grinding tyranny of Britain), to their benighted fellow-citizens who had fled to it, declared war, Burlington Heights became a refuge and rendezvous for these same victims and their families.

It was the intention of Gov. Simcoe to make the Heights the site of the coming village, but Beasley claimed the land (now Dundurn Park), asking so high a price that the offer was cancelled, thus forcing the site to the centre at King and James streets.

This "Quebec of Ontario," as it has been justly called, from its commanding strategetic position, was early in our history used for military purposes. Kingston and Burlington Heights were the two points the enemy were most anxious to capture, as they were the basis of the supplies of stores and munitions and the headquarters of the few men and ships Britain could spare. Here, also, came the militia men, when attacks threatened; here, also, came the sick and wounded, and no doubt some of the remains lately exposed by the gravel shovels are theirs, there being no stones or marks put up that survive; nothing but the note on the plan of the defences, simply the word "Cemetery," and this is the spot we are trying to save from the maw of the steam shovel and power screen.

The dead were not all among the defenders. Two, at least, were spies, and were tried by Court Martial and executed. No doubt there were prisoners, wounded perhaps, buried beside their foes.

The defences, it would seem, were not very formidable prior to the battle of Malden and the fall of Fort George. Then Vin- the militia of the district, the "Men of Gore," to work, and threw up the earthwork across what is now the City Cemetery, from shore to shore, a second work, where the canal is now; a redoubt thrown up two hundred yards in front, another two hundred yards in front of that. A portion of this remains, with a cottage on it, the others, with the greater part of the main work, and the one at the canal, have been leveled down.

From here, Col. Harvey and the seven hundred heroes of Stoney Creek marched to meet and check the enemy, bringing back with them the two Generals, Winder and Chandler, as prisoners. Here, too, Fitzgibbon brought Boerstler and his men prisoners from the Beaver Dam, where Laura Secord earned immortal fame. Here, also, came General Proctor, General De Rottenburg, Admiral Yeo, Lieut. Bishopp, and others. From here, Brock issued his first call to the Men of Gore, and marched to the capture of Detroit. Here, many years later, the victims of cholera and ship fever found a resting place. Over this ridge lay the Indian trail from the Peninsula to the Huron Country. (To-day the Toronto Highway follows it.)

In 1859 the British Government handed it over to Canada.

About 1867 the Government (whether Dominion or Local I cannot say) made a survey of what remained, after the City had secured its Cemetery and parks, containing one hundred lots; all but five of these were sold, mostly crown patents, only in a

few cases was a price recorded, the highest being $500 for a lot containing nearly three acres. Two of these, unsold, cover the old Military Cemetery. Many of these lots have changed hands, the price always advancing, not one remaining in its first owner's name.

In 1847 the southern portion was allotted the town for cemetery purposes, divided between the Anglicans and the City.

In 1892 the City acquired the church portion.

In 1851 the first break was made in this ridge, when the canal was cut through by Desjardin and his Company. They believed that Dundas was bound to be the ultimate shipping point of the Province. This cut was spanned by a suspension bridge, which was wrecked by a gale and replaced by a wooden truss bridge, and this by the present steel bridge.

Then in 1854-56 came the railway, cutting along its flanks, and through it to reach the West, crossing the canal with a swing bridge, where in 1857 the most terrible railway accident occurred, the train from Toronto breaking through the bridge and falling into the canal below, where seventy of the passengers were drowned.

The Lower Road was built after this accident, at the instigation of the Railway Company (as it gave it an excuse to do away with the swing bridge over the canal) after a good deal of log-rolling and lobbying, the excuse being the alleged need of a shorter road to Waterdown.

In view of these facts, I am sure the public will endorse the efforts made by this Society and the Veterans' Association to preserve what little remains of this historic location. The Militia Department and the Historic Land Marks Association have expressed approval of these efforts, so we trust shortly to see steps taken to that end.

Cornelius Donovan

PRINTER TEACHER EDUCATOR

A Sketch of a Hamilton Man who Left his Impress upon Catholic Education in this City and Province.

From the Cathedral Magazine.

We give here a brief sketch of the life of the late Cornelius Donovan, Separate School Inspector, who did more for the Separate Schools of Ontario, and particularly of Hamilton, than any other layman, and whose system of teaching, which included teaching the children how to teach themselves, produced most remarkable results. To this day his former pupils revere his memory, and thank him for an education that was thorough, both in heart and mind. When he died the Church lost a loyal son, whose faith turned to her as the needle to the pole, and a son who had the greatest reverence for ecclesiastical authority and for those in the religious life, whether the last-named was represented by a dignitary, a simple priest, or a lowly nun. In his death there was lost, too, an able friend of the Separate Schools, whose best and truest interests were ever near and dear to his heart. As an educationist he stood in the front rank. At different times he had been offered positions that were very lucrative and desirable, but he refused them to remain at Separate School work, entirely out of the spirit of love and sacrifice for the cause of Catholic education. Success never turned his head, and for him the shout of applause had no charm. He lived his faith day by day, and he nourished the seeds of faith and fatherland in the minds and hearts of the Catholic children of Ontario.

His death brought many sincere tributes from the press. This sentence from the pen of Mr. Joseph Lewis, editor of the Hamilton "Herald," then city editor of the Hamilton "Spectator," might be said to be an epitaph: "The late Cornelius Donovan was a man who led a singularly pure life."

The story of Mr. Donovan's life shows what a young man can accomplish by hard work. Unaided, and by sheer force of ability, and at a time when a Catholic boy had not the opportunities and advantages he has now, this truly great man lived his

busy life, a short one—47 years—but a life that contained the activities of a half a dozen lives. In these days, when so much predigested mental food is served up in the schools, a story of this kind is illuminating.

Cornelius Donovan was a life-long resident of Hamilton, where he was born Oct. 16th, 1847, and died Jan. 15th, 1895. From his childhood he developed a taste for literary pursuits, and his success evidenced natural ability far above the average and an energy and determination sufficient to overcome all disadvantages with which he had to contend in acquiring, first, an education, and afterwards a position in life. He attended St. Patrick's school until fifteen years of age, after which he was apprenticed to the printing trade in the office of the "Times." Prior to this he had for some time been a carrier boy in the employment of this paper. Altogether he spent twelve years in the "Times" establishment, during the last five of which he was foreman of the job department. Through all this period his leisure moments were devoted to private study, and, as subsequent events showed, he made good progress. In 1873 he left the "Times" office to take charge of St. Patrick's school, having previously taken a first-class A certificate (provincial), for which he had prepared himself entirely without assistance. He remained at the head of St. Patrick's until 1875, when he was appointed head master over all the Separate schools of the city. He continued in this position until 1883, when ill-health compelled him to resign. While engaged in teaching he had kept up his private reading, with the result that between 1877 and 1881 he passed the necessary examinations at Toronto University and obtained the degrees of B.A. and M.A., graduating with honors. After withdrawing from teaching Mr. Donovan spent the winter of 1883-4 in Colorado, and on his return in April of the later year was appointed a Provincial Inspector of Separate Schools—a position for which his practical experience as a teacher, his high literary attainments and his deep interest in the cause of education, rendered him eminently fitted, and the duties of which he discharged with great ability, as well as with decided advantage to the Separate school system of Ontario. As Inspector he was distinguished for his untiring efforts to increase the efficiency of the schools, and he enjoyed the fullest confidence of the clergy and the laity, as well as that of the Department of Education.

At one time it appeared as if Mr. Donovan would turn his attention entirely to newspaper work. While at the printing business he acquired a knowledge of shorthand, and frequently acted in the capacity of reporter, while occasionally contributing

original articles to the local press. Before entering on the teaching profession he published for a year a monthly periodical called "The Lamp," which was chiefly devoted to Catholic literature. Having an intense love for the land of his forefathers, he was in the habit of issuing on anniversary occasions, such as St. Patrick's Day, special papers dealing with the history, traditions and current events in Ireland. Subsequently he published "The Harp," the contents of which consisted principally of literature of an Irish character, but this also he was compelled to abandon owing to ill-health. Four histories—Irish Sketches, Outlines of English History, Outlines of Canadian History, and History of Napoleon III.—are from his pen. His "Clancahil" letters to the Hamilton "Times" attracted wide attention. In 1875 he visited Europe and spent three months in Ireland, assisting at the O'Connell centennial celebration. In the following year he travelled extensively in the United States, visiting several of the battle grounds of the Civil War, and his descriptions of his experiences formed a series of highly interesting letters.

He was also a linguist of no mean ability, having an intimate knowledge of French, German, Latin and Irish. In local affairs Mr. Donovan for years took considerable interest. He assisted in founding the Printers' Union, of which he was president for a term, and in the old days he was president of the St. Patrick's Society and leader of that society's band for a considerable period. He was also secretary of the St. Vincent de Paul Society, a leading member of the Catholic Literary Society, and was president of the Trades Assembly during its existence in 1872. He also served for two years as alderman of St. Patrick's Ward. Always taking an active share in the affairs of the Catholic Church, he held for many years honorable positions in connection with St. Mary's Cathedral.

Alexander C. Beasley

Although he had been in poor health for some time past, the news of the death, on Sunday, Dec. 29, 1918, of Alexander C. Beasley, one of the city's best known and most highly respected barristers, will come as a shock to the community in general. Mr. Beasley had been confined to his home for a few weeks only, although for many months past he had been seriously ill. Some time ago he expressed his intention of going to California for the winter, thinking to benefit his health, but the journey was delayed, and his illness made it impossible.

His many friends among the legal fraternity of this city will be grieved to hear of the passing of one whom they learned to value so highly for his integrity and attractive personality, which endeared him to all with whom he associated.

Deceased was the son of the late City Clerk, Thomas Beasley, and Charlotte (Hill) Beasley, and was born in this city 59 years ago. He received his early education at the grammar school and later at the law school, graduating in 1884, when he was called to the bar. He was at one time in partnership with E. Furlong; later with S. F. Washington, K. C., and at the time of his death with his son, J. D. Beasley.

Mr. Beasley was a member of the Church of St. Thomas, and was a generous contributor to all charitable and philanthropic objects. He was a member of the Hamilton Club.

The deceased gentleman took a keen interest in gardening and was an ardent flower lover, the beautiful and extensive gardens of his home being such as to attract countless visitors during the summer season. He was also an enthusiastic golfer.

There are left to mourn his death his widow, who was Miss Davis, daughter of the late Joseph G. Davis, of the well-known firm of Moore & Davis; and two sons, James D. and Lieut. Thomas Beasley.

THE BEASLEY FAMILY.

The death of Alexander C. Beasley removes almost the last of the ancient Beasley family from the list of first settlers. It has always been a question of good-natured dispute as to which was the first white settler at the Head of the Lake, as Hamilton was

then called, Colonel Richard B. Beasley or Robert Land. Both of them came into Canada at the close of the American war of 1776, because of their loyalty to the British government, and the Tories, as such men were called then, were much in disfavor, and suffered persecution. Alexander C. Beasley was a lineal descendant of Colonel R. B. Beasley, and as a matter to be left to future history, we will leave the story as to which was the first white settler, Beasley or Land. Colonel Beasley, early history tells us, was a fur trader, and came to the Head of the Lake, and lived among the Indians and the trappers in pursuit of this trading. The Colonel was the original owner of what is now known as Dundurn Park, and built part of the west wing of the castle for a home. He made his home in Hamilton, and when he died he was buried in the graveyard of the Church of England Cathedral, on James street north, where his grave is pointed out to strangers as being the burial place of either the first or second white settler.

Thomas C. Beasley, the second City Clerk appointed in Hamilton, in the year 1854, who died a few years ago, was recognized as one of the most learned men in municipal corporation law in Canada, and was the father of Alexander C. Beasley. To recall the ancient City Clerk, a few items may be of interest. Thomas Beasley was a lover of music in his younger days, and a fine performer on the pipe organ and piano. Before and after he became City Clerk he freely gave his services as organist and choirmaster in the First Congregational Church, on the corner of Hughson and Cannon streets, and it was accorded to him that he had one of the best choirs in this celebrated musical city. A. C. Beasley's wife and two sons, Jas. D. and Lieut. Thomas Beasley, survive him. One son, a student at Kingston Military College, was accidently drowned some years ago when out boat-sailing with a few student companions. Alexander C. Beasley was a credit to the family name, and he leaves behind him a record of clean professional and business life.

Mr. Beasley represented Ward 1 on the Board of Education, and was counted as an active and serviceable member.—Hamilton Spectator, Dec. 30, 1918.